



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

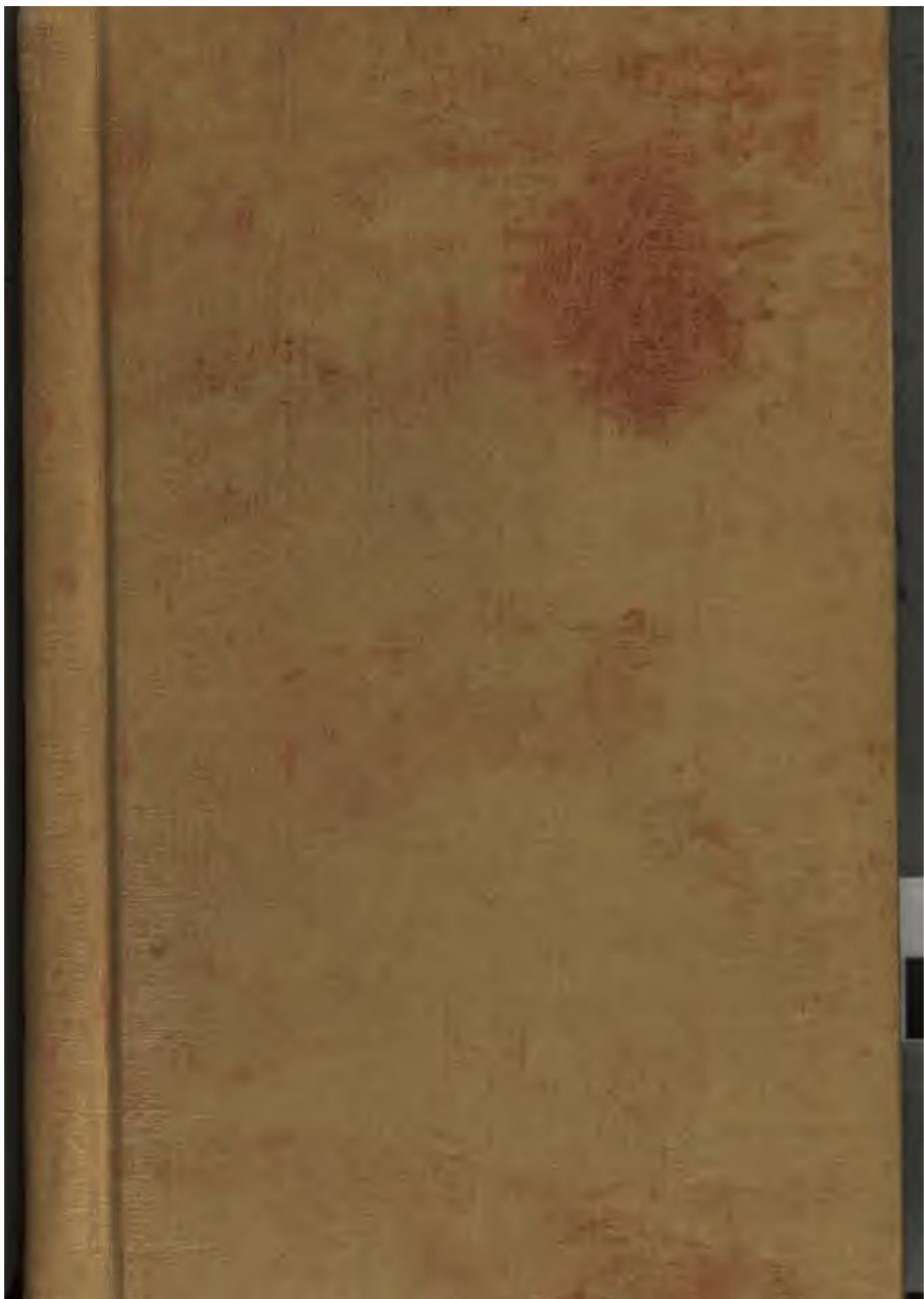
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





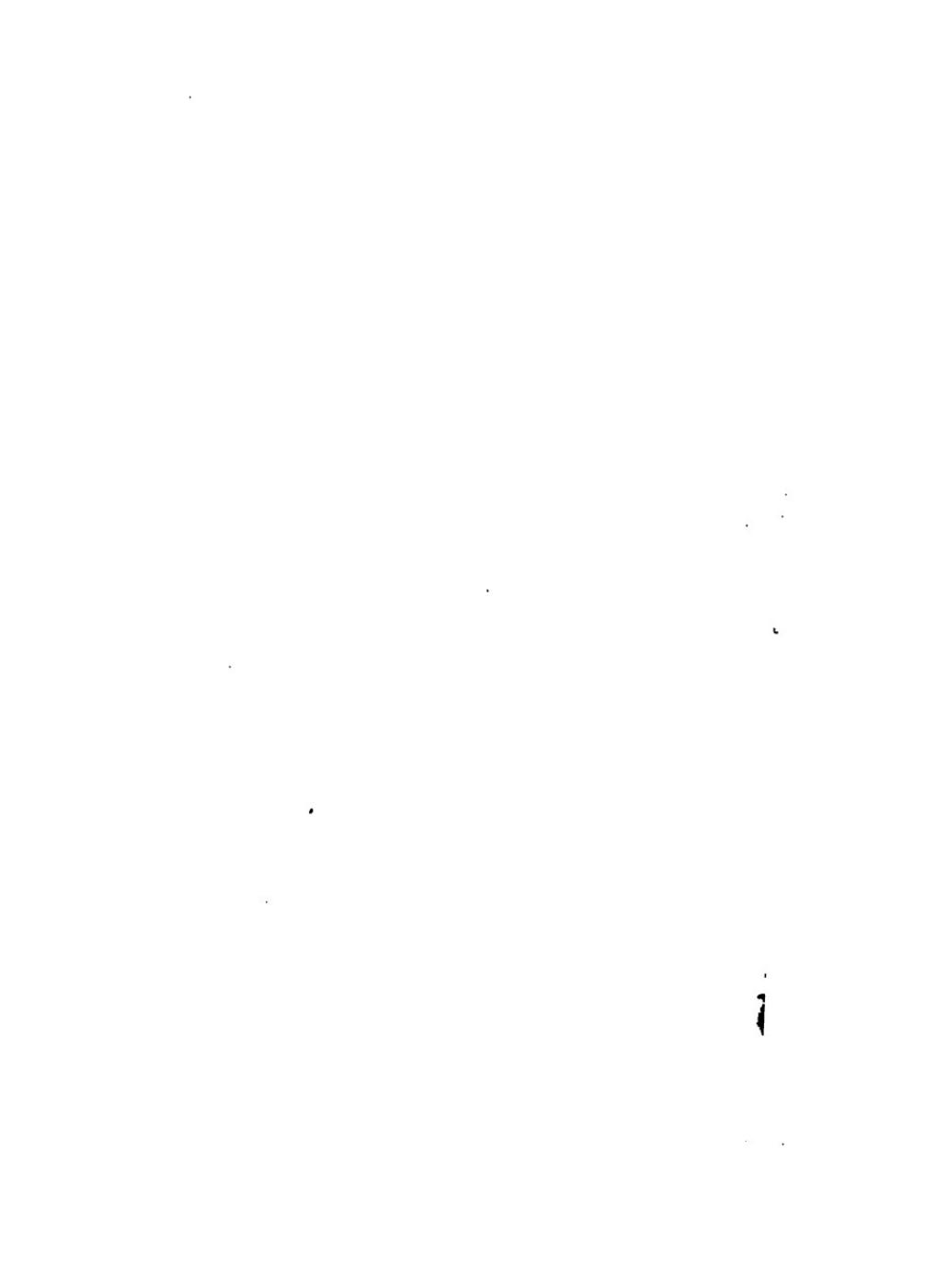
A. Sullivan.



THE WORKS OF
SHAKESPEARE

VOLUME

VOLUME



Library Of
D. A. Sullivan.



THE DRAMATIC WORKS OF
WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE
IN TEN VOLUMES
VOL. I





TEMPEST

- 11 -

¹ See A. M. Lerner, "The Economics of the Soviet Union," in *Review of Economics and Statistics*, Vol. 36, No. 3, August 1954.

I AM SHAKESPEARE

A NEW CAVIMUS A REVISIT

WITH NOTES

报告书第 8 章第 8.3.1 节

WILLARD

WITTENBERG

W. W. THEODORE

ALTMAN, M.: *Journal of Statistical Physics*, 1973, **18**, 1-10.



110-17700-N-811-000

1810

THE BELL & SONS' YACHTING
IN THE
Mediterranean.

1874

68



TEMPEST

THE
DRAMATIC WORKS OF
WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE

IN EIGHT CAREFULLY REVISED

EDITIONS

BY W. W. SHANAHAN, A.M.

VOLUME I

WITH NOTES

W. W. TEEBLEDGE,

AUTHOR OF "SHAKESPEARE'S LIFE AND WORK."



NEW YORK: MCGRAW-HILL.

CINDOS

WILLIAM SHANAHAN, SONS, NEW YORK,
1851 ST. CARDEN.

1859

m



THE LADY IN THE GARDEN

THE
DRAMATIC WORKS OF
WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE
THE TEXT CAREFULLY REVISED
WITH NOTES
BY S. W. SINGER, F.S.A.

VOLUME I
WITH A LIFE BY
W. WATKISS LLOYD
AUTHOR OF THE "AGE OF PERICLES," ETC.



TANFORD LIBRARY

THIRD EDITION, REVISED.

LONDON
GEORGE BELL AND SONS, YORK STREET
COVENT GARDEN

1879

S. W. Singer

£22.33
JS 61

v-1

201038

Jemel

УРАЯВЛІ ДІОДИАГ

CHISWICK PRESS :—C. WHITTINGHAM, TOOKS COURT,
CHANCERY LANE.

[DEDICATION OF THE SECOND EDITION.]

TO THE MEMORY OF HIS FRIEND
FRANCIS DOUCE, ESQ.

WHOSE PROFOUND ANTIQUARIAN LEARNING SO
HAPPILY ILLUSTRATED THESE DRAMAS,

This Edition
IS GRATEFULLY AND AFFECTIONATELY
DEDICATED
BY THE EDITOR.



NOTE.

In issuing a Third Edition of this Work, the publishers have taken the opportunity of incorporating various emendations left by the late Mr. Singer. The preliminary "Life" also has been improved by the excision of certain references to unauthentic documents which had inadvertently been left in the Second Edition, and a few pages have been devoted to the results of recent criticism on the order of the Plays



CONTENTS.

	PAGE
THE LIFE OF WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE	ix
TEMPEST	1
TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA	93
MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR	183
MEASURE FOR MEASURE	297





THE LIFE OF WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE.

BY W. W. LLOYD.

LHE scantiness of the notices that have come down to us of the life of William Shakespeare is perhaps as disappointing to a rational and grateful interest as to trivial curiosity. The personal details of a great man, whether apart from or compared with his works, are often inquired after by the ambitious and emulative, who would study the sources of his aids and obstructions, the process of his self-education, and his bearing, as either defeated or successful. Historically, the same details furnish many an elucidation of the mutual reactions of the individual and the general mind,—of the development of art and the epochs of civilization. The mental theorist also views them from a point of his own, and thinks he is guided, it may be, to the flaw in the so-called philosophy of Bacon by the story of his moral lapse, or finds the great originalities of *Paradise Lost* embodied in the life of Milton. To the gossip, of course, every detail is welcome that he can attach to a name that always will attract a listener. Whence, then, the scantiness complained of? Something may be due to accidents of times and persons that will occasionally countervail all general tendencies; to the supervention of the civil war; the puritanical suppression of the old drama, and its altered character on revival; but I know not whether more is not to be ascribed to a nobler cause

characteristic of the subject. It is a mistake to disallow our possession, in the case of Shakespeare, of the leading traits that are of most importance in a biography; and if matters subordinate have not been preserved, it was, I suspect, because such matters had no more than their true importance to admiring, affectionate, and revering contemporaries. The generation most solicitous for the minutiae of biography will not be the one that enters most fully into the spirit of the poet. The memory of the man, to those who knew him, was a living feeling, like the appreciation of his works, and they have expressed the characteristics of both in language as simple and concise as forcible, and it is little indeed that we can add to the main result by either antiquarian collection or analytical criticism; and as regards the relation of the character of the man to the sentiment of his works, it seems to have been a feeling of their perfect harmony that made his friends and fellows speak of the preservation of his plays as identical with the eternal memory of his personal sensibilities and proper worth. For the rest,—the incomparable genius of the man would alone account for his surmounting difficulties, however great,—though, as in the case of other great successes, fortune and opportunity did give sympathetic aid. Something of this sympathy, also, there was in the epoch both of political movement and of dramatic, but after all we must admit that such influence is manifestly but ancillary to the self-sustained endowment of the poet, when we find that it is all but lost upon feebler contemporaries.

From this point of view, then, I should be well contented not to diverge, and to ask no more for a biography of Shakespeare than is furnished by the expressions and allusions of those who were his immediate associates and contemporaries: these are facts that are not only the most interesting but among the most authentic, and it is only when we descend to matters that in comparison are of minor grade, that we get entangled among the dishonesties of forged traditions and of documents that are more *sult to deal with* when merely impugned than when

manifestly falsified or fabricated. This mischief dates very early in these investigations, and it is an unhappy result of some detections that more are expected, and that a place of standing cannot be in justice or prudence refused to accusations that otherwise would be pushed aside as mere rancorous rivalry.

Leaving aside—whether for oblivion or further question—these tainted witnesses, we may pay rather more attention to the vague traditions that need not be suspected of much other corruption than accrues unconsciously, that can be traced as current approximately in time and locality, and that belong to a class which cannot be altogether wanting—the alterations of facts that tradition finds easier than original invention. What authentic particulars beyond these have rewarded the patient research of antiquaries are for the most part dry and disjointed facts, fruitful in conjectures which can be sought elsewhere, less fruitful of trustworthy deduction; taken, however, altogether, they do make up a certain sequence of connected facts in that lower or outer life of the man and the Englishman of the sixteenth century, and do occasionally reflect a ray upon the more valuable records of his true existence as a poet and a humanist, enfranchised—sovereign, for all time.

Shakespeare died in 1616: Sir William Dugdale, in his *Antiquities of Warwickshire*, 1656, connects his name with a monumental date or two; and Fuller, with a quibble or two, in his *Worthies*, published 1662. In this latter year died Judith Quiney, the daughter of Shakespeare's youth, having survived the Commonwealth. In the same year John Ward, A. M. became vicar of Stratford, and his *Diary*, in MS. in the library of the Medical Society of London, which commences earlier, and extends to 1679, has this notice:—"I have heard that Mr. Shakespeare was a natural wit, without any art at all: he frequented the plays all his younger time, but in his elder days lived at Stratford, and supplied the stage with two *plays every year*, and for it had an allowance so large that he spent at the rate of £1000 a year, as I have heard."

In 1675, Ed. Phillips, the nephew of Milton, published his *Theatrum Poetarum*, prepared before Milton's death, and reflecting many of his opinions : he bestows a few lines on Shakespeare, but of eulogy and criticism, not biography :—

" William Shakespeare, the glory of the English stage, whose nativity at Stratford upon Avon is the highest honour that town can boast of ; from an actor of tragedies and comedies he became a maker, and such a maker, that though some others may, perhaps, pretend to a more exact decorum and economy, especially in tragedy, never any expressed a more lofty and tragic height, never any represented nature more purely to the life ; and where the polishments of art are most wanting, as probably his learning was not extraordinary, he pleaseth with a certain wild and native elegance : and in all his writings hath an unvulgar style, as well in his *Venus and Adonis*, his *Rape of Lucrece*, and other various poems, as in his dramaticks."

About 1680, is to be dated the first antiquarian notice of Shakespeare's life, and here are the contents of the indiscriminate dragnet of Aubrey, from his " Minutes of Lives," addressed to Anthony à Wood.

" Mr. William Shakespeare was born at Stratford upon Avon, in the county of Warwick ; his father was a butcher, and I have been told heretofore by some of the neighbours, that when he was a boy he exercised his father's trade, but when he killed a calf he would do it in a high style, and make a speech. There was at that time another butcher's son in this town that was held not at all inferior to him for a natural wit, his acquaintance and coetanean, but died young. This William being naturally inclined to poetry and acting, came to London, I guess about eighteen, and was an actor at one of the playhouses, and did act exceedingly well. Now B. Jonson was never a good actor, but an excellent instructor. He began early to make essays at dramatic poetry, which at that time was very low, and his plays took well. He was handsome, well-shaped man, very good company, and of a very ready and pleasant smooth wit.

" The humour of the constable in *Midsummer Night's Dream*, he happened to take at Grendon, in Bucks, which is the road from London to Stratford, and there was living that constable in 1642, when I first came to Oxon. I think it was *Midsummer* ht that he happened to lie there. Mr. Jos. How is of that sh, and knew him. Ben Jonson and he did gather humours *in daily, wherever they came*. One time, as he was at the *a at Stratford super Avon, one Combes, an old rich usurer, o be buried; he makes there this extemporary epitaph:—*

Ten in the hundred the devil allows,
But Combe will have twelve, he swears and vows;
If any one asks who lies in this tomb,
Hoh! quoth the devil, 'tis my John O'Combe!

He was wont to go to his native country once a year. I think I have been told that he left 2 or 300 £. per annum, there or thereabout to a sister. I have heard Sir Wm. D'avenant and Mr. Thomas Shadwell (who is counted the best comedian we have now) say, that he had a most prodigious wit (v. his epitaph in Dugdale's Warw.), and did admire his natural parts beyond all other dramatical writers. He (Ben Jonson's Underwood) was wont to say that he never blotted out a line in his life; said Ben Jonson, 'I wish he had blotted out a thousand.' His comedies will remain wit as long as the English tongue is understood, for that he handles *mores hominum*: now our present writers reflect so much upon particular persons and coxcombities, that twenty years hence they will not be understood.

"Though, as Ben Jonson says of him, that he had but little Latin and less Greek, he understood Latin pretty well, for he had been in his younger years a schoolmaster in the country. From Mr. . . . Beeston."

It would be well if longer biographies contained as large a proportion that may not be gainsaid: Aubrey cites "some of the neighbours" as his most direct informants, and evidently exercised neither industry nor criticism in his inquiry; but later investigation must approve his information at least to this, not inconsiderable extent:—

"Shakespeare was born at Stratford, his father ranked with the tradesmen of the town, and his own prospects were therefore not more elevated. Genius for poetry, however, and at least a passion for acting, carried him, vivacious and perhaps unsettled, to the stage. He arrived in London quite a young man, and was not unsuccessful as an actor, but at once commenced writing plays, and, making great advances beyond existing dramas, became very popular. He was of comely person, social temperament, lively and engaging in wit and manners,—very observant of mankind, and sometimes not indisposed to transfer an original from nature to the stage direct; the companion of Ben Jonson and contemporary of John Combe, a man of capital at Stratford. *He preserved his attachment to his native town to the*

last, and left considerable property, which, however, passed into the female line. He wrote with fluency, and eschewed laborious correction. He had sufficient knowledge of Latin to give countenance to at least the report, that in youth he had been a schoolmaster in the country."

Aubrey's informant, Mr. Beeston, quoted for the last fact, if so it were, was probably Christopher Beeston, who was a theatrical apprentice to Augustine Phillips in Shakespeare's company, and continued on the stage till the civil wars. (See Collier's Lives of Actors.)

In 1690, or thereabouts, an Archdeacon of Lichfield was found, Mr. Richard Davies, whose manuscripts, in college keeping, furnish this memorandum.—“Shakespeare.—He was much given to all unluckiness in stealing venison and rabbits; particularly from Sir Lucy, who had him oft whipt and sometimes imprisoned, and at last made him fly his native country, to his great advancement: But his revenge was so great, that he is his justice Clod-pate; and calls him a great man, and that, in allusion to his name, bore three *louses* rampant for his arms.”

Even this garbage contains something that may not be cast aside, and is the earliest authentic hint preserved of the satirical reference of Justice Shallow to Sir Thos. Lucy, whatever was the provocation.

On April 10, 1693, a Mr. Dowdall addressed a small treatise in the form of a letter to Mr. Edward Southwell, describing several places in Warwickshire, among them Stratford, where he culls the inscriptions on Shakespeare's monument, and adds this note (“Halliwell's Life,” p. 87):—

“Near the wall where his monument is erected lieth a plain freestone, underneath which his body is buried, with this epitaph, made by himself a little before his death:—

Good friend, for Jesus' sake forbear

To dig the dust enclosed here!

Blest be the man that spares these stones,

And curst be he that moves my bones.

Jerk that showed me this church is above eighty years old;
's that this Shakespeare was formerly in this town bound
to a butcher, but that he run from his master to Lon-

don, and there was received into the playhouse as a servitor, and by this means had an opportunity to be what he afterwards proved. He was the best of his family, but the male line is extinguished: not one, for fear of the curse abovesaid, dare touch his gravestone, though his wife and daughters did earnestly desire to be laid in the same grave with him."

There is little doubt that from this old clerk, directly or indirectly, came Aubrey's assertion that the poet's father was a butcher; and thus we should have not two witnesses to the point, but one speaking by two mouth-pieces. Something more than the clerk's word would be required for proof of the authorship of the quoted epitaph, or even that it covered Shakespeare's grave. That he was the best of his family, as measured by the standard that clerks use because others do, will be found a probable, indeed established fact: beyond this, it is possible that some truth may be preserved in the term he gives to Shakespeare's first position in the company. Augustine Phillips, who, in 1605, left Shakespeare 30s. in gold, as his "fellow," left legacies of money, musical instruments, and apparel to his apprentice, his late apprentice, and to Christopher Beeston, "his servant," who, as we have seen, became an actor, and also master of the king's and queen's young company in 1637. Phillips, however, was a musician as well as a comedian, and it may have been in the first capacity that he took apprentices or servants; and as it is uncertain whether anyone ever entered on the stage as a comedian's apprentice, it is scarcely worth conjecturing that the clerk had heard that Shakespeare did so.

At last, in 1707, almost a century after the poet's death, appeared his Life, by Rowe, prefixed to an edition of his works, and repeated, somewhat abridged, in 1714; he concludes it with a eulogy on the Shakespearian performances of Betterton, who retired from the stage in 1700, at the age of sixty-five, and cites him in these terms as his authority for the biography:—

"I must own a particular obligation to him for the most considerable part of the passages relating to this Life, which I have here transmitted to the public; his veneration for the memory of

Shakespeare having engaged him to make a journey into Warwickshire on purpose to gather up what remains he could of a name for which he had so great a veneration."

Accordingly, it proves that this Life contains details that were manifestly derived from the Stratford register, as well as others that could only, at the time, have been learnt from tradition, though documentary evidence has since confirmed several of them. It is not known at what date Betterton visited the place, but it was probably when he was a younger man than when he left the stage. What is there that is uncontested? Bowman the actor, whose wife had been under the guardianship of Betterton after 1692, is said by Oldys to have been unwilling to allow that his associate had ever made such a journey; with the result of it before us, we can only interpret this hint as a doubt whether it were made so absolutely on purpose, as Rowe complimentarily affirms, and as it were illiberal not to concede.

Traditions are traceable to this source that Rowe did not insert in the Life, probably because he disbelieved them; one is, that Shakespeare began life by holding horses at the door of the playhouse, and advanced by hiring boys to hold them "under his inspection." "In time," it is added, "Shakespeare found higher employment; but as long as the practice of riding to the playhouse continued, the waiters that held the horses retained the appellation of Shakespeare's boys." Such a practice certainly existed, and there is nothing incredible about the currency of such an appellation for the boys—the predecessors of the clamorous crowd that now, on the same ground in Playhouse-yard, "the open space to turn carriages in," attend and contend for the early copies of the "Times" Newspaper. Granting or assuming this, which would easily be remembered to Betterton's time, we can only say further, that the explanation that is given is not the most likely one, but the one most likely to have been imagined or inferred. This story was re-

Pope as communicated to him by Rowe,—for referred to Betterton, who, however, is pro-

bably guiltless of anything worse than relating a fiction illustrative of the profanity and gracelessness of D'avenant, to whose scandalous conceit Pope himself ascribed it. "If tradition may be trusted, Shakespeare often baited at the Crown Inn or Tavern at Oxford, in his journey to and from London. The landlady was a woman of great beauty and sprightly wit, and her husband, Mr. Jno. D'avenant (afterwards mayor of that city), a grave melancholy man, who, as well as his wife, used much to delight in Shakespeare's pleasant company :" and so the story proceeds to a warning by a townsman to their son, Will. D'avenant, that the boy, in calling Shakespeare godfather, should have a care not to take God's name in vain.

The jest may or may not have been a stock one,—that it is found published in 1630, without names of persons, proves nothing; but without condemning Shakespeare on this and other such corrupt evidence, we may reserve for consideration how far a festive nature and temperament may have left a reputation behind him in London that, at least, was not inconsistent with the calumny.

Another anecdote on the authority of D'avenant, and another from the Bowman already mentioned, and with these the direct stream of personal tradition of any claim to authenticity is drawn dry. This is from the papers of Oldys—"Old Mr. Bowman, the player, reported from Sir William Bishop that some part of Sir John Falstaff's character was drawn from a townsman of Stratford, who either faithlessly broke a contract or spitefully refused to part with some land for a valuable consideration adjoining to Shakespeare's, in or near that town." Sir William had opportunities of knowing much, for his father was born at Bridgetown, near Stratford, and died in 1673, at the age of eighty-eight, and there is some shadow of confirmation for his report.

At the conclusion of the advertisement to Lintot's edition of the Poems, in 1709, it is said :—"That most learned prince and great patron of learning, King James the First,

was pleased with his own hand to write an amicable letter to Mr. Shakespeare, which letter, though now lost, remained long in the hands of Sir Wm. D'avenant, as a credible person now living can testify." This unnamed witness was Sheffield, Duke of Buckingham, according to the note of Oldys.

Occasion will constantly occur, as our summary proceeds, to discuss the traditions recorded by Rowe; as these came down to him from D'avenant and the enquiries of Betterton, they are divided between the local source in Warwickshire and the memoirs that might be gleaned from the reassembled and reorganized companies of players,—in every case, therefore, they are worth attention, and while we put together the multifarious collections of later biographers, we must not be unjust to the first.

WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE, then, was born at Stratford on Avon, in Warwickshire, in 1564, the sixth year of Elizabeth; his baptism is recorded on the 26th of April; but his precise birthday cannot be certainly determined; there is a glimmer of tradition, however, that his anniversary was the day of his death; this is recorded on his monument as the 23rd of April. It is quite consistent with the custom of the time that the child should have been carried to the font at three days old, and for the sake of unity in grateful associations, it seems agreed to assume this date—if not more probable than another, it is at least as much so.

The name of Shakespeare was and is widely diffused in Warwickshire and adjoining counties, and occurs in records with indication of every variety of station, gentleman, prioress, butcher, or shoemaker; but it is only by a link of conjecture that we can trace the line of the doct up to his grandfather. Of his father, John Shakespeare, we first catch sight as resident in Henley Street, Stratford, in 1552, when he incurred a fine there for a *punarium* before his dwelling. In 1556, he was on *ry of court leet* at Stratford; was sued before John

Burbage, bailiff of the town, for £8, as a glover; sues another to recover barley, and acquired two copyhold tenements, with appurtenances,—one of them, in Henley Street, almost as good as freehold. It was either in this year or the next that he was elected upon the corporation, which consisted according to the charter, dated only in 1553, of fourteen aldermen and fourteen burgesses. He duly advanced through the successive offices and dignities of ale-taster, afferor, constable, chamberlain, was elected an alderman in 1565, when his son William was in his second year, and bore charges in equal proportion with his fellows; in 1568 he became high bailiff of the town, and by virtue and for the duration of his office a justice of the peace, and thereafter was usually styled in the town registers Master John Shakespeare; he was head alderman for the ensuing year. One entry occurs of a payment to him by the corporation for timber; and in 1597, when the poet was fifteen, his father is styled in a deed *Johannes Shakespeare "yeoman."*

Thus we may safely say, that at the time of the birth of William Shakespeare, and at least for some years afterwards, his father was a substantial burgess of Stratford, taking rank with the best-considered men of the town,—grocers, haberdashers, and butchers though they might be. His transactions indicate common dependence upon trade and agriculture, the town and the farm; just that position, in fact, that has sufficient general agreement with the better account of Rowe, probably obtained through his descendants, that he had considerable dealings in wool, and with the less flattering version of the old parish clerk, that he was a butcher—as most yeomen and farmers, to say nothing of country gentlemen, occasionally are.

That John Shakespeare's family are mentioned in the town records as gentlemen, as implied by Rowe, does not now appear, and, indeed, he himself is the first who appears in them. Neither can implicit reliance be placed upon an extract from the Heralds' Office, which avers that in the year that he was bailiff he obtained a grant

of arms. I do not, however, entirely disbelieve it, though it may have been forged by the Heralds for an intelligible purpose. John Shakespeare seems to have ceased to be a glover some time previously, (for the trade only occurs once attached to his name,) and at this time to have been in prosperous circumstances; his wife, it is certain, was descended from a very ancient family, and the ambition, if not the sentiment of grade, which certainly animated his son, may have induced him to avail himself of an opportunity to secure a title to gentry.

There is clearly not sufficient evidence to found a decision, but enough is known to show that there was every opportunity for Shakespeare to be stimulated by a motive powerful with certain natures, the consciousness of title by descent and connection, to a higher rank than the gifts of fortune have confirmed.

John Shakespeare married in 1557, which may account for his neglectful attendance as ale-taster, by which he incurred fine. His wife was Mary Arden, youngest daughter of Robert Arden, or Arderne, of Wilmecote, in the neighbouring parish of Aston Cantlowe, who has no better title in law papers than *agricola*, or husbandman, and evidently from the inventory of his house at death had the occupation of a yeoman, but nevertheless was not only of good descent, but possessed considerable landed property. Robert Arden was owner of houses and land at Snitterfield, about three miles from Stratford —his wife's jointure was here, and in 1550 had a Richard Shakespeare tenant of part of this property. As John Shakespeare had a brother Henry, and a Henry Shakespeare lived and died at Snitterfield, it is not unlikely, though not proved, that they were sons of the tenant of Robert Arden, and in any case the intercourse of the families is explained. Mary Arden and Alicia, the only unmarried sisters out of seven, were executors of their her's will, at his death at the end of 1556. Mary den inherited £6 13*s.* 4*d.* (ten nobles) in money, and *all estate in fee*, in the parish of Aston Cantlowe, *red Asbyes*, consisting of a messuage, fifty acres of

arable land, six of meadow and pasture, with right of common, and in addition she had an interest in property in Snitterfield. If she was of age when she was left executrix, this would bring her to seventy-two when she died. Reckoning in like manner, from the first mention of John Shakespeare as a householder, he would be twenty-five when he married, and seventy-two at death. Their youngest child was born in 1580, when William Shakespeare, their eldest son, was sixteen; and this settles, approximately, all that is of interest, the relative ages of parents and child; the general probability being in favour of a lower age for Mary Shakespeare than forty-five at birth of last child.

The family of the Ardens had possessions adjoining the forest of Arden, or Arderne, and their pedigree is traced by Dugdale, without interruption, to Edward the Confessor. In later times, a Walter Arden married a daughter of John Hampden of Bucks, and was brother to Sir John Arden, Squire to the body of Henry VII., and grandfather to a Robert Arden, groom of the chamber to the same monarch, and from this junior branch, within the moderate limits of family tradition, was deducible the line of the mother of Shakespeare.

An Arden, a cousin of Mary Shakespeare, some degrees removed, was Sheriff of Warwickshire in 1568, the same year in which her husband reached the height of municipal honour as Bailiff. One of her sisters was married to an Edward Lambert, of Barton on the Heath, of whom we shall hear again.

It seems not improbable that the occupations of John Shakespeare were modified by the portion of land that he received with his wife, and in 1570 he rents a meadow (Ingon) of fourteen acres, at a rent implying that there was a good house upon it. His connection with the town, however, still continued; it was during his term as Chief Alderman, 1571-2, that Queen Elizabeth visited Sir Thomas Lucy at Charlecote, close to Stratford, of which town he was the most powerful and important neighbour. The corporation were at moderate charges

"for the Queen's provision;" here probably she heard the news of the massacre of St. Bartholomew. In 1575, Warwickshire was in excitement with the bustle and magnificence of her entertainment at Kenilworth. In this year, when William Shakespeare was eleven years old, his father bought two houses in Henley Street for £40; this is the last trace of his comparative prosperity; notes that ensue, scanty and scattered, are uniformly of a less cheerful cast, until better days came back by the successes of his son. The cause of his difficulties is not discoverable, but the hints of his proceedings suggest that it was rather from excessive than deficient activity; true, he could not, or did not write, but signed manfully with a mark; so, however, did most of his colleagues on the corporation, who would naturally be the busiest and most thriving men of the town. Some tradition of these embarrassments reached Rowe, but in ascribing them to a numerous family, his informant seems to have erred by misreading the register, and giving to the father of the poet the family of a namesake, a shoemaker. His last child, Edmund, was born when William was sixteen, making the fifth living, Gilbert being fourteen years old, Joan eleven, and Richard six. A sister Anne, however, had died the previous year, aged eight. Two daughters died in infancy, before the birth of William. Commentators have remarked, that at the funeral of Anne, 8*d.* was paid for bell and pall, an expense that was not generally incurred, and as difficulties were already accruing, it may be that they were aggravated, if not brought on by imprudences of ambition—but we have said we will eschew conjecture.

While half the aldermen could not write, and perhaps not read, there were others who could read Latin and write it too, as their preserved letters avouch. From the time of Edward IV. (1482) the Guild of the Holy Cross of Stratford had held lands on condition of maintaining a *best competent* to teach grammar, that is Greek and freely to all scholars of the town. After the disso-

lution of the fraternity, a charter of Edward VI. established the free school of the town, and here no doubt, as in others of like origin, Latin at least was taught more or less efficiently—it might be even very efficiently. The present grammar-school is an ancient room over the old town-hall, adjoining the chapel of the guild; but it appears, from a change that was made in 1505, that the school had previously been held in the chapel itself. The structure belongs, for the most part, to the reign of Henry VII., and the interior was anciently adorned with paintings of the traditional history of the Holy Cross, and others, which were discovered beneath encrusted whitewash in 1804; the first obliterating coat was given in the birth-year of Shakespeare, when the Corporation expended 2*s.* for "defacing ymage in Chappell."

Rowe asserts that Shakespeare's father bred him for some time at a free school, but was forced by narrow circumstances, and want of his assistance at home, to withdraw him prematurely. This agrees in both points with what we know of his father's circumstances; as to the degree of efficiency the pupil carried away, the line of Ben Jonson, "and though thou hadst small Latin and less Greek," implies that he had learned, if not even the rudiments of Greek, something more than the rudiments of Latin. My own impression from his works is, that he probably had no acquaintance with Greek literature whatever, and comparatively little with Latin—none at all, it may be, beyond one or two school-text books, but that his knowledge of the language, of the vocabulary and the accidence, was originally sufficient, however it may have rusted from counter attractions determining him to other reading.

Illustration in abundance has been obtained of the numerous opportunities which surrounded the youth of Shakespeare for the development of a taste for the drama, dramatic poetry and the stage. The town accounts of the time show usually several, sometimes many payments yearly to different companies of players, who are distinguished as the Earl of Leicester's players, the Earl of

Worcester's players, and so forth, according to the nobleman whose protection they enjoyed, and whose servants they styled themselves. It is remarkable, that the first of these entries occurs in the year of John Shakespeare's magistracy, as if he had set the example from peculiar liking and interest in playing, though for the rest it was the ordinary custom of the time for players visiting a town to accredit themselves in the first instance to the Mayor or High Bailiff, and exhibit for the first time in the town-hall, under his patronage. Ten or eleven different companies are noted within a few years, and many of them over and over again; and there can be no doubt from what is known of the history of the stage, that the performances even of the same company were most various in style and constantly diversified by novelty.

Between the dates of Shakespeare's birth and majority we find notices of acted plays that range through every variety of Moral and Miracle play, plays from English and Ancient history, mythological, romantic, and what may be called fantastic subjects. Blank verse, prose, rhyme, extemporised dialogue, dumb show and, to a certain extent, spectacle, were interchanged and combined with every degree of extravagance and simplicity. At the same time the custom of the presentation of plays by the Inns of Court, public schools, choristers and universities, brought into exercise the invention of a different class of minds, which would have a stimulant reaction the rather that their productions were frequently presented to the same audience, to royalty, nobility, and the court. The interest of the audiences was not unfrequently stimulated by very direct treatment of matters polemical as well as political, a tendency that from time to time was sharply checked; at other times a source of amusement was sought in personal satire, especially it would seem in London, where the players and the corporation were at ant feud,—the mayor and aldermen apparently being *as highly valued at that time as they have been so since.*

Against these enemies, and against others who were embittered by the nascent asceticism that was at last to be triumphant in Puritanism, the players were protected by the favour and personal tastes of the sovereign and the ingenious, ardent and vivacious aristocracy that at that time animated the English court. In Shakespeare's tenth year (1574) the Earl of Leicester obtained a patent for James Burbage and four others, authorizing them "to use, exercise and occupy the art and faculty of playing tragedies, comedies, &c. as well for the recreation of our loving subjects, as for our solace and pleasure when we shall think good to see them," and this was to apply "as well within our city of London and liberties of the same, as throughout our realm of England." As if this were scarcely enough, within three months after a letter from the Privy Council enjoined the Lord Mayor to "admit the comedy players within the city of London, and to be otherwise favourably used." The response to this seems to have been an act of the Common Council the next year, assuming the right of licensing theatrical exhibitions within the city, and making the condition of a license the contribution of half receipts to charitable purposes. Thus beset, James Burbage availed himself of the immunity from civic authority of the precinct of the suppressed religious houses of Dominicans, the Black Friars, and purchased and converted certain rooms abutting there on the very city wall, into a common playhouse, and in spite of hostile petition made good his ground, and established the stage which was to be that of Shakespeare.

In the meantime affairs at Stratford,—the private affairs of the family of Shakespeare,—were taking that turn to which tradition ascribed, probably with some truth as its basis, his adoption of the profession of the stage. The proofs of his father's narrowing circumstances follow on continuously from the year that William Shakespeare was thirteen, till he was twenty-three; ten years' experience of a straitened home, at the opening of life,—insufficient, however, to subdue the buoyancy of his

spirits, to depress either his ardour or his energies. The details may be concisely told.

In 1577, John Shakespeare is for the first time found irregular in his attendance as Alderman ; the next year he is excused half charge for the furniture of pikemen and bill men, and entirely excused from the weekly payment of his brother Aldermen of 4*d.* towards the relief of the poor, rendered necessary by one of the occasional visits of the plague. In 1579, the sum due from him towards purchase of armour and weapons is returned, "unpaid and unaccounted for." He and his wife sell her share of property at Snitterfield for £4,—he is styled "yeoman" in the deed, and marks with a cross instead of the cipher resembling a capital A that he formerly used : they also mortgage the estate of Asbyes for £40 to Edmund Lambert, brother-in-law of Mary Shakespeare.

In 1580, the list of debts appended to the will of Roger Sadler, baker, shows John Shakespeare as owing him £5, for which he appears to have had credit only on the guarantee of Edmund Lambert and another. This was in or before January ; in May of the same year John Shakespeare has a son baptized Edmund, probably after his uncle by marriage, whose assistance therefore was accepted and considered to be offered, in good part and good faith. According to the terms of the deed, the mortgage of Asbyes was to be a sale, unless the money were repaid by the feast of St. Michael the Archangel in this the ensuing year (29th September). They seem to have counted upon being able to effect this by the falling in of Mary Shakespeare's reversionary interest in Snitterfield property, by the anticipated death of Mary Arden, her step-mother. This death did not occur till December, and they had then sold the interest, still reversionary only, to R. Webbe, for £40 ; and this sum, according at least to their own averment in later proceedings, they duly tendered in redemption of Lambert's mortgage. Lambert declined to accept the money in that

case, unless other sums due to him were acquitted at the same time, and thus he retained the property until

proceedings in Chancery were instituted at a later date, with what effect is not known. These proceedings, from their date, were no doubt undertaken with the advice of William Shakespeare, and as they correspond in time with the production of Henry IV., first part, I have no doubt that Edmund Lambert, or rather his representative and heir, John Lambert, was the spiteful or fraudulent occupant of land sought by the poet, who according to Sir William Bishop's tradition, was the original of Falstaff.

On the other side of the account there is the qualifying fact, that John Shakespeare never parted with his houses in Henley Street, which descended to his son ; and whatever, therefore, may have been his embarrassments, they by no means amounted to destitution. In fact, the records of the bailiff's court, that prove his difficulties in meeting demands upon him, show him by other entries of the same date, suing debtors for monies owing.

In 1586 a crisis came ; it was returned to a writ of distress on the 19th of January, "quod prædictus Johannes Shackspere nihil habet unde distringi potest,"—"that the said John Shakespeare has nothing on which the distress can be executed." A month later a *capias* was issued, and then another *capias* in March ; his municipal standing also declined, and in September this same year the books of the corporation show this entry by the town clerk. "At this hall William Smith and Richard Court are chosen to be Aldermen in the place of John Wheler and John Shaxpere ; for that Mr. Wheler doth desire to be put out of the Company, and Mr. Shaxpere doth not come to the halls when they be warned, nor hath not done of a long time." For the time present there may have been an obstruction known, but not mentioned, for in the ensuing March, 1587, is recorded a writ of *habeas corpus*, which seems to imply that John Shakespeare had been in custody, or imprisoned for debt. To finish these notices at once, it may be added, that another *distringas* was issued against him in 1593, evidently *no mere matter of form*, for in the pre-

vious year his absence from church-attendance is accounted for in a return made by Sir Thomas Lucy of recusants and *others*, as probably owing to fear of process for debt ; and it is not till 1595, only two years before his son's purchase of New Place, that he ceases to appear as a party in petty actions, which bear at least the colour of pertinacity.

In 1582 William Shakespeare became a married man, at the age of eighteen years and a half. Rowe's account runs thus :—" Upon his leaving school he seems to have given entirely into that way of living which his father proposed to him (the wool-trade seems implied), and in order to settle in the world after a family manner, he thought fit to marry while he was yet very young : his wife was the daughter of one Hathaway, said to have been a substantial yeoman in the neighbourhood of Stratford." The marriage is not recorded in the Stratford register, and must have been celebrated elsewhere; but a few years since, Rowe's tradition was confirmed by the discovery of a marriage bond at Worcester, the metropolis of the diocese, which was given by Fulk Sandells and John Richardson, of Stratford, in order to obtain license for William Shakespeare to marry Ann Hathaway, maiden, of Stratford, with once asking of the banns. The bond is dated the 28th of November.

It is sufficiently proved that Anne was the daughter of Richard Hathaway, of Shottery, adjoining and in the parish of Stratford, and who is traced in an acquaintance not only with the two sureties, but with John Shakespeare, who was security for him in the poet's birth year.

They sign their names with marks, the whole set of them, and are styled in deeds and instruments, *agricolæ* or husbandmen, like Robert Arden, but they have dwellings of their own, appointed as a yeoman's should be,—that of Richard Hathaway yet stands, though now divided into cottages, and is occupied by a descendant,—

ave goods, and cattle and land too, to divide by will
their children. Richard Hathaway died in Sep-
, 1581, the year before the marriage: his will

mentions other children, but not Anne ; as her identity seems indisputable, it is possible that she was passed over as not unprovided for, and thus came not quite portionless to her husband.

Anne Hathaway, by the evidence of her epitaph, was between seven and eight years older than her youthful bridegroom ; their first child, Susannah, was baptized at Stratford, 26th of May, 1583 ; the obvious inference from comparison of dates is confirmed by the shortened banns and the celebration of the marriage elsewhere than at Stratford. The conclusion has been variously but vigorously fenced with by biographers. One (Mr. Halliwell) says vaguely, "the espousals of the lovers were celebrated in the summer—(to wit, 28th of November), 1582," and others are prompt to magnify the virtue and dignity of an assumed "troth-plight." That Shakespeare himself repudiates the apology, by the expressions he assigns to Prospero monitory to the betrothed Ferdinand, and to Claudio in his assertion of his own respect for himself and his betrothed, dispenses with the necessity for considering it. The presumption as the evidence stands is not to be escaped from, and it is more to the honour of Shakespeare to note his timely reparation, and how superior he was to the egotism of allowing his own lapse, if such there were, to pervert his moral judgment in his writings, than to falsify biography, not to say morals, for a false apology.

To be swayed or surprised by passion in youth, and even later, has ever been the besetting liability of the poet, and without allowing much value to scandalous tradition I cannot but recognize in some of the sonnets a personal recognition of weakness, and also the weakness itself struggling with the admission, and almost becoming—never quite becoming, strong enough to brave it :—

"Love is too young to know what conscience is :
Yet who knows not conscience is born of love?"

On the 2nd of February, 1584-5, were baptized at Stratford, Hamnet and Judith, twin children of William

and Anne Shakespeare ; they were no doubt christened after Hamnet Sadler, baker by trade, and Judith his wife, a firm friend of the poet till death, and remembered by him in his will. These were the last children that were born from the marriage, and the fact has been absurdly wrested to support a futile theory, that it was not a happy one. In the same sense stress has been laid on the poet's repeated allusion to the disadvantage of seniority for a wife : the fact of repetition certainly gives an impression that Shakespeare had the maxim at heart, but it argues at the same time that he had it not painfully so. I would not say that in writing it down he had not some feeling of self-accusation, but this is more than balanced by a grateful admission of admirable permanence in feminine attachment.

" Let still the woman take
An elder than herself; so wears she to him;
So sways she level in her husband's heart;
For boy however we do praise ourselves
Our fancies are more giddy and infirm,
More longing, wavering, sooner lost and won
Than women's are.—
Then let thy love be younger than thyself,
Or thy affection cannot hold the bent."

The traditions are too steady and consistent of Shakespeare's regular visits and constant attachment to Stratford all through his life, for us to believe that he found there lying in wait for him either disgrace abroad or conjugal discomfort in his home.

A tradition seems to have reached Oldys, that Anne Hathaway was beautiful ; the epitaph placed on her grave by her daughter bespeaks that she was the object of filial affection,—and from this point of view some value may be attached to the gossip of the old parish clerk, who, gossip as he might be, probably chimed in with the general tone of tradition of a united domestic hearth, in reporting that the wife and the daughter earnestly desired to share Shakespeare's grave. It was the great service of Mr. Knight, to point out that after his death *his widow, from the nature of his property, would be*

amply provided for by dower, through the known and usual operation of the English law : this simple indication happily sweeps away as nonsense a web of ill-contrived comment on her position in his will.

Before Shakespeare then reached his twenty-first year in 1585 he had a wife and three children to provide for, and may readily have betaken himself to the most promising means, his father's doubtful occupation, or, as one tradition would have it, to that of a schoolmaster. From the familiarity with legal technicalities displayed in his writings, and his fondness for, I had almost said addiction to, metaphors from legal instruments and proceedings, an opinion has gained ground that he was for a time in a lawyer's office, and I must say, I think there is more in it than can be accounted for by an alternative supposition : this is, that the habit may have been acquired from listening to the legal talk and terms that were rife around him through the multifarious processes in which his father was a party, and the frequent and complicated changes in the disposition of his real property and that of his wife.

Positive record of Shakespeare's course we have none, from that of the baptism of his twins till seven years later, when, at the age of twenty-eight, he is distinctly alluded to by Greene as a dramatist, fertile and flourishing, in London. Great political events had agitated the interval : the Queen of Scots was executed in 1587, and the next year the enthusiasm and confidence of the nation was raised to the highest pitch by the defeat of the Armada. The annals of the drama, for the same year, record the death of Tarlton, a comedian, who was himself a national drama ; and in the current years a settled and decided character had been given to the productions of the stage by the best works of Lylly, Marlowe, and Greene, who were at the height of their powers and reputation. Beside them Shakespeare had taken his place by 1592, a formidable and advancing rival ; but how, and why, and when he first joined the players is only *matter of doubtful tradition*.

The terms of Greene imply that the success of Shake-

speare was brilliant and decided, and had given him a position in marked contrast to his commencement. Greene was at the premature end of a short, disappointed, and dissipated life, and dying in September, 1592, a work was shortly after published in his name by Henry Chettle, also a dramatist, entitled; "A Groatsworth of Wit bought with a million of Repentance," and inscribed "To those gentlemen, his quondam acquaintance, who spend their wits in making plays." In the course of it he urges three friends, it is thought Marlowe, Nash, and Peele, to give up writing for the players:—

"Base minded men all three of you, if by my misery ye be not warned: for unto none of you like me sought those burs to cleave: those puppets, I mean, who speak frō our mouths, those Anticks garnish in our colours. Is it not strange that I, to whom they have all been beholding; is it not like that you, to whom they have all been beholding, shall (were ye in that case that I am now) be both of them at once forsaken? Yes, trust them not; for there is an upstart Crow, beautified in our feathers, that with his *Tiger's heart wrapt in a player's hide*, supposes he is as well able to bombast out a blank verse as the best of you, and being an absolute *Johannes fac totum*, is, in his own conceit, the only Shakespeare in a country. Oh that I might intreat your rare wits to be employed in more profitable courses, and let these apes imitate your past excellence, and never more acquaint them with your admired inventions. I know the best husband of you all will never prove an usurer, and the kindest of them all will never prove a kind nurse; yet, whilst you may, seek you better masters, for it is pity men of such rare wits should be subject to the pleasures of such rude grooms."

The parodied name of the combined actor and author would be decisive, without the parody of a line from the Third Part of Henry VI., one of the pieces produced by Shakespeare by the process of adaptation which also seems to be cavilled at.

Chettle, who published the tract, defended himself in sooth from the charge of having been the writer of . In "Kind-Heart's Dream," published a few months later, he also adverts to the offence that it had given to two persons, one apparently Marlowe, on whom it had *fixed the vulgar*, and at that time perilous stigma of *atheism, and the other Shakespeare.*

"About three months since died Mr. Robert Greene, leaving many papers in sundry booksellers' hands: among others his *Groatsworth of Wit*, in which a letter, written to divers play-makers, is offensively by one or two of them taken; and because on the dead they cannot be avenged, they wilfully forge in their conceits a living author, and after tossing it to and fro, no remedy but it must light on me. How I have all the time of my conversing in printing hindered the bitter inveighing against scholars, it hath been very well known; and how in that I dealt I can sufficiently prove. With neither of them that take offence was I acquainted; and with one of them, I care not if I never be: the other, whom at that time I did not so much spare, as since I wish I had, for that as I have moderated the heat of living writers, and might have used my own discretion (especially in such a case, the author being dead); that I did not, I am as sorry as if the original fault had been my fault; because myself have seen his demeanour no less civil than he excellent in the quality he professes: besides, divers of worship have reported his uprightness of dealing, which argues his honesty, and his facetious grace in writing that approves his art. For the first, whose learning I reverence, and at the perusing of Greene's book struck out what then in conscience I thought he with some displeasure writ, or had it been true, yet to publish it was intolerable, him I would wish to use me no worse than I deserve."

The comparison of the original tract proves that it is only from looseness of wording that the apology seems to indicate that the offended play-wrights were both of the number the letter was specially addressed to. The reference to the standing the poet had obtained with "divers of worship" is fully borne out by the terms in which, within a year, he dedicated his *Venus and Adonis* to Lord Southampton.

The poet exclusively, complains bitterly of the advantage of a rival who was an actor also, and as productive and energetic as he was versatile in either faculty; and this combination of qualities seems, indeed, to have been a leading cause of Shakespeare's material success. There is an indication in *Hamlet* that appears much to the point. The prince was to write a scene for insertion in a stock piece of the players, and after its desired and marked effect, he exclaims in an excitement, perhaps chiefly of literary success—"Would not this, sir, and a forest of feathers (if the rest of my fortunes turn Turk

with me), with two Provençal roses on my razed shoes, get me a fellowship in a cry of players? Horatio. Half a share. Hamlet. A whole one, I." Even so it was when Shakespeare's own fortunes were none of the kindest, that he donned the buskin and cothurn, and with flowing pen and fancy free supplied corrections and completions, and then novelties of his own; and aided by vigilance, activity, and the talent for business, of which there is abundant proof, secured the way to more than independence; and yet with such a liberality of spirit, that he kept steadily in view, against many drawbacks, that dignity of social rank, which Greene had possessed but forfeited, and more than this, attracted the attachment and affectionate esteem of the finer spirits who were capable of such sentiments.

It is on our appreciation of the distinction already attained by Shakespeare, as expressed in this notice, and of the length of career which it implies within the limits of the preceding seven years, that must depend whether we are prepared to apply to him another allusion, that, if brought home, is, at least as regards his literary history, of still greater interest. A single year, a single half year, may make vast difference in the history of Shakespeare and the stage at this point; but evidence is so lamentably deficient, that we must be content with generalities.

Greene took his degree of M. A. in Shakespeare's nineteenth year; and, as on his own evidence he left the University young, he cannot have been very much his senior. Marlowe took the same degree when Shakespeare was twenty-three, in 1587, and his remarkable and celebrated play of Tamburlaine is mentioned the next year. Shakespeare's renown when he was taxed as an upstart, was at least not anterior to that of Marlowe in 1588, and yet it was confirmed re 1592. This cannot have been upon the strength *ie or two plays only*; and if not, we must conclude *besides the alterations of Henry VI. and others*, *may have been less extensively touched by him,*

some of the earlier comedies must also have been brought out ; and of these there is not one that would not fully suffice both a poetic and dramatic reputation. Now it is quite certain, as we shall see, that at least sixteen of Shakespeare's plays were in existence before 1598, the list including all the secondary plays and many of his masterpieces ; and simple counting back upon our fingers may convince us that his commencement as a dramatist could not have been later, and might have been somewhat earlier, than 1589. It would seem, then, that Shakespeare's authorship can scarcely be considered to have commenced later than that of Marlowe, though it may have been only after lapse of a year or two that his gentle and more tempered vein even in the fury of a passion, carried off the approval of the more numerous hearers, as well as of the select and the refined.

The year 1589 furnishes a sarcastic allusion by Nash to an author of a play of Hamlet,¹ in these terms :—

"It is a common practise now a days among a sort of shifting companions that run through every art and thrive by none, to leave the trade of *Noverint*, whereto they were born, and busy themselves with the endeavours of art, that could scarcely latinize their neck-verse if they should have need ; yet English Seneca, read by candlelight, yields many good sentences, as *Blood is a beggar*, and so forth ; and if you entreat him fair in a frosty morning, he will afford you whole *Hamlets*, I should say, handfuls of tragical speeches."

This is certainly very much in the tone and style of Greene's invective, and the agreement confirms Knight's conjecture, that Nash, and not Lodge, was the youthful satirist the dying collegian addressed, as a quondam associate and ally. Nash is indignant at the success of a dramatist who meddles with art, who does not shun even classical subjects, though unqualified by university education, and helps himself out of Seneca's tragedies in an

¹ It should be noted that *Hamlet* does not appear in the "Register of the Stationers' Company" until 1602, and in its present form cannot have been written much before that date. *The above extract seems to point to an early form of the play, if it may be taken as referring to Shakespeare.*

English translation,—so little Latin is he master of,—a mere interloper from his original and deserted profession of the law. *Noverint* is the technical beginning of a bond. The satire, such as it is, evidently touches Shakespeare in several points, and the mention of Hamlet seems to prove that it was intended for him. The quarto Hamlet may easily be a badly reported copy of one of his earliest plays; and defective as it is, who shall say that the quoted phrase was not there originally; there is quite enough in *Titus Andronicus* to account for the reference to Seneca's *Thyestes*; and if Nash supposed Shakespeare had been a lawyer's clerk, it is no more than has been inferred by others in later times, on grounds, as we have seen, of high probability. The other report that has come down to us, that he had been a schoolmaster, loses in probability from not having provoked a cavil on this occasion. Of course an angry satirist does not sift even rumours, much less evidence; but there is a correspondence between the pique of Greene and that of Nash that would convince me that the object of it was the same, though Hamlet had not been mentioned. Nash, no doubt, in denouncing "a sort of shifting companions," may have taken a characteristic from more than one, but he certainly individualizes at last.

I am strongly confirmed in my opinion that the sneer of Nash at Hamlets and handfuls of tragical speeches, was indeed a glance at Shakespeare and an early form of his great tragedy, by what appears like a manifest counterthrust in the rewritten and perfected play of a later year. Nobody supposes now that the recitations of the players in the later Hamlet either were intended to be or are ridiculous or bombastical,—how it is that they ^t has been well explained by Schlegel; they are acted, imitation upon a ground of imitation, and be detached and distinguished from it by height-siours and strengthened outlines, that would be

inadmissible in the primary imitation. There is a second factitious medium interposed between them and the spectator, by which extravagance is toned into a relative sobriety; while, but for this extravagance, sobriety would have been flattened into tameness. Thus these speeches became the most remarkable exemplification of the critical precepts of the Prince which touched the contemporary drama so closely, by giving rein to the very torrent, tempest, and whirlwind of passion, yet so smoothed and tempered at its very height, as to be in the direst contrast to speeches that could be only opportunities for a " robustious periwig-pated fellow to tear a passion to tatters, to very rags." If this be so, it is certainly remarkable that it was from a play of Nash that Shakespeare took the theme for his introduced tragical speeches, and so rewrote them that it was impossible for an audience familiar with the model not to draw a comparison between the rude and the ideal, and by the appreciation of true tragic height, have a quickened sense for the detection of fustian, bombast, and rant, some sparks of poetry notwithstanding. The following, a speech from Dido, Queen of Carthage, written by Nash, in conjunction with Marlowe, I extract to illustrate and justify my inference: Pyrrhus has been described as striking off the hands of Priam at the sack of Troy:—

" At which the frantic queen leap'd on his face,
 And in his eyelids hanging by the nails,
 A little while prolonged her husband's life.
 At last the soldiers pull'd her by the heels,
 And swing her howling in the empty air,
 Which sent an echo to the wounded king:
 Whereat he lifted up his bed-rid limbs,
 And would have grappled with Achilles' son,
 Forgetting both his want of strength and hands;
 Which he disdaining, whisked his sword about,
 And with the wind thereof the king falls down:
 Then from the navel to the throat at once
He ripped old Priam, at whose latter gasp
Jove's marble statue 'gan to bend his brow,
As loathing Pyrrhus for this wicked act."

We may now return upon a topic designedly pretermitted, and spend a paragraph or two on the traditions that relate to Shakespeare's departure from Stratford.

There is no evidence to prove that he may not have come to London in the latter half of 1584, at the age of twenty, instead of eighteen, as reported by tradition. In 1587, the players of the Earl of Leicester, the company of James Burbage, to which he is found attached, was one of five to whom payments were made for performances by the Stratford corporation. They had frequently visited the town before, and this may easily have been the opportunity that decided the poet to attach himself to the profession, and seek for fortune and advancement where he could at the same time indulge and exercise the impulse of his genius. The connection of the Earl of Leicester with Kenilworth, and the frequency of names and combinations of names agreeing with those of his players, in Warwickshire and even at Stratford and the neighbourhood, render it not unlikely that the company was closely connected with this county, which had a renown for shows and mysteries, from the celebrated displays and festivities of Coventry. Richard Burbage, the son of James, and the future friend and fellow of Shakespeare, must have been very nearly of his age; he became the chief of the original actors in his friend's plays, and the reputation that he gained proves that he must have been a genius of the very highest histrionic stamp. Nature, in giving to the world the genius of Shakespeare precisely at the time that the stage had become settled and organized, precisely at the interval between the equally inimical predominances of Catholicism and of Puritanism, and when political quarrels had not yet gained such head as to cause the destruction of courts, that indispensable for the protection and encouragement fine, intellectual, and costly arts,—Nature did not go, besides, conducting to the very conjuncture of *these* favouring circumstances, in exactest coincidence *in time and place*, the very man to give a living voice *in expression* to the dumb and still imaginations of his

creative mind. The effect is the same whether Richard Burbage and Shakespeare encountered first at Stratford or at London; if it were at Stratford it is manifest that we are on the trace of an influence competent to have decided his course—whatever others failing this may have supplied its place. Among these would have been the crisis in his father's affairs; tradition says that another was an embroilment with Sir Thomas Lucy, through a deerstealing frolic, reprehensible enough, no doubt, for the father of a family, young as he might be, but still not impossible. The whole story may possibly be false; but it must still be noted that the tale has details that fit in remarkably with facts about this very date.

Rowe's account is to the effect that for a certain time after his marriage he continued at Stratford in a settled occupation, which he may have known from tradition or gathered by inference from the registry of his children.

"In this kind of settlement he continued for some time, till an extravagance that he was guilty of forced him out of his country and that way of living he had taken up. He had by a misfortune common enough to young fellows, fallen into ill company, and amongst them some that made a frequent practice of deer-stealing, engaged him more than once in robbing a park that belonged to Sir Thomas Lucy, of Charlecote, near Stratford. For this he was prosecuted by that gentleman, as he thought, somewhat too severely; and in order to revenge that ill usage, he made a ballad upon him. And though this, probably the first essay of his poetry, be lost, yet it is said to have been so very bitter that it redoubled the prosecution against him to that degree that he was obliged to leave his business and family in Warwickshire for some time, and shelter himself in London."

The tradition was current in the neighbourhood of Stratford about 1700, and the ballad was said to have been stuck upon the knight's park gate; and what purported to be the first verse of it came down through this channel to Oldys and Capell.

"A parliamente member, a justice of peace,
At home a poor scarecrowe, at London an asse,
If lowsie is Lucy, as some folk miscall it,
Then Lucy is lowsie, whatever befall it:
 He thinks himself great,
 Yet an asse in his state,
We allow by his eares but with asses to mate

If Lucy is lowsie, as some folk miscall it,
Sing lowsie Lucy, whatever befall it."

It is certain that Shakespeare had some pique against Sir Thomas Lucy, and indulged it by satirizing him as Justice Shallow, whose heraldic cognizance of a dozen white luces, or, as Sir Hugh Evans calls them, louses, is a perversion of the old coat of the knight,—three luces, that is, full grown pikes, haughty. This is in *The Merry Wives of Windsor*; but in the earlier *Second Part of Henry IV*. we find the allusion more covertly, when Falstaff says of his scarecrow host, "if the young dace be a bait for the old pike, I see no reason in the law of nature but I may snap at him." Again as Sir Thomas married into a Gloucestershire family, it is probable enough that some of his cousins supplied hints for his brethren of the peace, Silence and Slender, who, like Shallow, are of that county. Something was to be gained by the locality, or Falstaff would not have been carried from London to York by a route through Gloucestershire, nor Cotswold have been brought within an easy distance of Master Ford at Windsor. The allusion to the deerstealing frolic of Falstaff, I confess, seems somewhat strained and gratuitous, if it does not cover a reminiscence,—and there is altogether something very suspicious in the evident zest with which Shakespeare seizes a chance of ridiculing a constable or a magistrate, from Dogberry to a Roman tribune. I recognize in this something of the vindictive feeling of one who has been in custody, well merited or not, and cannot restrain spleen thereafter against even the most harmless or most useful functionary of watch and ward. Then, again, the terms of the ballad—though it may have spurious origin, and the anecdote still be true—are oddly enough in agreement with a fact of the assumed date that would not be known to a later forger, for Sir Thomas Lucy was a parliament member in the very years in question, and his *limited legislative activities* were divided between fur-

thering the relaxations of discipline favoured by puritanical preachers, and strengthening the securities for preservation of grain and game. Charlecote was not at the time a park in the statutable sense, but as Sir Thomas Lucy had venison to give away at a later date, it is not unlikely that the fact that his enclosures had not the special preservation of the statute, helped the temptation of depredators. Stealing deer and stealing rabbits are classed together, with other youthful irregularities of the time, as not very heinous outbreaks ; and as Rowe connects the flight of the poet not with the prosecution for the trespass, but with anger at the libel, I have sometimes thought that the first may have occurred when he was a mere stripling, and have had a stripling's punishment ; and that the irritating retaliation may have been nothing less than the suggestion to player associates to exhibit the starch justice upon a stage in his own town, and that this may have been the form of first publication of the offensive verses.

It is impossible to sift truth from evidence essentially inconclusive ; when the most probable inference is determined, we have still to remember that the true is often the least probable, on general considerations. The enquiry can only end with a statement of an impression,—my own is much to the effect that I have shadowed forth above,—though I am conscious of another very plausible hypothesis. It is, that the pique of Shakespeare was of much later origin, and connected with opposition made to his acquisition from the heralds of authorized arms and title of gentry, prolific gossip having all the responsibility of turning the details of his satire into a biographical anecdote.

Among the sonnets occur one or two that partly ascribe the adoption of a player's life to necessities of fortune, but partly, at least by implication, to that well-known influence in youth, called being stage-struck : so at least I understand the following :—

*"O for my sake do you with Fortune chide
The guilty goddess of my harmful deeds"*

That did not better for my life provide
Than public means, which public manners breeds.
Thence comes it that my name receives a brand,
And almost thence my nature is subdued
To what it works with, like the dyer's hand:
Pity me then and wish I were renew'd;
Whilst like a willing patient I will drink
Potions of eyself 'gainst my strong infection:
No bitterness that I will bitter think,
Nor double penance to correct correction.
Pity me then, dear friend, and I assure ye
Even that your pity is enough to cure me."

Shakespeare, who was a lover, and a successful one at eighteen, had written verses we may be sure before he was twenty-three, probably had completed his two poems of Venus and Adonis and the Rape of Lucrece, published long after; if therefore he really became an actor in 1587, which seems most probable, but is not therefore necessarily to be admitted,—he was prepared at once to make his powers available dramatically. The traditions of the town, both through Rowe and the old clerk, agree that his first position in the company was very subordinate, but that his progress was rapid. Genius of the highest order often emerges from obscurity by a single performance, and it is well to correct our judgment of what Shakespeare may have done by the age of twenty-five, when Nash's sarcasm was promulgated, by recollecting the early and rapid manifestation and development of the kindred genius of Raphael or Mozart.

It is cheerless work to have to deal at the turning point of a biography, with mere probabilities and possibilities, but after this review of them, we may be better able to form an opinion on one in especial that is too interesting for any purist in evidence to hustle aside. It appears to have been in 1590 at the earliest, that Edmund Spenser in his "Tears of the Muses," alluded to a dramatic poet in terms that are admirably characteristic both of the disposition and art of Shakespeare, that certainly were unjustifiable if intended for any other, and that have a spirit and force of appreciation that belong alone to masterstrokes struck after no mere imagination but from

ecent contemplation of the life, the warrants of a pre-existing original and type.

Spenser's poem consists of the lamentation of all the fuses in order, over the general degeneracy of the times a esteeming or as furnishing themes for poetry, and over oetry itself. Melpomene mourns somewhat vaguely nd a little inconsistently over Tragedy :—

“ So all with rueful spectacle is fill'd,
Fit for Megæra or Persephone;
But I that in true tragedies am skill'd,
The flower of wit, find nought to busy me;
Therefore I mourn and pitifully moan
Because that mourning matter I have none.”

It is with the wail of Thalia, however, that we are concerned, the very eye and focus of the entire poem nd—I cannot less—I transcribe it all.

Thalia.

“ Where be the sweet delights of learning's treasure,
That wont with comic socks to beautify
The painted theatres, and fill with pleasure
The listener's eyes and ears with melody,
In which I late was wont to reign as queen,
And mask in mirth with graces well beseein?

O! all is gone, and all that goodly glee
Which wont to be the glory of gay wits,
Is laid abed and nowhere now to see;
And in her room unseemly Sorrow sits
With hollow brows and griesly countenance,
Marring my joyous gentle dalliance.

And him besides sits ugly Barbarism,
And brutish Ignorance ycrept of late
Out of dread darkness of the deep abyss,
Where being bred he light and heaven doth hate
They in the minds of men now tyrannize
And the fair scene with rudeness now disguise.

All places they with folly have possest,
And with vain toys the vulgar entertain;
But me have banished with all the rest
That whilom wont to wait upon my train.
Fine Counterfesane and unhurtful Sport,
Delight and Laughter, deckt in seemly sort.

*All these, and all that else the comicke stage
With season'd wit and goodly pleasance graced,*

By which man's life in his liklest image
Was limned forth, are wholly now defaced ;
And those sweet wits which wont the like to frame,
Are now despised and made a laughing game.

And he, the man whom Nature's self had made
To mock herself and truth to imitate,
With kindly counter under mimick shade,
Our pleasant Willy, Ah ! is dead of late ;
With whom all joy and jolly merriment
Is also deaded and in dolour drent.

Instead thereof scoffing Scurrility
And scorning Folly with contempt is crept ;
Rolling in rhymes of shameless ribaldry
Without regard or due decorum kept ;
Each idle wit at will presumes to make,
And doth the learned's task upon him take.

But that same gentle spirit from whose pen
Large streams of honey and sweet nectar flow,
Scorning the boldness of such base-born men,
Which dare their follies forth so rashly throw
Doth rather choose to sit in silent cell,
Than so himself to mockery to sell.

So am I made the servant of the many,
And laughing-stock of all that list to scorn ;
Not honour'd nor cared for of any,
But loathed of losels as a thing forlorn :
Therefore I mourn and sorrow with the rest,
Until my cause of sorrow be redress'd.

Therewith she loudly did lament and shrike,
Pouring forth streams of tears abundantly,
And all her sisters with compassion like,
The breaches of her singults did supply.
So rested she, and then the next in rue
Began her grievous plaint as doth ensue."

Dryden, according to Rowe, always considered that these verses were intended to apply to Shakespeare, and no other application has yet been brought forward with an argument that seems worth confuting. They are first known in print little more than a year before Greene gave unequivocal testimony to the dramatic success of Shakespeare, and three or four after the probable date of his admission into Burbage's company; one year *ter the obscure sarcasm of Nash, which rather owes its gives them illustration of purpose.* The praise of

sweetness marks the quality by which Shakespeare advanced dramatic verse beyond the harshness, tedious monotony or uncertainty of his predecessors and his competitors, and that which is most frequently adverted to in contemporary praise ; the epithet gentle again became almost appropriated to him both personally and poetically, though it is one too current with Spenser to be much insisted on, had he not repeated it a few years later, 1594, in lines to which we cannot deny an application to Shakespeare, after accepting the earlier. The epithet is the more remarkable here as praise is directed to qualities of severer nerve :—

“ And there though last not least is *Aetion* ;
A gentler shepherd may no where be found,
Whose Muse, full of high thoughts' invention,
Doth, like himself, heroically sound.”

There is an incongruity in Spenser's dedication of verses with such a dismal and discontented theme, as his tears of the Muses, to Lady Strange. The histrionic patronage of her lord was extended as far as a company of tumblers, professors of “activities,”—and this, methinks, was in the mind of Shakespeare, (little reason as he had to complain himself,) when to the suggestion of amusement from—

“ The thrice three Muses mourning for the death
Of Learning late deceased in beggary.”

he makes Theseus rejoин :—

“ That is some satire keen and critical
Not sorting with a nuptial ceremony.”

Mr. Knight has well set forth the peculiarities in the condition of the stage, about 1590, that gave point to the denunciations of Spenser. Fierce polemics were raging between the church and the sectaries or at least the sectarian tendency, and the players who had interests as well as sympathies concerned, fanned the flames. In consequence, in 1589, Lord Burleigh not only directed the Lord Mayor to inquire what companies of players had offended, but a commission was appointed for the same purpose. *The war of pamphlets* concerning the consti-

tution and discipline of the church at this time is known as the Martin Marprelate controversy, and among the chief writers on the side of the attack were more than one who commanded the double utterance of both printing press and public stage.

"There was not only one Martin Marprelate," says Izaak Walton, "but other venomous books daily printed and dispersed,—books that were so absurd and scurrilous, that the graver divine disdained them an answer. And yet these were grown into high esteem with the common people, till Tom Nash appeared against them all, who was a man of a sharp wit, and the master of scoffing, satirical, merry pen."

John Lylly, whose prose play of Alexander and Cam paspe was printed and acted in Shakespeare's twentieth year, was forward in the fray, with a pamphlet, pleasantly entitled "Pap with a Hatchet;" and Gabriel Harvey, an intimate friend of Spenser and also embroiled in personal controversy with Nash, confronted the now plain spoken Euphuist, and, in a pamphlet dated from Trinity Hall, furnishes illustration of the atmosphere of heat and fury amidst which Shakespeare lived and wrought and still remained—

"That same gentle shepherd, from whose tongue
Large streams of honey and sweet nectar flow'd."

Nash had written, "Methought *Vetus Comœdia* began to prick him at London in the right vein, when he brought forth Divinity with a scratched face, holding of her heart, as if she were sick, because Martin would have forced her; but missing of his purpose, he left the print of his nails upon her cheeks, and poisoned her with a vomit, which he ministered unto her to make her cast up her dignities." By *Vetus Comœdia*, Nash of course alludes to the Old Comedy of Athens, with its bold treatment of matters of state and individual character, whether by way of personation or personification. When this license was checked, the new comedy of Menander arose, and the succession of the drama of Shakespeare to a like condition of the stage is but part of a general parallel between the development of the art in England and in Greece. Lylly be quoted to the same effect:—"Would these com-

the might be allowed to be played that are penned, and then I am sure he [Martin Marprelate] would be *deciphered*, and so perhaps *discouraged*."

To these attacks and menaces Gabriel Harvey gives a straight blow in return :—

"I am threatened with a Babel and Martin menaced with a comedy—a fit motion for a jester and a player, to try what may be done by employment of his faculty. Babels and Comedies are parlous fellows to *decipher* and *discourage* men (that is the point) with their witty flouts and learned jerks, enough to lash any man out of countenance. Nay, if you shake the painted scabbard at me, I have done; and all you that tender the preservation of your good names were best to please Pap-hatchet and fee Euphues betimes, for fear lest he be moved, or some of his apes hired, to make a play of you, and then is your credit quite undone for ever and ever. Such is the public reputation of their plays. He must be needs *discouraged* whom they *decipher*. Better anger an hundred other than two such that have the stage at commandment, and can furnish out vices and devils at their pleasure."—“The stately tragedy scorneth the trifling comedy, and the trifling comedy flouteth the new ruffianism.”

Of the proceedings of Lord Burleigh's commission—the Master of the Revels, with a divine selected by the Primate, and a “sufficient person, learned and of judgment,” by the Lord Mayor,—no record remains. They had in charge to obtain from the players “their books, and thereupon to strike out or reform such part or matters as they shall find unfit or indecent to be handled in plays, both of divinity and state,” and it appears probable that authority showed itself sufficiently in earnest to repress the chief abuse easily, and then fell gently asleep again.

The offensive and often scurrilous polemics of the stage about this time,—still I have no doubt often very witty and amusing,—which fully account for the picture of it given by Spenser, by no means exclusively engrossed it. Within the same few years its poetical character had changed, to some extent sympathetically, and tragic verse escaped from rhyme to riot in extravagances which were in *quite as marked a contrast* to the tone of Shakespeare's verse and the spirit of his ideal art, and, I think, *denounced as equally repugnant* to the taste of Spenser.

However extensive may have been the employment of blank verse on the stage previously, it appears to have been first established as the proper vehicle of tragedy through the effect which was given to it by Christopher Marlowe. The absence of documentary evidence forbids us to say positively that it may not have been effectively employed still earlier by Shakespeare; but still it would remain that the very extravagances with which Marlowe connected it associated it with his name. It is not safe to infer dates from mere indications of skilfulness and style; the blank verse of Marlowe is harmonized with a much happier variety of pause than that of any other of his competitors but Shakespeare; but this may have been because he was superior in genius, not later in time. Even he cannot be placed in comparison with Shakespeare for a moment, in the power of vivifying and sustaining a rhythmical period of any length without monotony or jar, much less an entire scene of numerous interchanges. In this respect, the praise of sweetness belongs as little to him as to the others; and that of tempered gentleness must assuredly be quite set aside. His Tamburlaine, as we have seen, was alluded to in 1588, and may have been known the previous year, when he graduated M. A. and, no doubt, left the university. In the Prologue he professes,—

“ From jiggling veins of rhyming mother-wits,
And such conceits as clownage keeps in pay,
We'll lead you to the stately tent of war,
Where you shall hear the Scythian Tamburlaine
Threat'ning the world with high astounding terms;”

a promise he redeems in this wise,—

“ Where'er I come the fatal sisters sweat
And grisly death, by running to and fro
To do their ceaseless homage to my sword;
And here in Afric, where it seldom rains,
Since I arrived with my triumphant host,
Have swelling clouds drawn from wide-gasping wounds,
Been oft resolved in bloody purple showers;
A meteor that might terrify the earth
And make it quake at every drop it drinks.”

this is evidently the vein that is referred to in a

angry allusion to stage blank verse by Nash in his epistle prefixed to his friend Greene's *Menaphon*, in 1587, though he lived to be at least accessory to it in his co-authorship with Marlowe. He ridicules "the servile imitation of vain-glorious tragedians, who contend not so seriously to excel in action as to embowel the clouds in a speech of comparison ; thinking themselves more than initiated in poet's immortality if they but once get Boreas by the beard and the heavenly Bull by the dew-lap." He satirizes their "drumming decasyllibon," and says they "think to outbrave better pens with the swelling bombast of bragging blank verse." The last terms, it will be observed, are the same that Greene made use of some five years later, in his spleenetic denunciation of Shakespeare, seizing in his anger the readiest weapon, and imputing, where it was least in place, the fault that elsewhere was all but universal. The last plaint of Polyhymnia, in Spenser's *Tears of the Muses*, I cannot but think has reference to this double revolution of metre and of taste :—

" A doleful case desires a doleful song,
Without vain arts or curious complements,
And squalid fortune into baseness flung,
Doth scorn the pride of wonted ornaments ;
Then fittest are these ragged rhymes for me,
To tell my sorrows that exceeding be.

" For the sweet numbers and melodious measures,
With which I wont the winged words to tie,
And make a tuneful diapase of pleasures,
Now being let to run at liberty
By those which have no skill to rule them right,
Have now quite lost their natural delight.

" Heaps of huge words uphoarded hideously,
With horrid sound, though having little sense.
They think to be chief praise of poetry,
And thereby wanting due intelligence,
Have marred the face of goodly Poesie,
And made a monster of their fantasie."

On the whole, the dramatic ideal of Spenser, no dramatist himself, was assuredly realized by Shakespeare alone, and it is most likely was penned after the realization, for

which a single one of his original dramas would suffice for so fine a poetical appreciation.

In 1593, the year after Greene's death, Christopher Marlowe came to a violent end, struck through the eye into the brain with his own dagger, in an unhappy brawl, which the enemies of his sentiments and profession have no doubt made the worst of. In the same year the theatres in London were closed, by order of Privy Council, as a precaution against the spread of the plague; a little previously, the prohibition of plays on Sundays had been confirmed in an order, which also restricted performances on a Thursday, which the Bear-wards, suffering by competition of wit, claimed as appropriated to bear-baiting by ancient custom.

In this year Shakespeare published his Venus and Adonis, prefixing the following dedication to Henry Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton, a young nobleman of twenty, or nine years the poet's junior;

" Right Honourable,

" I know not how I shall offend in dedicating my unpolished lines to your lordship, nor how the world will censure me for choosing so strong a prop to support so weak a burthen: only if your honour seem but pleased, I account myself highly praised, and vow to take advantage of all idle hours, till I have honoured you with some graver labour. But if the first heir of my invention prove deformed, I shall be sorry it had so noble a godfather, and never after ear so barren a land, for fear it yield me still so bad a harvest. I leave it to your honourable survey and your honour to your heart's content; which I wish may always answer your own wish and the world's hopeful expectation.

" Your honour's in all duty,

" WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE."

The rapidity with which the poem was reprinted proves its instant popularity, and this was long sustained; at the present time, I apprehend, it is but little read, and perhaps still less admired; and the same may be said of the Rape of Lucrece, published in the ensuing year, and dedicated to the same nobleman. Probably, however, *no powers but those of* Shakespeare could have produced *hem in their only too indiscriminate and exhausting concentration of intellect, imagination, and fancy.* It is

likely they were written in early days at Stratford ; and in their minute finishing of external and internal delineation they appear like the early conscientious copies of natural detail, that genius subjects itself to as discipline before it obtains the rights and the mastery of its creative power.

The second dedication has lost much of the formal ceremoniousness of the first—is expressed in terms indeed, which, considering the time, imply almost the familiarity of private friendship and personal attachment, perhaps obligation.

"The love I dedicate to your lordship is without end ; whereof this pamphlet, without beginning, is but a superfluous moiety. The warrant I have of your honourable disposition, not the worth of my untutored lines, makes it assured of acceptance. What I have done is yours, what I have to do is yours; being part in all I have, devoted yours. Were my worth greater, my duty would show greater : meantime, as it is, it is bound to your lordship, to whom I wish long life, still lengthened with happiness.

"Your lordship's in all duty,

"WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE."

With every disposition to be squeamish in such matters, we cannot but see that even the first dedication is independence itself, as compared with the terms addressed by Nash to the same patron about the same period :— "Incomprehensible is the height of your spirit, both in heroic resolution and matters of conceit ; unreprovably perisheth that book whatsoever to waste paper, which on the diamond rock of your judgment disasterly chanceth to be shipwrecked." Florio's dedication of his "World of Words" to the Earl, in 1598, is remarkably parallel to Shakespeare's—to the same effect it may be, only less delicately worded :—"In truth, I acknowledge an entire debt, not only of my best knowledge but of all ; yea, of more than I can or know to your bounteous lordship, in whose pay and patronage I have lived some years. whom I owe and vow the years I have to live. But to me, and many more, the glorious and gracious shine of your honour hath infused light and life." calls him "a dear lover and cherisher as well &

lovers of poets as of poets themselves." There is, therefore, no doubt that the tradition was true, in the main, that came down to Rowe through D'avenant, "that my Lord Southampton at one time gave Shakespeare a thousand pounds, to enable him to go through with a purchase which he had heard he had a mind to." Tradition is not to be trusted for figures,—the value of money at that time was four or five times the present,—but however large the sum may have been, the wonder, without precedent as without imitation, is not that a nobleman should have parted with it so freely, but that he should have had such an opportunity of bestowing it worthily, and availed himself of it. It will be time enough to consider the propriety of the acceptance of the gift when we know time, amount, and circumstances; in the meantime there is no evidence to connect it, as has been done, with the building of the Globe Theatre, by James Burbage.

Burbage's first playhouse was "The Theatre" in Shoreditch, north-east of Finsbury Fields, and situate, almost beyond doubt, in what is now called Curtain Road. He built it in 1576, "with many hundred pounds taken up at interest," but in consequence of quarrels with his landlord, he pulled it down in 1598, and with its materials, and fresh ones, built the Globe, on Bankside, Southwark, in 1598-9. This was a wooden structure, probably on an octagonal plan. To judge from the drawings of these old theatres that remain, the galleries were protected by a roof, sloping outwards, the central part was open to the sky, and the portion occupied by the stage and tiring rooms was surmounted by apartments for dwelling or storage of properties and wardrobe. It was probably much larger than the Blackfriars theatre formed out of converted rooms, but, of course, was only suitable for summer, and for performances by daylight; whereas at the private theatres the daylight itself *seems often to have been excluded*; though not always, mention occurs of the darkening of private theatres *clapping to the windows*, when a scene of night or

dismalness was to be acted. The foppish custom of privileged spectators sitting on the stage on stools, with pages attendant, was a source of standing annoyance to the general audience, but stood its ground in an age of personal display against outcry, satire, and expense.

The curtains in front of the stage ran upon a rod, and opened in the centre, and the stage itself seems to have had an enclosure of arras, answering the purpose of our side scenes, and towards the back where they were called raverses, they could be drawn and undrawn as required. In the centre of the stage, at the back, was a secondary stage, which may have been more or less permanent, and was of frequent employment in aid of the bold treatment by the dramatists of space generally as well as time. The break of level was assumed to account for any distance of perspective, and thus a double action might proceed in the same scene as independently as the several actions disposed at different heights, but of like scale, are depicted in a mediæval painting or on a panel of the gates of Ghiberti. Thus the ghosts might turn from Richard to Richmond, shown as sleeping in separate camps, or a double dialogue might proceed within a room and without.

In the way of scenery, the utmost that was attempted or cared for seems to have been to put such fixed properties on and about the stage as would suggest the scene required. Tombs, rocks, hell-mouths, steeples, beacons, and trees are found in lists of properties, and also cities and battlements. The accounts of the Revels show that for plays before the court there were devices for counterfeiting thunder and lightning, for exhibiting the sun breaking through a cloud, burning mountains, a battlement of canvas; and payment was made for painting "seven cities, one country house, one battlement, a mount, and two great cloths." Graves and trap-doors, ascents and descents from heaven were also provided for. The stage is constantly spoken of as strewn with ashes—the custom even of palace-chambers,—on occasion, by excess of refinement, it was matted. In

Shakespeare's company several actors of eminence played on different instruments, and the band of eight or ten performers is supposed to have sat in an upper balcony, over what is now called the stage-box.

The audience was not satisfied with costume at so cheap a rate as with scenery ; personal bedizement was the rule of the court and the weakness of the time, and the stage could not lag far behind the coxcombs who sate on stools about the front of it. Mythological personages were fitted out with some degree of appropriateness ; as to the foreign and remotely historical, it would not be easy to say at what point the line was even usually drawn. It seems probable that something at least was done to show a difference from contemporary habits, and this is all the compromise that is necessary where the drama itself is the main interest.

Female parts were always sustained by males.

The names of the principal actors in Shakespeare's plays are printed at the beginning of the first edition of 1623, but with no statement of their several parts. Whatever excellence there may have been among the rest, it is only of two, Richard Burbage, chief in tragedy, and William Kemp in comedy, that enough seems to have been said to constitute special renown. This may lead us to think that the faintness of the tradition of Shakespeare's own powers as an actor is not inconsistent with his considerable merit. Rowe's inference from all he could gather was, that he was not distinguished as an extraordinary actor. " His name is printed, as the custom was in those times, amongst those of the other players, before some old plays, but without any particular account of what sort of parts he used to play ; and, though I have enquired, I could never meet with any further account of him this way, than that the top of his performance was the Ghost in his own Hamlet." A late tradition, reported by Capell and Oldys, imports that he played old Adam in As You Like It ; and another, that he personated a king before Queen Elizabeth, who essayed to disturb his majesty by a mischievous recog-

nition. Davies, his contemporary, in his "Scourge of Folly," has these verses :—

"TO OUR ENGLISH TERENCE, MR. WILL. SHAKESPEARE.

" Some say, good Will, which I in sport do sing,
 Had'st thou not played some kingly parts in sport,
 Thou hadst bin a companiou for a king,
 And been a king among the meaner sort.
 Some others rail; but rail as they think fit,
 Thou hast no railing but a reigning wit:
 And honesty thou sow'st, which they do reap,
 So to increase their stock which they do keep."

Besides allusions that are obscure, but perhaps not impossible to clear up, this notice corresponds with the tradition last cited, if it did not originate it, that Shakespeare not unfrequently took the kingly part,—a part, it must be said, which, as a rule, does not make large demands on histrionic talent; in general stateliness or earnestness the part of the Ghost in Hamlet has also a certain agreement with that of old Adam, which would lead us to think that the histrionic vein of the poet was not the light and voluble or the vehemently impassioned, though probably more exalted than the dull and level line of the "heavy fathers" of the modern classification.

The Shakespearian characters that Burbage is known to have represented are, Shylock, Richard III., Prince Henry, Romeo, Henry V., Brutus, Hamlet, Othello, Lear, Macbeth, Pericles, Coriolanus; like Garrick and Kean he was below the middle height, and is thus characterized by Richard Flecknoe in a description of "an excellent actor," which he afterwards versified and applied directly to Burbage :—

" He was a delightful Proteus, so wholly transforming himself into his part, and putting off himself with his clothes as he never (not so much as in the 'tiring house) assumed himself again, until the play was done. He had all the parts of an excellent orator, animating his words with speaking, and speech with action, his auditors being never more delighted than when he spake, nor more sorry than when he held his peace: yet even then he was an excellent actor still, never failing in his part when he had done speaking, but with his looks and gesture maintaining it still unto the height, &c."

Will Kemp was considered not an unworthy successor of Tarlton, whose extemporising powers he emulated by those additions to his parts that Shakespeare denounces in Hamlet with so little mercy. The secret of his popularity does not appear in his original Merriments that have come down, but this is the fate of extemporisers; his contemporaries relished him highly, and have left many allusions to his wit and whim, both off the stage and on it. We have to thank the carelessness of old copyists or printers, who sometimes put the actor's name for that of his part, for knowing that he was the original Dogberry of Much Ado about Nothing, and Peter in Romeo and Juliet.

We have the statement of Malone, a credible witness, that in "some tract," of which he had forgotten to preserve the title, John Heminge, one of the original editors of the plays, was said to have been the original performer of Falstaff.

The leading members of the company so far as their wills have been traced, appear to have acquired considerable property; they are for the most part family men and householders, and take and rather rejoice in the style of gentlemen, and do not forget to leave tokens of attachment to their surviving fellows, whose kindly memory they evidently count upon and prize.

On February 4, 1596, James Burbage bought of Sir William More, of Loseby, in Surrey, part of a large house in the Blackfriars, and soon after proceeded to turn it into the Blackfriars theatre.

The scheme was opposed by some inhabitants of the precinct, who prayed the Privy Council "to take order that the same roomes may be converted to some other use, and that no playhouse may be used or kept there."

The opposition, however, was ineffectual, and the playhouse was established. Burbage's sons tell its history shortly in their answer to the Lord Chamberlain, from which it appears that it was afterwards leased to Evans, who first

*t up the boyes commonly called the Queenes Majesties
en of the Chappell. In processe of time the boyes grow-*

ing up to bee men were taken to strengthen the Kings service : and the more to strengthen the service. . . [we] purchased the lease remaining from Evans with our money, and placed men players, which were Hemings, Condall, Shakespeare, &c." [Halliwell's "Illustrations of Shakespeare," p. 90.]

It is thus clear that 1603 is the earliest date at which it is possible for Shakespeare and the Burbages to have acted at Blackfriars, for there was no "King's Service" before the accession of James I.

The four years 1596-99, furnish a fuller cluster of facts for the biography of the poet than occurs in any other part of his career, and this is the more satisfactory as he had then attained the acme both of his genius and his fortune,—an acme, however, not preceding decline, for he sustained the elevation to the last.

As regards the annals of his art, it is in 1597-8 that Francis Meres furnishes the celebrated notice of his works and reputation, so often referred to, in his "Palladis Tamia," "Wit's Treasury" being the second part of "Wit's Commonwealth."

"As the soul of Euphorbus was thought to live in Pythagoras, so the sweet witty soul of Ovid lives in mellifluous and honey-tongued Shakespeare; witness his Venus and Adonis, his Lucrece, his sugared sonnets among his private friends, &c.

"As Plautus and Seneca are accounted the best for tragedy and comedy among the Latins, so Shakespeare among the English is the most excellent in both kinds for the stage; for comedy witness his Gentlemen of Verona, his Errors, his Love's Labours Lost, his Love's Labours Won, his Midsummer Night's Dream, and his Merchant of Venice; for tragedy, his Richard II., Richard III., Henry IV., King John, Titus Andronicus, and Romeo and Juliet.

"As Epius Stolo said, that the Muses would speak with Plautus tongue, if they would speak Latin; so I say that the Muses would speak with Shakespeare's fine-filed phrase, if they would speak English."

An Epigram by Weever, published in 1599, must have been written about the same time,—it runs thus,—not throughout very intelligibly.

AD GULIELMUM SHAKESPEARE.

*"Honey-tongued Shakespeare, when I saw thine issue
I swore Apollo got them and none other;
Their rosy-tainted features clothed in tissue,*

Some heaven-born goddess said to be their mother,
Rose-cheekt Adonis with his amber tresses,
Fair fire-hot Venus charming him to love her,
Chaste Lucretia, virgin-like her dresses,
Proud lust-stung Tarquin seeking still to prove her;
Romeo, Richard, more whose names I know not;
Their sugar'd tongues and power attractive (qy. power-attractive) beauty
Say they are saints, although that saints they show not,
For thousand vows (qy. thousands vow) to them subjective duty.
They burn in love, thy children, Shakespeare, let them:
Go, woo thy muse! more nymphish brood beget them."

It is conjectured, I think with probability, that the Love's Labours Won mentioned by Meres, is to be considered as another name for All's Well that Ends Well, as we know that Henry VIII. was acted with the secondary title of All is True. Reckoning the two parts of Henry IV. as two plays, and adding the three parts of Henry VI., two of which at least had been already printed, we have proximate dates for sixteen plays, and to these we may add The Taming of the Shrew, which, from internal evidence, cannot have been written at a later date. The prologue of Henry V. dates it in 1599, and at this point, therefore, we can bring history and biography into immediate contact with the matters of fact they aim to represent.

Richard II., Richard III. and Romeo and Juliet were printed in 1597, and Henry IV., Part I., and Love's Labours Lost the following year. In 1599, Romeo and Juliet was reprinted, corrected and augmented. In 1600, Henry IV., Part II., Titus Andronicus, The Merchant of Venice; A Midsummer Night's Dream; Henry V.; and Much Ado about Nothing; the two latter not in Meres's list.

Most of these editions are sufficient and accurate, and some have distinct signs of having been printed from play-house copies, in accidental substitutions of actors' names, as in the stage direction, "Enter Prince, Leonato, laudio, and Jack Wilson," a transcript, it may be, of Shakespeare's own handwriting. From this date editions of the new plays become rare, accurate editions

rarer, and the players seem to have had an interest in keeping their copies for their exclusive use, and to have attended to it more carefully. Many of these better editions are without the author's name on the title-page, and thus without the stamp of his sanction.

In 1597, the tendency of the London players to bring matter seditious and scandalous on the stage, was severely checked by menaces of suppression, and it was probably because so little of the threat was performed that Thomas Nash ventured to indulge his special vein in a play called the Isle of Dogs, of which no more is known than that in the performance the players, the Lord Admiral's men, added enough to make it still more offensive. Nash was arrested with others and sent to the Fleet, his papers seized, and the piece forbidden. Two houses, the Theatre and the Curtain, in Shoreditch, seem to have been particularly adventurous on this dangerous ground, though all the companies in the numerous London theatres were occasional transgressors. The sharp competition arising from numbers, probably acted as incitement to each to season their entertainments with salt that Shakespeare could afford to dispense with altogether.

The year 1598, which witnessed the extinction of one great light of Elizabethan poetry, Spenser,—the cold obstructor of his mistress's favour, Burleigh, died the same year,—is the date of the earliest play of Ben Jonson, then in his twenty-fourth year, Every Man in his Humour. Rowe relates, "that Shakespeare's acquaintance with Ben Jonson began with a remarkable piece of humanity and good nature." Mr. Jonson, who was at that time altogether unknown to the world, had offered one of his plays to the players; it would have been rejected perhaps contemptuously but for Shakespeare, who "cast his eye upon it and found something so well in it as to engage him first to read it through, and afterwards to recommend *Mr. Jonson and his writings* to the public;" in other words, to cause the first essay to be represented, and to encourage more. This tradition might very easily in-

deed have come down to Rowe through the many intimates of Ben Jonson, and it is confirmed by the notice in Jonson's own edition, that the play was first acted in 1598, and by the Lord Chamberlain's servants, Shakespeare's company, he himself taking one of the principal parts. It is one of many that cannot be positively proved, but can be readily believed; the existence of the tradition is probably proof enough that the act is one that Shakespeare was capable of, nay; that if he did not do precisely this he did some other kindness to Jonson very much like it, however indifferently reported. Jonson had need this year of all the friendship at his call, for in September he had a duel with Gabriel Spencer, a player in Henslowe's company, and slew him, receiving himself a wound in the arm from his adversary's sword, "ten inches longer" than his own.

The ill-starred absence of Essex in Ireland, in 1599, extended from March to September, and it was in the summer comprised in this interval that Henry V. was first brought out at the Globe, and the chorus expressed the national hopes for the success of the popular favourite. Later in the year, after his return and disgrace, we meet in a private letter with an allusion to the occupation of his friend Lord Southampton, the patron also, if not rather, friend of Shakespeare.—"My Lord Southampton and Lord Rutland come not to the court (it was then at Nonsuch); the one doth but very seldom. They pass away the time in London, merely in going to plays every day. 11th October, 1599." The two noblemen were connected by marriage with Essex, and were under a cloud with him.

In this year a small collection of poems was published under the title of "The Passionate Pilgrim," with William Shakespeare's name on the title-page, though many of them, it may be most, were notoriously by other poets. Heywood, in claiming his own, referred to Shakespeare's displeasure; "but as I must acknowledge my lines not worthy *his patronage* under whom he hath published *them*, so the author I know much offended with M.

Jaggard, that (altogether unknown to him) presumed to make so bold with his name."

We have seen that in the previous year Meres alluded to "sugared sonnets" by Shakespeare circulated among his private friends, and it is probable, that at this date he had already written the series that did not get into print until 1609, when they came out with the "Lover's Complaint." Jaggard's collection includes two, which with slight variations correspond with two in the larger collection, numbered 138 and 144. The first of these is addressed to a mistress by a lover, who speaks of himself as "old," as "past the best." The other alludes to a friend, and also a mistress,—a fair youth, a dark woman, and expresses mistrust of a design of the latter to seduce the friend. These themes recur in the larger collection, of which the origin to this extent is carried up to the year 1599 at latest, and probably to a year before the mention of them by Meres, when Shakespeare was thirty-three. This is not too early for his allusions to age to be applicable to himself, considering that he speaks of the fortieth year as confirmed old age.

The first nineteen sonnets are addressed to a youthful friend, and their common purport is to urge his personal beauty as a motive for him to marry: the argument is pursued in much the same terms which Viola addresses to Olivia, Theseus to Hermia, Parolles to Helena, even we may say, Venus to Adonis,—the provident anticipation of beauteous offspring, to succeed and continue existing but transitory beauty. There is, however, something very remote and constrained in the anxiety of a friend, as it comes forward here, and hence a forced artificiality pervades the verses, ingenious as they are, and the effect is far from congenial. I presume the explanation of this must be, that the tone as well as the form of the sonnet was accepted as conventional; this is pretty clear from comparison of the sonnets of the time: subtlety and ingenuity in varying and wire-drawing a sentiment, and art in completing an idea within the settled limits, in making it quite fill them and but just

fill them, these were achievements of more consequence than the subject itself, and most esteemed when most independent of subject. Sonnet writers for generations had sacrificed primary interest to dexterity in plaiting and twining and interlacing the motives of a very restricted subject, and hence it was natural, indeed was fitting, for him who would write sonnets, to choose a theme that would not suffer by, and would rather assist, such treatment; whether it were worth while attempting such theme or style at all may be a question, but the attempt prescribed the conditions, and whims will have their vent as well as stronger impulses. Felicities of expression, fantasies of imagery, flutter among the lines of the sonnet as various-feathered birds among the tanglement of a summer thicket.

In another series, more or less continuous, but for very disorderly arrangement, this theme is dropped, and the beauty of the youth is celebrated with his moral excellence and the affectionate regard of the poet, and the perishableness of beauty is placed in contrast with the persistence of affection. This series is much more profound and genuine than the former, but still not so much so as to forfeit the charter of sonneteers, which forbids that sentiment should ever extricate itself quite from sentimentality. Neither is sentimentalism wanting, though it stoops its very lowest in the other sonnets that upbraid the friend for robbing him of his mistress, and forgive him in the same breath. Had we a full biography of the poet with all its surroundings, we might explain much that is obscure in these remarkable effusions, but by no process that I can conceive, may we hope to recover from them allusions to facts and gain assistance to illustrate and reanimate the life.

The publication of 1609 was dedicated by the publisher to "Mr. W. H. as the only begetter of the sonnets," —the cause and occasion of them, we interpret,—with *wish for the eternity promised by the poet, an allusion to the eighty-first sonnet.* The sonnets 134 and 135 have *n understood* rather rashly as showing that the friend's

name, like that of the poet, was William. From the general tone of the poems, and from some particular expressions, it has also been assumed that the friend addressed was superior in social rank to the writer.

Who was he? Was he in truth any one, or a mere phantasma of sonneteering brain? Some have conjectured the Earl of Southampton, and taken the initials in reverse order for Henry Wriothesley; more consistently, at least, it has been held by others, that they indicate William Herbert, who was, it is true, Earl of Pembroke, in 1609, when the collection was published, but not when they were probably written, having only become so in 1601—in 1597 he was only seventeen. The terms in which the dedication of the first folio declares the attachment of this noble pair to the person and poetry of Shakespeare, have been further quoted to show that such familiarity as he assumes, was not improper or impossible. Clarendon speaks of Pembroke as “the most universally beloved and esteemed of any man of that age, of excellent parts and a graceful speaker upon any subject, having a good proportion of learning and a ready wit to apply it.” In elder life he was not exempt from the weaknesses and frailties, that as we have said, beset the sensitive and the sympathetic—here, however, we leave the discussion, convinced that for my own part I am not likely to advance, still less to settle, even the preliminaries of a decision.

Turning back for the notes of domestic and personal incidents during these last four or five years, we soon come upon a series of indications of the poet's worldly prosperity, and of his disposition to make his native place the scene of his enjoyment of it. Here not only still lived his father and mother, but his own wife and family, and here, in August, 1596, his only son Hamnet, in his eleventh year, died and was buried. It is as futile to speculate as to sentimentalize on a loss of which we know the fact. *It may have been sudden, may have been expected, a blow or a blessing, variously mixed are the elements of good and evil.* Who without

at hand shall speak of their proportions in a special case ? Still, we may say thus much ; Shakespeare's disposition of his property by his will proves that he had a feeling for transmitting the bulk of his acquisitions in a mass,—of founding a family in the sense of providing, by strict entail, that the chief of his descendants should be always able to maintain the standing of gentleman that he himself had won, or as he might be disposed to say—recovered. In this very year of 1596, is found a draft of arms—the sanction of gentry, which had been applied for at the herald's office, probably somewhat earlier, in the name of his father, but doubtless on the motion of his now wealthy and distinguished son. The hope and joy of male succession is naturally bound up with these feelings, and the loss of it causes them a pang that is severe even when from the suffering of tenderer affections it is entirely secondary. A domestic affliction is constantly the turning point in the busiest and most eager lives ; there is proof enough that however severe the stroke may have been, it did not paralyze the energies or the imagination of Shakespeare, but I am not certain that we may not trace its effect on some of his views, and some of his habits, from the changes he makes at this time in his property. In the Easter term of the following year he bought a dwelling-house, one of the best at Stratford, known as New Place, where he settled his family and at last died himself, and in succeeding years we find him bent on transferring his gains from London to Warwickshire, still guided in his investments by a certain regard for advancement or establishment in standing, as dependent on their form.

New Place is described in an instrument of the purchase as consisting of one messuage, two barns, and two gardens, with their appurtenances ; the site is the angle of Chapel Street and Chapel Lane, immediately adjoining the Chapel of the Holy Trinity, (qy. Holy Cross,) the purchase money was £60, to be reckoned as equal to about five times that sum at present.

In the same year his father sold a small portion of the

premises in Henley Street—of which it appears by the deed he was still in occupation, for £2, probably a matter of accommodation to the neighbour who bought it: he is styled *yeoman* in the deed,—the grant of arms and gentry applied for not being yet completed. The original draft of this sets forth what was of course supplied by the applicants and willingly received by the heralds at hands that came with money in them:—

“That the parents and late antecessors of John Shakespeare, were, for their valiant and faithful service, advanced and rewarded by the most prudent prince, King Henry the Seventh, of famous memory, sithence which time they have continu'd at those parts in good reputation and credit, and that the said John having married Mary, daughter and one of the heirs of Robert Arden, of Wilmcote, in the said county, gent. &c. &c.”

From a MS. in Heralds' College, “the answer of Garter and Clarencieux Kings of Arms, to a libellous scroll against certain arms supposed to be wrongfully given,” it seems that the arms given to Shakespeare were objected to as being in effect those of another family, and also on the ground that John Shakespeare was not entitled to arms by position or estate. The antiquaries do not seem to have considered whose bearings were so similar as to be interfered with; for the rest of the charge the heralds make note—“This John hath a patierne thereof under Clarence Cookes hand in paper, xx years past.—A justice of peace, was bailiff, officer, and chief of the town of Stratford upon Avon 15 or 16 years past.—That he hath lands and tenements of good wealth and substance, £500.—That he married a daughter and heir of Arden, a gent. of worship.”

The heralds evidently desired only to be protected by a plausibility; and for the rest, the rule was admitted that those who were not in trade, and could afford arms, should have them. Mary Arden's parents and antecessors were accepted as those of her husband; the son's estate was ascribed to the father, a magistracy by office was passed off as a *magistracy by commission*, Robert Arden *agricola becomes a gentleman of worship in virtue of his family name, and, last of all, Clarence Cooke, who*

is safe, dead and gone, is made responsible for a grant of arms that appears nowhere in his records, and, indeed, is not referred to in the first draft of 1596. The objectors got nothing by their jealousy. I have noted a conjecture elsewhere, that it was through favouring them that Sir Thomas Lucy provoked Shakespeare to bring his own old coat into contempt. However this may be, in 1599 we have another draft, which incorporates all the pleas of defence, and positively outsteps the original, by purporting to be a confirmation of the ancient coat of arms granted by Clarencieux Cooke when John Shakespeare was high bailiff—a palpable invention since 1596, and also permitting him to impale the ancient arms of Arden; and when the business was finished, Shakespeare may have allowed himself a hearty laugh at the process of becoming a gentleman born, and having been so "any time within these two hours."

In the meantime, in 1597, he appears to have looked forward to the possibility of recovering his mother's estate of Asbyes from the family of the Lamberts, whose somewhat equivocal acquisition of it we have already alluded to. The records of the suit, of which the conclusion is unknown, is at least so far in favour of the Shakespeares, that their plea is much more circumstantial than the defendant's, and that John Lambert of Barton on the Heath does not pretend to say that they ever had full value for it, though he suggests that an improved value from conclusion of a lease, is the motive and temptation of their proceedings. Whether the master was compromised, or how otherwise, is not to be said; and we must not read literally what the plaintiffs put forward of utter deficiency of wealth and influence as compared with their opponent.

The winter of 1597-8 was one of high prices and scarcity, which pressed more hardly upon Stratford from some disastrous fires that occurred there. A return of stocks of corn and malt in the town shows that Shakespeare's family was well cared for, their note being ten quarters. His father's name does not appear in the list,

but it might be hasty to assume that the two homes were now united at New Place. At the date of the return, February 4, Shakespeare himself was in London. This, with much else curious and interesting, we learn from a letter of Alderman Sturley—the correspondent is not named, but is apparently Richard Quiney.

" Most loving and beloved in the Lord, in plain English, we remember you in the Lord and ourselves unto you; I pray God send you comfortably home. This is one special remembrance from your father's motion; it seemeth by him that our countryman, Mr. Shakspeare is willing to disburse some money upon some odd yard land or other at Shottery, or near about us; he thinketh it a very fit pattern to move him to deal in the matter of our tithes. By the instructions you can give him thereof, and by the friends he can make therefore, we think it a fair mark for him to shoot at, and not impossible to hit. It obtained would advance him indeed, and would do us much good. Hoc movere et quantum in te est permovere ne negligas hoc enim et sibi et nobis maxim i erit momenti: Hic labor hoc opus esset eximiae et gloriae et laudis sibi.

" You understand, brother, that our neighbours are grown with the wants they feel through the dearness of corn (we hear is beyond any all other countries that I can hear of, dear and over dear) malcontent: they have assembled together in a great number, and travelled to Sir Thos. Lucy on Friday last, to complain of our maltster; on Sunday to Sir Fulk Greville and Sir John Conway. I should have said, on Wednesday to Sir Ed. Grevill first. There is a meeting here expected to-morrow. The Lord knoweth to what end it will sort! Thos. West, returned from the two knights of the woodland, came home so full, that he said to Mr. Bailey that night, he hoped within a week to lead of them in a halter, meaning the maltsters; and I hope, said John Grannama, if God send my Lord of Essex down shortly, to see them hanged on gibbets at their own doors."

And this, with other news, as of the great bell broken and the bridge pavement mended, was no doubt retailed with other hints and suggestions to our countryman, Mr. Shakespeare, who, as events prove, would consider it all very much to his proceeding purpose.

At the end of 1598, Richard Quiney was in London, housed at the Bell Inn, in Carter Lane, on business of the Stratford Corporation, endeavouring to obtain some easement of *public burdens*, to alleviate the effects of the recent *conflagrations*. In a hasty interval he addressed

this letter to Shakespeare, which is still preserved, with address and signature and seal :—

" Loving countryman, I am bold of you, as of a friend craving your help with xxxli. upon Mr. Bushell's and my security, or Mr. Mytten's with me. Mr. Roswell is not come to London as yet, and I have especial cause. You shall friend me much in helping me out of all the debts I owe in London, I thank God, and much quiet my mind, which would not be indebted. I am now towards the Court, in hope of answer for the dispatch of my business. You shall neither lose credit nor money by me, the Lord willing; and now but persuade yourself so, as I hope, and you shall not need to fear but with all hearty thankfulness I will hold my time, and content your friend, and if we bargain farther, you shall be the paymaster yourself. My time bids me hasten to an end, and so I commit this to your care, and hope of your help. I fear I shall not be back this night from the Court. Haste; the Lord be with you and with us all, Amen !

" From the Bell; in Carter Lane, the 25 October, 1598.

" Yours in all kindness,

" RIC. QUYNAY."

" To my loving good friend and countryman
Mr. Willm. Shakespere deliver these."

It seems to have been on the same day, and after receiving a not unfavourable answer to the above, that Quiney wrote home a letter, to which we have the reply from Abraham Sturley; it is highly characteristic, and in style and tenor reminds not a little of Shallow's intermingling quotations from the Psalmist and current prices of live stock. Here, however, can only be found room for the commencement :—

" Nov. 4, 1598. All health, happiness of suit, and welfare be multiplied unto you and your labours in God our father by Christ our Lord.

" Your letter of the 25th Oct. came to my hands the last of the same at night, per Greenway, which imported a stay of suits by Sir Edward Greville's advice, until, &c. and that only you should follow on for tax and sub. presently, and also your travail and hindrance of answer therein by your long travail and th' affairs of the court; and that our countryman Mr. Wm. Shak. would procure us money, which I will like of, as I shall hear when and where and how; and I pray let not go that occasion 'it may sort to any indifferent condition."

The scanty incidents that can be gleaned for Shakespeare's biography in the three last years of Elizabeth—

those of the disgrace, outbreak, trial, and execution of Essex, and the imprisonment of his friend Lord Southampton—are speedily chronicled.

In 1600, the Stratford register gives the birth of William Hart, son of Shakespeare's sister Joan and her husband William Hart, hatter: in July of the same year died the Sir Thomas Lucy of Shakespeare's youth and manhood, transmitting his dignities to his son. On the 8th of September, 1601, is recorded the burial of John Shakespeare, leaving a widow, who survived him seven years to a day. In May, 1602, Gilbert Shakespeare completed for his brother William, then absent from Stratford, an important purchase from William and John Combe, of 107 acres of arable land; in September of the same year he acquired a house or cottage in Dead Lane, opposite New Place; and lastly, purchased a messuage, with barns, gardens, and orchards, of Hercules Underhill, for £60. In this year died his correspondent Richard Quiney. On the 17th of December, 1602, the corporation ordered, "that there shall be no plays or interludes played in the chamber, the guildhall, nor in any part of the house or court from henceforward, upon pain that whosoever of the bailiff, aldermen, and burgesses of this borough shall give leave or licence thereunto shall forfeit for every offence x*s*." It is pleasant to find that the orue failed of its effect for ten years, when, in 1612, the penalty was raised to £10. "The inconvenience of plays being seriously considered of, with the unlawfulness, and how contrary the sufferance of them is against the orders heretofore made, and against the examples of other well governed cities and boroughs, &c. &c." Such is the unsympathetic greeting that the dramatic poet of all time was likely to find when he turned again to settle in his own country and among his own kindred; and who shall blame him if he made it an object to take his place among persons of a rank rather better in other respects *besides occupation, than the former corporate companions of his father—according to Rowe, and to indications in his will, among "the gentlemen of the neighbourhood."*"

In 1600, *Henry IV.* Part II., *Henry V.*, *Titus Andronicus*, and *Much Ado About Nothing* were printed, and *As You Like It* was entered in the Stationers' books.¹ In 1602 the *Merry Wives of Windsor* is found in print; and the Diary of a Barrister records a performance of *Twelfth Night, or What You Will*, on the 2nd of February, in Middle Temple Hall.

On March 23, 1602-3, Queen Elizabeth died; with her died many a fantastic folly, but also a sympathy with the better spirit of the nation that was wanting on the English throne for many a long year after. The arts, however, had still a respite; and general tradition, and the warrant of Ben Jonson, assure us that James was no unworthy successor of Elizabeth, at least as an appreciator of the Shakespearian drama.

“ Sweet swan of Avon, what a sight it were
To see thee in our waters yet appear,
And make those flights upon the banks of Thames
That so did take Eliza and our James.”

On the allusion to the Queen in *Midsummer Night's Dream*, and on her suggestion of the love misadventures in the *Merry Wives of Windsor*, I have commented in the Essays on those plays.² Chettle, in his “England's Mourning Garment,” 1603, complains of Shakespeare, with other poets, neglecting to elegize her memory:—

“ Nor doth the silver-tongued Melicert
Drop from his honied muse one sable tear
To mourn her death that graced his desert,
And to his lays opened her royal ear.
Shepherd, remember our Elizabeth,
And sing her rape, done by that Tarquin death.”

In the terms employed by Chettle, there is a suggestion that he at least recognized as Shakespeare's—the honied

¹ The dates of other entries are as follows:—*Venus & A.*, 1593; *T. Andronicus*, 1593-4; *Lucrece*, 1594; *1 Henry IV.*, *Romeo, Richard II.*, *Rich. III.*, 1597; *Love's L. Lost*, 1598; *Pass. Pilgrim*, 1599; *M. Night's Dream*, *M. of Venice*, 1600; *Hamlet*, 1602; *Lear*, 1607; *Pericles*, 1608; *Sonnets*, *Troilus*, 1609.

Published separately, uniform with this edition.

streams of the lamentation of Spenser's Gentle Shepherd in a similar stanza, p. xl ix.

The players stood well for the new reign: James's taste for the drama had already declared itself in Scotland: as early as 1589, we find an English company, called "Her Majesties Players," at the Scottish court, but this title was given to more than one company, and I do not find proof that Shakespeare's, "the Lord Chamberlain's servants," were ever so styled. At a later date, 1599, James is found braving the ministers of Edinburgh by licensing a company of English comedians to play within the burgh, in spite of sermons, and acts of session, and threats of church censure on people resorting to them. In October, 1601, the company called, for the occasion at least, the King's servants, are found at Aberdeen, with special recommendation of his Majesty to the Provost, Bailiff, and Council, and on the strength of it receive thirty marks for their performances; and, by the like recommendation, the freedom of the borough is conferred among others of various degrees, from knight to trumpeter, upon "Laurence Fletcher, comedian to his Majesty." Of the origin and previous history of Lawrence Fletcher nothing is known, and nothing, we may safely say, of the company he leads at this time. On the accession of James, however, to the English throne, he returned to England; and in an early patent, which probably his influence obtained, is associated with Shakespeare and his fellows. James's proclamation before entering London denounced the impious profanation of the Sabbath by bear-baiting and common plays, on the 7th of May, 1603. On the 9th he authorized the reopening of the theatres, and on the 17th May he granted the following patent, addressed to the Lord Privy Seal:—

"Know ye that we . . . by these presentes do licence and authorize these our servantes, Lawrence Fletcher, William Shakespeare, Richard Burbage, Augustine Phillipes, John Heninges, (*sic*) Henry Condell, William Sly, Robert Armyn, Richard Cowlye and the rest of their associates, freely to use and exercise the arte and facultie of playing comedies, tragedies, histories, enterludes, moralles, pastoralles, stage plaies, and such other . . . as well within their now usuall howses

called the Globe witam our countie of Surrey, as also within any towne halles or mouthalles, or other convenient places, within the libertes and freedome of any other cittie, universitie, towne or borough whatsoever within our said realmes and dominions . . ." (HALLIWELL'S *Illustrations*, p. 83.)

In April, 1604, there is a letter from the Lords of the Council to the Lord Mayor of London, and the Magistrates of Surrey and Middlesex, by which "The Kings Majesty's Players are permitted to exercise ther plaies in ther severall and usuall howses for that purpose and noe other ; viz. : the Globe, situate in Maiden Lane on he Banckside in the Countie of Surrey, the Fortune in Goldinge Lane, and the Curtaine in Hollywelle, in the countie of Middlesex." The Queen adopted the Earl of Worcester's players, of whom Thomas Heywood, the dramatist, was one, and the Prince of Wales the company of the Lord Admiral, at the head of which was Edward Alleyn, founder of Dulwich College.

In 1604 appeared an accurate edition of Hamlet, "Newly imprinted and enlarged to almost as much again as it was according to the true and perfect copy." How recently the poet may have made the additions that now first got into print is not to be known,—but there is something that tastes of the time, as well in the satire on popular fickleness respecting portraiture of royalty alive or dead, as in that on the companies of children, who have carried it off from adult players, "Hercules and his load to," perhaps an allusion to empty benches at the Globe Theatre, of which the ensign is said to have been Hercules or Atlas bearing the Globe; motto, "Totus mundus agit histrionem."

The scanty details of the poet's life for 1604, furnish one more record of him, but it is as engaged in affairs prosaic enough. He had sold malt at Stratford to Philip Rogers, at several times, to the amount of £1 15s. 10d., and not being able to get his money, commenced an action, by filing a declaration in the Stratford Court of

Record, which probably answered its purpose without further proceedings.

In July, 1605, Shakespeare completed a purchase of a moiety of a lease, with thirty years yet to run, of the tithes, great and small, of Stratford, Old Stratford, Bishopston, and Welcombe: for this it appears in the indenture of conveyance, in which he is styled of Stratford on Avon, Gentleman, he paid down £440. It is the largest of his investments of which we have any trace, and from the terms in which his attention was directed to it some years before by Sturley, it seems by its nature to have carried with it a degree of local importance beyond the mere consideration of amount. It is also the last of his purchases that can be traced, with the exception of a house in Blackfriars, in 1613, for which he paid down only £80, mortgaging the premises for £60, as if his object was some convenience in the possession rather than the investment.

This absence of later investments, and none later are to be inferred from his will, seems also to indicate that one advantage of the lease was, that, being terminable, it yielded a larger proportionate return available as present income. How far the purchase money in these several instances was derived from realization of his shares in the London theatres is not to be known. Augustine Phillips, in leaving him 30*s.* in gold, in his will, dated May, 1605, still calls him his fellow, or partner, and in his own will he applies the same term to others of the surviving company. He makes no allusion to or disposition of theatrical property in his will; but the possibility is open that this may have been a matter of earlier and separate arrangement; and we know from other sources that the players' establishment was under charges, not merely eleemosynary, for the wives and families of their deceased fellows. If we could use the evidence of the impugned *Ellesmere discoveries*, Shakespeare still possessed a

value in the Blackfriars Theatre in 1608 almost equal to a fourth of the whole.

The diary of Ward, the vicar, who succeeded the minister deprived at the Restoration, is fair argument or rather proof, that Shakespeare lived upon a liberal scale that rather invited exaggeration : he says at the rate of £1000 a year, but the value of money has greatly declined since the death of Shakespeare, and traditional figures are always unreliable,—if we understand about the equivalent of £1000 a year, we may be not so far from the truth.

The next personal note we encounter is an important one ; on the 6th of June, 1607, Shakespeare's eldest daughter, Susanna, was married, at the age of twenty-four, to John Hall, gentleman, a physician settled at Stratford, then in his thirty-second year. The position of Mrs. Hall in her father's will would alone prove that he was well satisfied with the alliance. Dr. Hall's case book, from 1617, still exists in manuscript. A selection from it was published about twenty years after his death, under the title of "Select Observations on English Bodies, or Cures in desperate Diseases," and went through three editions. To the entry of his death in the Stratford register, a note is, unusually, appended,—*Medicus peritissimus*. In this year King Lear was acted. On the 31st of December, 1607, the registry of St. Saviour's, Southwark, in the immediate vicinity of the Globe Theatre, shows the burial of Edmund Shakespeare, player,—no doubt this was the poet's brother, only in his twenty-eighth year,—of whom, beyond this note of his profession, the birth and death make up the history. On the 21st of February, 1607-8, Mr. or Dr. Hall baptized a daughter, Elizabeth Hall, the sole issue of the marriage, and the only grandchild Shakespeare lived to see. On the 9th of September, in the same year, the poet's mother, Mary Shakespeare, was buried, and in October he was sponsor for William Walker, whom he remembered in his will,

as godfathers are bound to do. In this year King Lear was printed three times for the same bookseller.

In 1608, Troilus and Cressida was acted and printed; Pericles printed. At Stratford, the poet, not being able to recover a small debt due to him from one John Addenbrook, proceeds in June against Horneby, his bail, with what success is not stated.

In 1612, the corporation of Stratford, to their own loss, not to say disgrace, renewed the order against dramatic performances in the Guildhall.

At the beginning of 1613, Shakespeare's brother Richard died at Stratford, in his fortieth year. In June occurred the conflagration of the Globe Theatre, which was set on fire by wadding from the small cannon fired in a scene of Henry VIII. the first day of its performance. Some manuscript notes in a copy of Stow's Annals, headed "A note of such passages as have been omitted, and as I have seen since the printing of Stowe's Survey, &c. &c." furnish these memoranda:—"Playhouses. The Globe Playhouse on the Bankside in Southwark was burnt down to the ground in the year 1612 (the year is wrong), and new built up again in the year 1613, at the great charge of King James and many noblemen and others, and now pulled down to the ground by Sir Matthew Brand, on Monday the 15 April, 1644." The mention of the aid given by noblemen suggests that this may have been the occasion of the liberality of Lord Southampton. A tradition, which for my own part I see more reason to credit than distrust, was afloat among the informants of Oldys, that James wrote Shakespeare an amicable letter with his own hand.

We are now approaching the term of what was allowed to the world of the life of Shakespeare; but no sign is discoverable by the biographer of the approaching end. On the 9th of July, Stratford was ravaged by another fire, which is stated in the King's brief, obtained in aid of the sufferers, to have destroyed fifty-four dwelling-houses, many of them being very fair houses, together with great store of corn, &c. &c.

the value of £8000 or upwards. The day after the fire died John Combe, the friend of Shakespeare, of whom and his brother William Combe, high sheriff of his county in this year, he had made one of his larger purchases. The particular intimacy of Shakespeare with Mr. Combe, "noted for his wealth and usury," reached Rowe, so far, perhaps, not inaccurately; but he added also a stupid epitaph, that I have no patience to recopy. Another tradition ascribes to him another satirical, or rather scurrilous epitaph on Thomas Combe, and each story has the formular finish that the offence was mortal, a proved falsity. John Combe in his will, which reads like that of a just and conscientious, if careful man, leaves £5 to Mr. William Shakespeare, who in his own will bequeaths to Mr. Thomas Combe his sword. John Combe's first provision in his will was for a "convenient tombe, of the value of three score pounds," which still remains, with his effigy recumbent, and inscribed with his benefactions—liberal, but well guarded from abuse; and very agreeable it is to have the copied features of a man who was even a familiar of Shakespeare, not to say friend. In life he resided very near New Place; his house being on the site of the ancient monastic college, and in part constructed out of its offices.

The Chamberlain's accounts of Stratford supply us with an odd item for this year—I find no note of exacter date:—

"Item, for one quart of sack and one quart of claret wine, given to a preacher at the New Place. xx d."

The epitaph on Mrs. Hall shows that her disposition was devotional:—

"Witty beyond her sex, but that's not all,
Wise to salvation was good Mistress Hall;
Something of Shakespeare was in that, but this
Wholly of Him with whom she's now in bliss."

Devotional, however, was a wide term, and embraces all moods, from horror to beatitude, and no inference lies from the impressions of the feminine household either to the indifference or the settled convictions of the master

f it. That the entertainment of the divine was in part, at least, charged to the town, may imply that his functions and doctrines were in harmony with the straitening tendency of the Corporation at this time—but it is futile to spin conjectures so finely.

The 5th of September in this year is the date of a paper in which Shakespeare is named among others whose interests were likely to be affected by a project for enclosing some of the common lands near the town. On the 28th of October is dated the copy of a legal document, which I do not pretend to interpret, but by which security seems to be assured to William Shakespeare and Thomas Greene, that in the event of the enclosure, any check that could be proved as accruing in consequence to the increase in yearly value of the tithes they had an interest in, should be made good.

Thomas Greene was the clerk of the Corporation, and in November of this year he is on their business in London, where he made this note :—

" 1614, Jovis 17, No. My cousin Shakespeare coming yesterday to town, I went to see him how he did. He told me that they assured him they meant to enclose no further than to Gospel Bush, and so up straight (leaving out part of the dingles to the field) to the gate in Clopton Hedge, and take in Salesbury's piece, and that they mean in April to survey the land, and then to give satisfaction, and not before: and he and Mr. Hall say they think there will be nothing done at all."

About a fortnight later Greene is back at Stratford, where we are obliged to him for this note :—

" 23 Dec. A hall : Letters written, one to Mr. Manyring, another to Mr. Shakespeare, with almost all the company's hands to either. I also writ myself to my cousin Shakespeare, the copies of all our acts, and then also a note of the inconveniences would happen by the enclosure."

William Combe was a leading promoter of the project of enclosure, which was in the end forbidden by the Privy Council.

How Greene was related to Shakespeare has not been traced, but the fact is of interest, as bearing on the early

legal knowledge and even occupations of the poet, which gain in probability if he had a cousin in the profession.

The Stratford registry has an entry of a "Greene alias Shakespeare," not readily explained.

We are recalled to the fact that Shakespeare was a poet, by a compliment to him in this character by C. B.—it is thought Charles Best—who, in his "Ghost of Richard the Third," printed this year, does homage to Shakespeare and honour to himself by these lines; Richard speaks—

"To him that impt my fame with Clio's quill,
Whose magic raised me from Oblivion's den,
That writ my story on the Muses hill,
And with my actions dignified his pen;
He that from Helicon sends many a rill,
Whose nectar'd veins are drunk by thirsty men;
Crown'd be his style with fame, his head with bays,
And none detract but grataule his praise."

Ben Jonson's Bartholomew Fair was brought out at the Hope Theatre on the 31st of October, a week or two before Shakespeare's arrival in London: of the course of his own poetic industry we have no record, but it is plausibly inferred that to these latter years belongs the composition of the Roman plays. That, however, he brought no novelty with him to London this Christmas seems likely from the following extract of a letter from John Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carlton :—

" 5 January, 1614-5. They have plays at court every night, both holidays and working days, wherein they show great patience, being for the most part such poor stuff, that instead of delight they send the auditory away with discontent." "Indeed our poets' brains and inventions are grown very dry, in so much that of five new plays there is not one that pleases, and therefore they are driven to furnish over their old, which stand them in best stead and bring them most profit."

For the next year of Shakespeare's life, 1615, the last but one, not even the indiscriminate industry of Shakespearean biographers can glean a grain of fact.

On the 10th of February, 1615-16, Shakespeare's *youngest and only other child* and daughter, Judith, at *the age of thirty-one*, was married to Thomas Quiney, a

few years her junior, vintner and wine-merchant, of Stratford, the son of the poet's correspondent Richard Quiney, who had died in 1602, while bailiff of the town. For Judith Shakespeare, one is naturally surprised to find that, in executing a legal deed, she did not sign her name, like her sister Susanna, but made a mark—in fact, that Shakespeare's daughter, at more than mature age, could not write. Her father's will appears to have been drawn in anticipation of the marriage, and though her elder sister occupies a far more favourable position in it, this seems to a great extent due to the general principle of his arrangements. His provision for her cannot be called illiberal—even without the allowance, that we know not what he may have done anterior to his death, nor whether the daughters and widow may not have had some income accruing from theatrical interest, of which no mention occurs in the will, as not being necessary. His wish and design were to keep the bulk of his property together by as strict an entail as he could execute,—from the pride of founding a family, it may be suggested, sacrificing the many to the one; let us say, rather, from prudent calculation that the welfare of the many of his descendants would be best consulted by securing for the head and chief of them a firm standing in the social grade to which he had attained;—a consideration the force of which many who know England and English prepossessions will neither challenge nor gainsay.

The will gives to Judith £100 in discharge of her marriage portion, and another £50 in return for her renunciation to her sister of her estate and right in certain copyhold property, and another £150 is settled upon her for her life and her children, making together £300, the equivalent of nearly five times the sum,—say £1400 at the present time. To this is added the bequest of his broad silver gilt bowl, specially reserved from the rest of his plate, which he leaves to his granddaughter Elizabeth Hall.

There can be no reasonable doubt that it was in the same sense as a special remembrance and a material

token valuable by association, that he left to his wife—fully provided for otherwise, as we have seen—his second best bed, with the furniture. How it happened that it was the second best bed, and not the best, that his wife would particularly value, who shall say,—but that so it was may be assumed with confidence; possibly the best bed may have been, as so often was the case, the state bed of the reserved and visitors' room.

To his sister Joan, besides a possible reversion, he left £20, all his wearing apparel, available in a family of three sons, and for her life the house and garden that she occupied at the nominal rent of 12*d.* To her three sons he left £5 apiece. To William Walker, his godson, now in his eighth year, 20*s.* in gold.

He left his sword to Mr. Thomas Combe; to Thomas Russel, Esq. and Francis Collins, of Warwick, Gent., his executors, he left to the first £5, to the second £13 6*s.* 8*d.* (= twenty nobles). John Combe had left the same Francis Collins £10, and a like sum to his son Jno. Collins as godson.

He left rings of 26*s.* 8*d.* (= 2 nobles) each, to Hamnet (spelt Hamlett in will) Sadler, his ancient friend, to William Reynolds, gent.—probably the relative of John Combe mentioned in his will,—to Anthony Nash, gent. of Welcombe, the father of Thomas Nash, who afterwards married Elizabeth Hall, and to Mr. John Nash, probably brother of Anthony, and to his fellows, John Hemynge, Richard Burbage, and Henry Condell.

To the poor of Stratford he left £10.

All the real estate is devised to his daughter Susanna Hall for life, and then entailed upon her first son and his heirs male; in default of such issue to her second son and his heirs male, and so on; again, in default, to his granddaughter Elizabeth Hall; and in default of issue again, to his daughter Judith and her heirs male.

Gilbert Shakespeare probably died before his brother, when is not known; the Stratford register records *rial of a Gilbert Shakespeare, adolescens*, possibly *on the 3rd of February, 1611-12.* He was liv-

ing and at Stratford in 1609, when he witnessed a deed there.

The children of Judith Quiney died early, and when she herself departed in 1662, Elizabeth Hall was the only descendant of the poet who remained. At the age of eighteen she had married Mr. Thomas Nash of Stratford, became a widow in 1647, and two years later married Mr. afterwards Sir John Barnard. She died childless, and by her will, in 1669, her estate was sold and dispersed, with the exception of the two houses in Henley Street, the reputed and probable birth-place of the poet, which she devised to Thomas Hart, the grandson of Shakespeare's sister Joan—(a collateral branch that has not prospered,) and was not unmindful of some of the name of Hathaway.

These are five daughters of her kinsman Thomas Hathaway, late of Stratford,—Joan, who is married, and Judith, Rose, Elizabeth, and Susanna, not out of hope to be ; these seem to be nieces of Anne Hathaway, born in 1577, and her sisters, Elizabeth in 1579, and Rose 1582, children of a Thomas Hathaway. The agreement of the Christian names with those in Shakespeare's family will be observed, but the exact relationship that linked all these to the Anne Hathaway he married does not seem to be discoverable.

On the 10th of February, 1615-16, Judith Shakespeare married ; on the 25th of March Shakespeare executed his will, which had manifestly been drawn in anticipation of that event, the date being altered to March from January, which is erased, and Judith being specified as his daughter by her Christian name alone. On the 25th of April, exactly a calendar month later, the grave closed over him in the chancel of Stratford church. The commencement of his will states that he makes it in " perfect health and memory, God be praised ;" this may be merely a formula, otherwise it would imply that his death, so shortly after, was sudden and unexpected. The medical notes of Dr. Hall that have been preserved are all of later date, and we m^t
L f

be content to remain ignorant of the immediate cause that carried off from the world at an age so premature as fifty-two, the man who was the chief ornament of his age—the pride and glory of the race,—the most remarkable example in modern times of the perfection of development which the human powers may attain.

It may have been, as not unfrequently happens, that the marriage of the daughter so soon before her father's death, is to be accounted for by his anxiety to see her settled and provided for, before the end he was warned to look forward to, by declining energies and health.

Among the MSS. of Ward, already quoted, written at Stratford, but full forty years after the poet's death, we find this note :—“Shakespeare, Drayton, and Ben Jonson had a merry meeting, and it seems drank too hard, for Shakespeare died of a fever there contracted.” That the poet Drayton, a Warwickshire man, encountered with Shakespeare occasionally at Stratford is likely enough; the more so, as Dr. Hall makes a note of having given him professional aid, and there can be little doubt that Ward's tradition is correct to the extent of ascribing to the brother poets the convivial temperament that is fitting for poets, and in the case of Shakespeare and Ben Jonson vouched for otherwise: beyond this we should be rash to put faith in the story, with all its specialties of place and person, degree, and lamentable consequences.

The spirit of Ben Jonson's revelry is well expressed in the verses of his familiar friend Herrick,—and we cannot suspect that of Shakespeare to have been inferior :—

“ Oh Ben, say when
Shall we, thy guests,
Meet at the feasts
Made at the Gun,
The Dog, the triple Tun,
Where we such clusters had,
As made us nobly wild, not mad,
And yet each verse of thine
Outdid the meat, outdid the frolic wine.”

It's description of the wit combats of the pair is

too late to be quoted for authentic anecdote, and yet I do not doubt is vocal by some inspiration of a genuine tradition.

That geniality of temperament at least, if not joviality, was habitually associated with Shakespeare personally is indicated by many allusions, and might be safely inferred alone from the physiognomy of his bust and the expression that the sculptor at least aimed to give to it. The monument was erected to him before 1623, for it is alluded to in the commendatory verses of Digges, prefixed to the first folio edition of his plays—how much earlier cannot be said. The custom of the time would vouch for its being a portrait, and the indications seem conclusive that the head and face were modelled from a cast from the original after death. Such a cast requires to be taken with great skill and care, to obviate the compression of the softer and fleshy parts of the face; these are the most defective parts in the bust, and are in striking contrast to the decision and force with which the noble and refined outline of the bald head has been achieved. I have never seen this satisfactorily given in drawings, which too often show that the artist's hand was not more guided by what was set before him to copy than by his recollections of the better known but merely imaginary or unauthentic portraits. The form of the face and its general contours denote a person of decidedly the reverse of a spare habit, and though the half-length effigy is represented with pen in hand and paper spread for the act of writing, the lips are slightly opened, as if for speech, and curved, to give the expression of sportiveness or wit.

I confess I have no faith whatever in the genuineness of any other likenesses than the Stratford bust and the portrait engraved by Martin Droeshout, prefixed to the first edition of the plays, and testified to by Ben Jonson; these mutually confirm each other, and, I think, disprove the rest of the pretenders. The portrait, which may have been after Richard Burbage, who gained some celebrity in painting in addition to his supremacy as a

actor, I have heard pronounced by high artistic authority as not by any means contemptible. It agrees with the bust—though probably of earlier date—in the character of the face, in general consistency and outline, in the fall of the hair, and in an attempted rendering of the character of the forehead. The exaggeration of the forehead seems to have been a general fault of the English draughtsmen of the time, to judge by the portraits of the time, and in the print the defect is made worse by certain inaccuracy of foreshortening or drawing; the remarkable length of the upper lip is common to both, as is the fashion of moustache and imperial. In the engraving there is the indication of vivacity, expressiveness, and sweetness about the mouth that is slurred in the ill-finished outline of the sculptor in this feature.

The inscriptions on the monument are these :—

“*Judicio Pylium, genio Socratem, arte Maronem*

Terra tegit, populus mæret, Olympus habet.”

“Stay, Passenger, why goest thou by so fast?
Read, if thou canst, whom envious death hath placed
Within this monument,—Shakespeare, with whom
Quicke Nature died: whose name doth deck this tomb
Far more than cost, since all that he hath writ
Leaves living Art but page to serve his wit.

Obit Anno Dom. 1616,

Ætatis 53—Die 23 Ap.”

His valued fellows did not long survive him; Richard Burbage died in March, 1619, Henry Condell in December, 1627, and John Hemynge in October 1630.

I am now at the conclusion of all that I have to say on the matter and subjects ordinarily current as forming the biography of the man Shakespeare, and the conclusion, I confess, is a relief. It is almost with a feeling of shame that one turns from the details that we have been longing for or investigating, to associate them with the divine endowments revealed in his poetic works.

fear that zeal for the biography will not ordinarily prove the feeling and zest and purer enthusiasm of

the critic : what, after all, have we been enquiring after but the very rags and cast off clothes of the baser outward life, elevating the recovery of a veritable doublet or an actual hat to a level of importance with a moral conception, intellectual insight, the embodied ideal. The poet refined and elevated the very essence of his being to express it without blemish in his works, and we must fain drag it back into the polluting or uncongenial crowd of common business, the necessities and uncertainties postulated in original sin, the lapses, actual or not impossible in the thousand contingencies of the unsettled, if we may not say ill-hung, constitution and nature of common men and common things.

May a portion of the spirit of the first editors be transmitted to their successors. Heminge and Condell collected and published the plays "without ambition either of self-profit or fame; only to keep the memory of so worthy a Friend and Fellow alive, as was our Shakespeare :" and my quarrel with them is but small, that it did not occur to them as essential to their purpose to perpetuate in a memoir the trivialities that are the common accidents of all who are mortal. The very tone and terms of the quoted phrase express a biography, the better part of one; and so again the conclusion of their dedication :—

" In that name, therefore, we most humbly consecrate to your H. H. these remains of your servant Shakespeare; that what delight is in them may be ever your L. L. the reputation his and the faults ours, if any be committed, by a pair so careful to show their gratitude both to the living and the dead, as is

Your lordship's most bounden,

" JOHN HEMINGE,

" HENRY CONDELL."

In consequence of the very partial and limited publication of his works during his lifetime, the not infrequent literary notices of him as a poet appear to us now to lay undue or too exclusive stress on the sweetness of his verse and easy mastery and flow of language. This *music and melody to ears then unaccustomed to it, seems to have charmed attention away from some of the graves*

qualities of his muse, and epithets are lavished upon him compounded of sugar, honey, and nectar, that now seem to have something of the childishness of sweet-meats. But beyond this there is sufficient trace of his great and effective dramatic reputation, of which the great depositaries were the audiences and the actors. Then, as now, no doubt the theatres had their accustomed frequenters, whose sense of merit was expressed by constant attendance, not in publications appealing to the larger circle beyond the theatrical pale. So in later times, the growth of the reputation of Shakespeare went on after his plays were published, quite independently of any published appreciation of it. The professed and literary critic in these later times lagged as far behind the habitual readers as their predecessors behind the customary audiences. All that Germany has since said was thought and felt long before by readers, whose function it was not to write, and who were ill represented by those who took up the task; and so it was at the earlier date, that admiration at the Globe and the Blackfriars was fervent and sustained, and made the fortunes of all the sharers, while sets and classes of Englishmen lived long lives just within hearing, and yet wist not that they were losing words it were worth half a lifetime to have listened to.

The comparative silence of contemporaries, I take to be then, mere intelligible repose upon a fact acknowledged by all within the range of cognizance, a silence broken, if ever, by mere futile grumblings of a Greene or a Nash in early days, and later by Ben Jonson. The most definite expression of Jonson's criticism is in his conversation with Drummond of Hawthornden, where he imputes to Shakespeare want of art, occasional absurdities, and incorrectness from neglect of blotting or revision. Other more satiric glances he gives elsewhere at his bold liberties with time and place, and multitude, and his superficial knowledge of the ancients and antiquity. *In all this I would be lenient with Old Ben; I have never been able to get through one of his plays, but the*

points on which he reflects on Shakespeare are evidently those where he felt or supposed himself the strongest, and being what he was himself as a poet, it is not easy to see how he could have thought otherwise as a critic than he did of Shakespeare. The friends and fellows of Shakespeare, however, were not disposed to be so indulgent, and imputations of envy, a degrading vice, were not uncurred; from this he is defended by J. Davies in his *Scourge of Folly*, printed about 1611:—

"TO MY WELL ACCOMPLISHED FRIEND MR. BEN JONSON.

"Thou art sound in body, yet some say thy soul
Envy doth ulcer; yet corrupted hearts
Such censurers must have."

This was the tendency that was evidently thought to be indulged by him at the expense of one in all respects his superior, but whatever pique, or prompting of self-preference he may have given way to, he made most noble amends in the lines he furnished to the commendatory collection for the first folio of the plays. He seems to have sate down with all he had ever said or written or hinted disparagingly of the dramas of Shakespeare upon his mind, and partly on better advice, partly by greater explicitness, to have responded to the friendly expostulations of those who had an esteem for both, by showing that he could surpass even them in adjusting the terms of his criticism to the truth. His lines convey to me a conviction that he sincerely felt and meant them all; and if Dryden thought, as it is said, that they were sparing and invidious, it is only one of many instances where his judgment was astonishingly mistaken. A more plausible charge might be, that he commended extravagantly, and so contrived to damage by overwrought encomium; but he repudiates such a design, and cannot be charged with it, for, loftily as he sets the mark he aims at, his arrow at every shot flies to its centre, well guided and direct. He had once said that Shakespeare knew little of the ancients; he now justly expresses his equality—superiority of rank, to the best antique drama notwithstanding: he had said that Shakespeare wanted art, he aptly expresses

the mental process by which his dramas became the perfection of art in their perfect reflection of refined and ordered nature.

For the personal character of Shakespeare, Jonson becomes, from the very peculiarities of his relative position and his own character and failings, the most important and satisfactory witness. The epithet of "gentle" that he employs in the epigram attached to the portrait he repeats in the commendatory verses, and yet associates it, as Spenser did before, with characteristics of energy and effect :—

"Look, how the father's face
Lives in his issue; even so the race
Of Shakespeare's mind and manners brightly shines
In his well-torned and true-filed lines,
In each of which he seems to shake a lance
As brandish'd at the eyes of ignorance."

This is the very combination of gentleness with force that places Raphael at an advantage to Michael Angelo; the suffrage of the world goes at last with the genius as with the character that at once commands respect and engages affection. The power to command and marshal mankind only attains its highest influence when associated with the love that casts out fear: a sense of danger and uncertainty attaches to the leading of the highest powers when there is a doubt of the balancing control of sympathy; the ability to exert force is but half an endowment without that of restraining it. We rest in the greatest confidence on that display of exertion which does not suggest exhaustion, as on that repose which does not threaten torpor or forgetfulness: energy becomes weak so soon as it is deficient in grace, and it is the union of the two,—the union in which the ultimately governing and inspiring element is tender sensibility, that gave and still continues the vitality that is in Christianity itself.

The circumstance that most surprises us in the research of the outward details of Shakespeare's life, is the affection with which he brought poetic and artistic

exertion into harmony with business-like and systematic prudence, and the promotion of his social and domestic interests ; and if in the investigation it seems sometimes that the spirit of getting and storing might be too strong for him, we find, on turning to the other sources, that he achieved a still rarer combination, and poet and actor, manager and thriving capitalist, as he became—the memory he left was most engrossed by good nature, candour, honesty, friendliness, conviviality, and social wit. In the *Microcosmus* of Davies (1603) we have this testimony to his qualities, which gives us also welcome information how far his friend and great aid, Richard Burbage, was in sympathy with him.

" If Pride ascend the stage, O base ascent !
 All men may see her, for nought comes thereon
 But to be seen, and where Vice should be shent,
 Yea, made most odious to every one
 In blazing her by demonstration,
 Then Pride, that is more than most vicious,
 Should there endure open damnation ;
 And so she doth, for she's most odious
 In men, most base that are ambitious.
 Players, I love ye and your quality,
 As ye are men that pastime not abused ;
 And [W. S. R. B.] some I love for painting poesie,
 And say fell fortune cannot be excused
 That hath for better uses you refused ;
 Wit, courage, good shape, good parts, and all good,
 As long as all these goods are no worse used .
 And though the stage doth stain pure gentle blood,
 Yet generous ye are in mind and mood."

In the last stanza there seems to be a manifest allusion to the cxith sonnet, " Oh, for my sake, do thou with Fortune chide,"—unless the allusion be the reverse way.

The crown and glory, however, of all the testimonies is still to be quoted, in the affectionate, reverential, and earnest prose of Jonson, take his critical suggestions with what acceptance or indifference we may :—

" I LOVED THE MAN AND DO HONOUR HIS MEMORY, ON THIS SIDE IDOLATRY, AS MUCH AS ANY : HE WAS INDEF HONEST, AND OF AN OPEN AND FREE NATURE."

That Shakespeare was indifferent about the fate of his plays, and was even unconscious of their poetic excellence, is a notion that is almost too absurd for notice. The player editors distinctly hint, that had he lived longer he would in ordinary course have edited them himself. Of fretful and fidgetty anxiety for honour and glory and about honour and glory, certainly no hint or sign remains; but that he knew his true position on the Muses' mount in relation to the poets that were anterior to and about him, it were absurd to doubt, though the examination of the sources of the plays may have taught us how well he knew to qualify contempt even for evil so bad as bad fiction and bad poetry, by eagle insight into a soul of goodness.

"He died a Papist," says the tradition of Davies,—which means, I suspect, little more than that, as poet and player and the servant of monarchs whose courts were the last hope and home of his art and the tendencies it implied, he had but slight sympathy with much of the activity of the Puritan party, who were striving all his life to extinguish the world's best light, and pull in actual fact his house about his ears. If we inquire further what were his opinions on a subject which mind of his order always treats and settles for itself—what is to be said. Direct evidence we have none, but if we may transfer an obvious inference from his English plays, I should be disposed to say, that the national feeling that appears there did not desert him personally—that in an age of grievous and savage controversies urged by massacre at Paris or rack in the torture-chain at the Tower,—he held it patriotic, like Socrates of worship, in a certain fashion, the gods that they worships; by no means from absolute confidence in teaching and decisions of churchmen, whose motives dissected and set forth with shrewd and scarce exact criticism, but for the sake of making the best circumstances, sinking some not slight differences, in consideration, he thought, could justify the disablement

For the rest, I should infer from absence of satiric girds at the Puritans, so frequent with his fellow dramatists, and by one instance (in Twelfth Night) of defence of them from senseless satire, that he was well content to look forward to the advance of the good sense of the country—which others fairly held it a duty to promote by overt agitation,—to lighten the labour of conformity, and to allow the best end to be attained without the heavy burden of giving countenance, though merely formal, to surplusage and superstition, that neither the English of his day nor their fathers had been able to bear.



SHAKESPEARE'S WILL!

FROM THE ORIGINAL IN THE OFFICE OF THE PREROGATIVE COURT OF CANTERBURY.

*Vicesimo quinto die Martii,² Anno Regni Domini nostri Jacobi nunc Regis Anglie, &c. decimo quarto, et
Scotia xlii². Amons Domini 1616.*



IN the name of God, Amen ! I William Shakespeare of Stratford upon Avon, in the countie of Warr. gent, in perfect health and memorie, God be prayed ! doe make and ordayne this my last will and testament in manner and forme followinge ; that ys to saye, first I commend my soule into the handes of God my Creator, hoping, and assurdele believing, through thonile merites of Jesus Christe my Saviour, to be made partaker of lyfe everlasting, and my boode to the earth wherof yt ys made. Item, I gyve and bequeath unto my daughter ^aJudyth, one hundred and fyfne pounds of lawfull English money, to be payed unto her in manner and forme following, that ys to saye, one hundred pounds *in discharge of her marriage portion* within one yeaire after my deceas, with consideracion after the rate of twoe shillinges in the pound for soe long time as the same shalbe unpaide unto her after my deceas, and the fyfte pounds residewe thereof, upon her surrendring of

¹ The will is written on three sheets of paper, fastened together at top. Shakespeare's name is signed at the bottom of the first and second sheet, and his final signature, "by me William Shakespeare," is in the middle of the third bottom. Malone thinks the last signature was first written, and that the poet was very ill and weak when he signed, the handwriting being very irregular and tremulous. The words in Italics are interlined.
² Originally written *Janswari*.

all syng of such sufficient securitis as the overseers of this my will shall like of, to surrendar or graunte
or to her estate and right that shall discend or come unto her after my deceas, or that she nowe hath, of in
said one copiehold tenementes with thappartenaunces, lyeng and being in Stratford upon Avon afore-
named, in the saied countey of Warr. being parcell or holden of the manour of Rowington, unto my
daughter Susanna Hall, and her heires for ever. Item, I gyve and bequeath unto my saied daughter
Judithe one hundred and fyfie pounds more, if shee, or anie issue of her bodye, be lyving at thend of
three yeares next ensueing the date of the date of this my will, during which tyme my executors are to
paile her consideracion from my deceas according to the rate aforessaid; and if she dye within the said
tearne without issue of her bodye, then my will ys, and I doe gyve and bequeath one hundred pounds
thereof to my neece Elizabeth Hall, and the fiftie pounds to be sett fourth by my executors during
the life of my sister Johane Harte, and the use and profit thereof cominge, shalbe payed to my saied
sister Jone, and after her deceas the saied l^t. shall remaine amongst the children of my saied sister
equallie to be deviled amongst them; but if my saied daughter Judith be lyving att thend of the said
three yeares, or anie yssue of her bodye, then my will ys, and soe I devise and bequeath the said
hundred and fyfie pounds to be sett out by *my executors and overseers* for the best benefitt of her
and her issue, and *the stock not to be paied unto her soe long as she shalbe married and covert*.
baron; but my will ys, that she shall have the consideracion yearelie payed unto her during her lief, and
after her deceas, the said stock and consideracion to be payed to her children, if she have anie, and if
not, to her executors or assignes, she lyving the said terme after my deceas: Provided that if such
husbond as she shall att thend of the saied three yeares be married unto, or at anie [lyme] after, doe
sufficentlie assure unto her, and thissue of her bodye landes awnswereable to the porcion by this my

that gyven unto her, and to be adjudged soc by my executors and overseers, then my will yr,
that the said chⁿ. shalbe paied to such husband as shall make much assurance, to his owne use. Item, I
gyve and bequeath unto my saied sister Jane xxⁿ, and all my weareing apparell, to be paied and
delivered within one yere after my deceas; and I doe will and devise unto her the house with
thappurtenances in Stratford, wherein she dwelleth, for her naturall liew, under th' yearloun of xijⁿ.

*Mrs. Anne
Agnes Power*

Item, I gyve and bequeath unto her three sonnes, William Harte, [Thomas¹] Harte, and Michael
Harte, fyre pounds apiece, to be paied within one yere after my deceas². Item, I gyve and bequeath
unto the saied Elizabeth³ Hall all my plate, except my brod silver and gill hole, that I now have att the date
of this my will. Item, I gyve and bequeath unto the poore of Stratford aforesaid ten poundes⁴ to
Mr. Thomas Combe my sword; to Thomas Russell, esquier, fyve pounds⁵; and to Francis Collins of the
borrough of Warr. in the countie of Warr. gentleman, thirteene pounds six shillinges and eight-

¹ This Christian name is omitted in the original will.

² The following words were here at first inserted, but afterwards cancelled: "to be sett out for her within one
yere after my deceas by my executors with thaircise and directions of my overseers, for her best profit, until her
marrie, and then with the increase thereof to be paied unto her."
³ This sentence was originally only her.

pence, to be paied within one yeaire after my deceas. Item, I gyve and bequeath to *Hamleett⁷ Sadler* xxxviij^d, to buy him a ringe; to *William Raynoldes, gent.* xxviij^d, to buy him a ringe; to my godson *William Walker, xx^s* in gold; to *Anthonye Nash, gent.* xxviij^d; and to *Mr. John Nashe, xxviij^d*; and to *my fellowes, John Hemynge, Richard Burbage, and Henry Candell, xxviij^d apiece,* to buy them ringes. Item, I give, will, bequeath, and devise, unto my daughter *Susanna Hall, for better enabling of her to performe this my will, and towardes the performances thereof*, all that capital message or tenement, with thappurtenaunces, in *Stratford aforesoide*, called *The New Place*, wherein I nowe dwel, and two messages or tenements, with thappurtenaunces, scituat, lyeing, and being in *Henley-streete*, within the borough of *Stratford aforesaied*; and all my barnes, stables, orchardes, gardens, landes, tenementes, and hereditamentes whatsoeuer, scituat, lyeing, and being, or to be had, receyved, perceyved, or taken, within the townes, hamlettes, villages, fieldes, and groundes of *Stratford upon Avon, Old Stratford, Bushopton, and Welcombe*, or in anie of them, in the said countie of *Warr*. And also all that message or tenemente, with thappurtenaunces, wherein one *John Robinson dwelleth*, scituat, lyeing, and being, in the *Blackfriers* in *London* nere the *Wardrobe*; and all other my landes, tenementes, and hereditamentes whatsoeuer: To have and to hold all and singuler the said premisses, with their appurtenaunces, unto the saied *Susanna Hall*, for and during the terme of her naturall lief; and after her deceas to the first sonne of her bodie lawfullie yssuing, and to the heires males of the bodie of the said first sonne lawfullie yssuing; and for defalt of such issue, to the second sonne of her bodie lawfullie issueing, and to the heires males of the bodie of the said second sonne lawfullie yssuing; and for defalt of such heires, to the third sonne of the bodie of the sonne

⁷ Instead of *Hamleett Sadler, Mr. Richard Tyler tylde*, was first written.

isanna lawfullie yssuing, and to the heires males of the bodie of the saled third sonne lawfullie
g; and for defaile of such issue, the same soe to be and remaine to the fflourth, fyfth, sixte,
yventh sonnes of her body, lawfullie issueing one after another, and to the heires males of the

R^{obt}. v. S^t G^{at}ff^m.

bodies of the said fourth, fifth, sixte, and seventh sonnes lawfullie yssuing, in such manner as yt is
before lymittid to be and remaine to the first, second, and third sonns of her bodie, and to theirre heires
males: and for defaile of such issue, the saied premisses to be and remaine to my sayed neece Hall,
and the heires males of her bodie lawfullie yssuing; and for defaile of such issue, to my daughter
Judith, and the heires males of her bodie lawfullie yssuing; and for defaile of such issue, to the right
heires of me the said William Shackspeare for ever. *Item, I gyve unto my wif, my second best bed,*
with the furniture. Item, I gyve and bequeath to my saied daughter Judith my broad silver gilt bole.
All the rest of my goodes, chattell, leases, plate, jewels, and houshold stufie whatsoeuer, after my dettes
and legacies payed, and my funerall expences discharged, I give, devise, and bequeath to my sonne-in-
w^ee, John Hall, gent. and my daughter Susanna his wif, whom I ordaine and make executors of this

"*My last will and testament. In witness whereof I have hereunto put my hand^s, the date and yeare first
above written.*

28e / my M[ar]ch 1616

Witness to the publishing hereof,

Fr^a. Collyns,
Julius Shaw,
John Robinson,
Hammet Sadler,
Robert Whatcott.

69

*Probatum coram Magistro Willielmo Bryde, Legum Doctore Comiss^gc. xxij.^{to} die mensis Junii, Anno
Dominⁱ 1616; juramento Johannis Hall unius executorum g^cc. cui de bene g^cc. iurut. reservat.
potestate g^cc. Susanne Hall, alteri executorum g^cc. eum venerit, g^cc. petitur, (Inv. ex.)*

* Seal was originally written.

**ON THE CHRONOLOGICAL ORDER OF
SHAKESPEARE'S PLAYS.**

The question of the chronological order of the plays is one to which considerable attention has recently been given. Most of the external evidence bearing upon it may be gathered from the foregoing pages, but a good deal of light has been thrown on the subject through the internal evidence afforded by a careful comparison of the different plays from various points of view. The late Charles Bathurst; Professors Dowden and Ingram, of Trinity College, Dublin ; Mr. F. J. Furnivall, founder of the "New Shakspere Society," and the Rev. F. G. Fleay, have all given considerable attention to the subject, and their writings should be consulted for a thorough comprehension of this branch of Shakespeare-criticism.¹

Briefly it may be stated that this internal evidence consists of the observed variations, partly in the character and moral or æsthetic aspect of the several plays, and partly in the language and metre in which they are presented to us. It is obvious that any writer, however great his original genius, may be expected to show in successive works an increase in power of thought and in facility of expression ; and if we are able to estimate this gradual improvement with any accuracy, it will afford valuable evidence as to the order in which the various works were written. Now, in respect to the versification of Shakespeare's plays, this gradual improvement admits of plain demonstration, and the several methods of exhibiting it have been denominated "verse-tests." For instance, if any two plays which are known to have been written at a wide interval are taken, and the lines which have a pause or stop at the end are com-

¹ See especially "Shakspere, his Mind and Art," and the "Shakspere Primer," by Edward Dowden, LL.D. "The *Lord Shakspere*," with Introduction by F. J. Furnivall, and the "Shakspere Manual," by Rev. F. G. Fleay.

pared in number with those in which the sense is carried on to the next line without pause, it will be found that the proportion of run-on lines is much larger in the play which is of later date. The following lines—

“ Mine ear is open, and my heart prepar'd:
The worst is worldly loss thou canst unfold.
Say is my kingdom lost? why 'twas my care;
And what loss is it to be rid of care?”

are from Richard II. (III. ii.), a comparatively early play; contrast with them a few from the Tempest (I. ii.), which is one of the latest—

“ O! I have suffer'd
With those that I saw suffer: a brave vessel
Who had no doubt some noble creatures in her
Dash'd all to pieces. O! the cry did knock
Against my very heart”—

and the difference naturally resulting from increased fluency and freedom in the use of verse is plainly perceptible.

This tendency to dissever the grammatical construction from the cadence of the verse is carried even further in some of the late plays. Lines are found which not only terminate in the middle of a sentence, but also end with some unimportant or insignificant word in the sentence. These endings are classified and used as tests. An auxiliary verb, “do,” “am,” “can,” &c., at the end of a line is called a “light ending,” whilst a monosyllabic preposition or conjunction, “by,” “and,” “but,” &c., is called a “weak ending.” There are twenty-eight instances of weak endings in Antony and Cleopatra, and but one or two in any earlier play. Similarly Macbeth has twenty-one light endings, though they are very scarce before that.

Another means of comparison is found in the occurrence of a redundant syllable at the end of a line, which is generally more frequent in the later plays than the earlier ones. Other similar tests have also been appealed to, such as the use of rhymed verse, and the introduction of doggrel, both of which are characteristic of early work;

c CHRONOLOGICAL ORDER OF

but the two first mentioned are of the greatest importance, firstly because they depend upon a spontaneous development of the poet's mechanical power, and cannot be supposed to have been caused by any special effort, and secondly because they admit of careful working out, and more trustworthy comparison.

In addition to these formal tests, there is the evidence afforded by obvious growth in taste and poetical expression; besides other indications, easily perceived, but not readily describable, of the change from youth to maturity in the poet's mind. All this evidence, taken in conjunction with such external data as remain, has enabled critics to divide the years of Shakespeare's authorship, extending from about 1588 to about 1612, into four periods, each displaying a different mental stage. In the first six years—the time, as it were, of apprenticeship—we have crude and unrefined work, plays such as *Titus Andronicus* or *1 Henry VI.*, which are in fact the work of other hands touched up by Shakespeare. We have specimens of all subjects, comic, tragic, and historical—*Love's Labour's Lost*, *The Comedy of Errors*, *Midsummer Night's Dream*, *Two Gentlemen of Verona*, *Romeo and Juliet*, the Second and Third Parts of *Henry VI.*, *Richard II.* and *Richard III.*—full of youthful fancy or passion, but at the same time with excessive word-play, incomplete characterization, and other defects such as are natural to immature work.

King John and *The Merchant of Venice* connect this period with the next—the former leading up to the later division of the English historical plays—the trilogy of the two parts of *Henry IV.* and *Henry V.* The Falstaff Comedy, which forms so great a part of these, associates with them *The Merry Wives of Windsor*. With the broad humour of this last we connect that of *The Taming of the Shrew*; but these were quickly followed by comedy of a much more refined order in *Much Ado about Nothing*, *As You Like It*, and *Twelfth Night*.

At the opening of the new century the joyous vein in which the last plays had been conceived begins to

overshadowed. All's Well that Ends Well, and Measure for Measure, have a gloomy if not morbid tone, and in the same darkened mental condition the great tragedies, Julius Cæsar, Hamlet, Othello, Macbeth and King Lear were produced. And, in addition to these powerful pictures of mental conflict and crime, we have lust, pride, and misanthropy depicted in Troilus and Cressida, Antony and Cleopatra, Coriolanus, and Timon of Athens.

But with the last-named the dark and tragic mood seems to have reached a climax and a sudden end at once—for a most remarkable change takes place from scenes of passion and mental desolation to beauty and serenity. The four romantic plays of the last period : Pericles, Cymbeline, The Tempest, and the Winter's Tale, all deal with reunion and reconciliation, and so far as they are an index of their author's mind, form a fitting conclusion to the labours of his life. Henry VIII., the last play usually associated with Shakespeare's name, is only in part his, a larger portion being by Fletcher.

The following list of plays, with the earliest and latest dates assigned to them by recent critics, will show how little room for difference of opinion is now left. To obtain an absolutely conclusive arrangement would be impossible, for in the case of some it is difficult to assign their composition to any one year. For instance, there is little doubt but that Romeo and Juliet was first published in 1597 ; but it is scarcely less certain that it was composed, if not acted, five or six years sooner. It is possible that Hamlet also existed in an earlier form some time before the date assigned to it.

APPROXIMATE DATES OF THE PLAYS.

<i>Titus Andronicus</i>	.	.	.	.	1588-90
<i>Love's Labour's Lost</i>	.	.	.	.	1588-91
<i>Comedy of Errors</i>	.	.	.	.	1589-92
<i>Part 1. Henry VI.</i>	.	.	.	.	1590-92
<i>Midsummer Night's Dream</i>	.	.	.	.	1590-94
<i>Two Gentlemen of Verona</i>	.	.	.	.	1590-94

CHRONOLOGICAL ORDER.

Part II. Henry VI.	.	.	.	.	.	1591-94
Part III. Henry VI.	.	.	.	.	.	1591-94
Richard II.	.	.	.	.	.	1593-94
Romeo and Juliet.	.	.	.	.	.	1591-97
Richard III.	.	.	.	.	.	1593-95
King John.	.	.	.	.	.	1595
Merchant of Venice	.	.	.	.	.	1596
Taming of the Shrew	.	.	.	.	.	1596-1602
Part I. Henry IV.	.	.	.	.	.	1596-98
Part II. Henry IV.	.	.	.	.	.	1597-98
Merry Wives of Windsor	.	.	.	.	.	1598-99
Henry V.	.	.	.	.	.	1599
Much Ado About Nothing	.	.	.	.	.	1598-99
As You Like It	.	.	.	.	.	1599-1600
Twelfth Night	.	.	.	.	.	1600-1
Julius Cæsar	.	.	.	.	.	1600
Hamlet	.	.	.	.	.	1601-3
All's Well that Ends Well	.	.	.	.	.	1601-4
Measure for Measure	.	.	.	.	.	1603
Othello	.	.	.	.	.	1604
Troilus and Cressida	.	.	.	.	.	1603-7
King Lear	.	.	.	.	.	1605-6
Macbeth	.	.	.	.	.	1605-6
Antony and Cleopatra	.	.	.	.	.	1606-8
Timon of Athens	.	.	.	.	.	1606-8
Pericles	.	.	.	.	.	1607-8
Coriolanus	.	.	.	.	.	1607-9
Tempest	.	.	.	.	.	1610
Cymbeline	.	.	.	.	.	1609-12
Winter's Tale	.	.	.	.	.	1610-11
Henry VIII.	.	.	.	.	.	1611-13

It need hardly be stated that the order adopted in this, and nearly every other edition, is that of the first folio of 1623.

DEDICATION OF HEMINGE AND CONDELL
TO THE FIRST FOLIO EDITION,
PUBLISHED IN 1623.

TO THE
MOST NOBLE AND INCOMPARABLE FAIRE OF BRETHREN,
WILLIAM EARLE OF PEMBROKE, ETC
LOD CHAMBERLAINE TO THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT
MAJESTY, AND
PHILIP EARLE OF MONTGOMERY, ETC.
GENTLEMAN OF HIS MAJESTIES BED-CHAMBER.
BOTH KNIGHTS OF THE MOST NOBLE ORDER OF THE GARTER,
AND OUR SINGULAR GOOD LORDS.

RIGHT HONOURABLE,

WHilst we studie to be thankfull in our particular, for the many fauors we haue receiuied from your L.L. we are faine vpon the ill fortune, to mingle two the most diuerte things that can be, feare, and rashnesse ; rashnesse in the enterprize, and feare of the successe. For, when we valew the places your H. H. sustaine, we cannot but know their dignity greater, then to descend to the reading of these trifles : and while we name them trifles, we haue depry'd ourselues of the defence of our Dedication. But, since your L. L. haue beene pleas'd to think these trifles something, heeretofore; and haue prosecutued both them, and their Author liuing, with so much fauour : we hope, that (they out-liuing him, and he not hauing the fate, common with some, to be exequutor to his owne writings) you will vse the like indulgence toward them, you haue done vnto their parent. There is a great difference, whether any Booke choose his Patrones, or finde them : This hath done both. For, so much were your L. L. likings of the seuerall parts. when they were acted, as before they

DEDICATION.

were published, the Volume asked to be yours. We haue but collected them, and done an office to the dead, to procure his Orphanes, Guardians ; without ambition either of selfe-profit, or fame : onely to keepe the memory of so worthy a Friend, & Fellow aliue, as was our SHAKESPEARE, by humble offer of his playes, to your most noble patronage. Wherein, as we haue justly obserued, no man to come neere your LL. but with a kind of religious addresse ; it hath bin the height of our care, who are the Presenters, to make the present worthy of your H. H. by the perfection. But, there we must also craue our abilities to be considerd, my Lords. We cannot go beyond our owne powers. Country hands reach foorth milke, creame, fruities, or what they haue : and many Nation (we haue heard) that had not gummes & incense, obtained their requests with a leauened Cake. It was no fault to approch their Gods, by what meanes they could : And the most, though meanest, of things are made more precious, when they are dedicated to Temples. In that name therefore, we most humbly consecrate to your H. H. these remaines of your seruant SHAKESPEARE, that what delight is in them, may be euer your L. L. the reputation his, & the faults ours, if any be committed, by a payre so carefull to shew their gratitude both to the living and the dead, as is

Your Lordshippes most bounden,

JOHN HEMINGE.
HENRY CONDELL.



PREFACE

TO THE FIRST FOLIO EDITION PUBLISHED IN 1623.

TO THE GREAT VARIETY OF READERS,

ROM the most able, to him that can but spell : There you are number'd. We had rather you were weighd. Especially, when the fate of all Bookes depends upon your capacities : and not of your heads alone, but of your purses. Well ! it is now publique, and you wil stand for your priviledges wee know . to read, and censure. Do so, but buy it first. That doth best commend a Booke, the Stationer saies. Then, how odde soever your braines be, or your wisedomes, make your licence the same, and spare not. Judge your sixe-pen'orth, your shillings worth, your fие shillings worth at a time, or higher, so you rise to the just rates, and welcome. But, what euer you do, Buy. Censure will not drive a Trade, or make the Iacke go. And though you be a Magistrate of wit, and sit on the Stage at *Black-Friers*, or the *Cock-pit*, to arraigne Playes dailie, know, these Playes haue had their triall alreadie, and stood out all Appeals ; and do now come forth quitted rather by a Decree of Court, then any purchas'd Letters of commendation.

It had bene a thing, we confesse, worthie to have bene wished, that the Author himselfe had lived to have set forth, and ouerseen his owne writings ; But since it hath bin ordain'd otherwise, and he by death departed from that right, *we pray you, doe not envie his Friends, the office of their care, and paine, to haue collected & publish'd them;*

cvi PREFACE TO THE FOLIO OF 1623.

and so to have publish'd them, as where (before) you were abus'd with diuerse stolne, and surreptitious copies, maimed and deformed by the frauds and stealthes of injurious impostors, that expos'd them : euen those are now offer'd to your view cur'd, and perfect of their limbes ; and all the rest, absolute in their numbers, as he conceiveth thē : Who, as he was a happie imitator of Nature, was a most gentle expresser of it. His mind and hand went together : and what he thought, he vttered with that easinesse, that wee have scarce receiued from him a blot in his papers. But it is not our prouince, who onely gather his works, and glue them you, to praise him. It is yours that reade him. And there we hope, to your diuers capacities, you will finde enough, both to draw, and hold you : for his wit can no more lie hid, then it could be lost. Reade him, therefore ; and againe, and againe : And if then you doe not like him, surely you are in some manifest danger, not to vnderstand him. And so we leauē you to other of his Friends, whom if you need, can bee your guides : if you neede them not, you can leade your selves, and others. And such readers we wish him.

JOHN HEMINGE,
HENRIE CONDELL.





COMMENDATORY VERSES FROM THE FOLIO OF 1623.

TO THE MEMORY OF MY BELOVED THE AUTHOR
MR. WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE :
AND WHAT HE HATH LEFT US.

JO draw no envy, Shakespeare, on thy name,
Am I thus ample to thy book and fame :
While I confess thy writings to be such,
As neither man nor Muse can praise too much.
Tis true, and all men's suffrage. But these ways
Were not the paths I meant unto thy praise,
For seeliest ignorance on these may light,
Which, when it sounds at best, but echo's right ;
Or blind affection, which doth ne'er advance
The truth, but gropes, and urgeth all by chance ;
Or crafty malice might pretend this praise,
And think to ruin, where it seem'd to raise.
These are, as some infamous bawd or whore
Should praise a matron. What could hurt her more ?
But thou art proof against them, and indeed
Above th' ill fortune of them, or the need.
I therefore will begin. Soul of the age !
Th' applause ! delight ! the wonder of our stage !
My Shakespeare, rise ! I will not lodge thee by
Chaucer, or Spenser, or bid Beaumont lie
A little further, to make thee a room⁹ :
Thou art a monument without a tomb,

⁹ This refers to some lines by William Basse, beginning :—
*Renowned Spenser lie a thought more nigh
To learned Chaucer; and rare Beaumont lie*

And art alive still, while thy book doth live,
And we have wits to read, and praise to give.
That I not mix thee so, my brain excuses ;
I mean with great, but disproportion'd Muses :
For if I thought my judgment were of years,
I should commit thee surely with thy peers,
And tell how far thou didst our Lily outshine,
Or sporting Kid, or Marlow's mighty line.
And though thou hadst small Latin and less Greek,
From thence to honour thee, I will not seek
For names ; but call forth thund'ring Æschylus,
Euripides, and Sophocles to us,
Pacuvius, Accius, him of Cordova dead,
To life again, to hear thy buskin tread,
And shake a stage : or when thy socks were on,
Leave thee alone for the comparison
Of all, that insolent Greece, or haughty Rome
Sent forth, or since did from their ashes come.
Triumph, my Britain, thou hast one to show,
To whom all scenes of Europe homage owe.
He was not of an age, but for all time !
And all the Muses still were in their prime,
When, like Apollo, he came forth to warm
Our ears, or like a Mercury to charm !
Nature herself was proud of his designs,
And joy'd to wear the dressing of his lines !
Which were so richly spun, and woven so fit,
As since, she will vouchsafe no other wit.
The merry Greek, tart Aristophanes,
Neat Terence, witty Plautus, now not please ;
But antiquated and deserted lie,
As they were not of Nature's family.
Yet must I not give Nature all : Thy art,
My gentle Shakespeare, must enjoy a part.

A little nearer Spenser, to make room
For Shakespeare in your threefold fourfold tom.b.
not appear that they were printed before 1633, when
ren among Donnes's Poems, printed in quarto in that
a also to be found in the edition of Francis Beau
given by Blaicklock in 1653, 8vo.

COMMENDATORY VERSES.

cix

For though the poet's matter Nature be,
His art doth give the fashion. And that he
Who casts to write a living line, must sweat,
(Such as thine are) and strike the second heat
Upon the Muse's anvil; turn the same,
(And himself with it,) that he thinks to frame;
Or for the laurel, he may gain a scorn.
For a good poet's made, as well as born,
And such wert thou. Look how the father's face
Lives in his issue: even so the race
Of SHAKESPEARE'S mind and manners brightly shines
In his well-torned, and true-filed lines:
In each of which he seems to shake a lance,
As brandisht at the eyes of Ignorance.
Sweet swan of Avon! what a sight it were,
To see thee in our waters yet appear,
And make those flights upon the banks of Thames,
That so did take Eliza, and our James!
But stay, I see thee in the hemisphere
Advanc'd, and made a constellation there!
Shine forth, thou Star of poets, and with rage,
Or influence, chide, or cheer the drooping stage,
Which, since thy flight from hence, hath mourn'd like
night,
And despairs day, but for thy volumes light.

BEN JONSON¹.

¹ Ben Jonson also wrote the following lines, which are prefixed before the portrait of Shakespeare, by Droseshant, in the folio editions:—

TO THE READER.

This Figure, that thou here seest put,
It was for gentle Shakespeare cut;
Wherein the Graver had a strife
With Nature, to out-doo the life:
O, could he but have drawne his wit
As well in brasse, as he hath hit
His face; the Print would then surpassee
All, that was ever writ in brasse.
But since he cannot, Reader looke
Not on his Picture, but his Booke.

B. L.

TO THE MEMORY OF THE DECEASED AUTHOR
MASTER W. SHAKESPEARE.

 SHAKESPEARE as length thy piess fellowes
The world thy Workes : thy Workes, by which
 ende
 ende

Thy Tombe, thy name must, when that stone is rent
And Time dissolues thy Stratford Monument,
Here we alme shall view thee still. This Booke
When Brasse and Marble fade, shall make thee looke
Fresch to all Ages : when Posteritie
Shall loath what's new, thinke all is prodegie
That is not Shake-speares ; eu'ry Line, each Verse
Here shall reuine, redeeme thee from thy Herse.
Nor Fire, nor cank'ring Age, as Naso said,
Of his, thy wit-fraught Booke shall once inuade
Nor shall I e're beleuee, or thinke thee dead
(Though mist) until our bankrott Stage be sped
(Impossible) with some new straine t'out-do
Passions of *Juliet* and her *Romeo* ;
Or till I heare a Scene more nobly take
Then when thy half-Sword parlyng Romans spake.
Till these, till any of thy Volumes rest
Shall with more fire, more feeling be exprest,
Be sure our Shake-speare, thou canst neuer dye,
But crown'd with Laurell, liue eternally.

L. DIGGES.

TO THE MEMORIE OF
M. W. SHAKE-SPEARE.

WE wondred (Shake-speare) that thou went'st so
soone
From the World's-Stage, to the Graunes-Tyring-
roome.

Wee thought thee dead, but this thy printed worth,
Tels thy Spectators, that thou went'st but forth
To enter with applause. An Actors Art
Can dye, and liue to acte a second part.
That's but an *Exit* of Mortalitie;
This, a Re-entrance to a Plaudite.

L M².

VPON THE LINES AND LIFE OF THE FAMOUS
SCENICKE POET
MASTER WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE.

MHOSE hands, which you so clapt, go now, and
wring
GYou *Britaines* braue; for done are Shake-
speares dayes:
His dayes are done, that made the dainty Playes,
Which made the Globe of heau'n and earth to ring
Dry'de is that veine, dry'd is the Thespian Spring,
Turn'd all to teares, and Phœbus clouds his rayes:
That corps, that coffin now besticke those bayes,
Which crown'd him *Poet* first, then Poets King.
If *Tragedies* might any *Prologue* haue,
All those he made, would scarce make one to this:
Where *Fame*, now that he gone is to the graue
(Deaths publique tyring-house) the *Nuncius* is.
For though his line of life went soone about
The life yet of his lines shall neuer out.

HVGH HOLLAND.

* *These lines are probably by John Marston.*

FROM THE SECOND FOLIO EDITION OF 1632.

ON WORTHY MASTER SHAKESPEAR
AND HIS POEMS.

 MIND reflecting ages past, whose clear
And equal surface can make things appear
Distant a thousand years, and represent
Them in their lively colours' just extent.
To out-run hasty time, retrieve the fates,
Roll back the heavens, blow ope the iron gates
Of death and Lethe, where confused lie
Great heaps of ruinous mortality.
In that deep dusky dungeon to discern
A royal ghost from churl's; by art to learn
The physiognomy of shades, and give
Them sudden birth, wond'ring how oft they live,
What story coldly tells, what poets feign,
At second hand, and picture without brain,
Senseless and soulless shows: To give a stage
(Ample and true with life) voice, action, age,
As Plato's year and new scene of the world
Them unto us, or us to them had hurl'd.
To raise our antient sovereigns from their herse,
Make kings his subjects, by exchanging verse,
Enlive their pale trunks, that the present age
Joys in their joy, and trembles at their rage:
Yet so to temper passion, that our ears
Take pleasure in their pain; and eyes in tears
Both weep and smile; fearful at plots so sad,
Then laughing at our fear; abus'd and glad
To be abus'd; affected with that truth
Which we perceive is false; pleas'd in that ruth
At which we start; and by elaborate play
Tortur'd and tickled; by a crab-like way
Time past made pastime, and in ugly sort
isgorging up his ravine for our sport:

—While the plebeian imp, from lofty throne,
Creates and rules a world, and works upon
Mankind by secret engines ; now to move
A chilling pity, then a rigorous love :
To strike up and stroke down both joy and ire ;
To steer th' affections, and by heavenly fire
Mould us anew. Stol'n from ourselves —

This and much more which cannot be exprest
But by himself, his tongue, and his own breast,
Was Shakespeare's freehold ; which his cunning brain
Improv'd by favour of the ninefold train :
The buskin'd Muse ; the comic Queen ; the grand
And louder tone of Clio ; nimble hand
And nimbler foot of the melodious pair ;
The silver-voiced lady ; the most fair
Calliope, whose speaking silence daunts ;
And she whose praise the heavenly body chaunts :

These jointly woo'd him, envying one another
(Obey'd by all as spouse, but lov'd as brother)
And wrought a curious robe of sable grave,
Fresh green, and pleasant yellow, red most brave,
And constant blue, rich purple, guiltless white,
The lowly russet, and the scarlet bright ;
Branch'd and embroider'd like the painted Spring ;
Each leaf match'd with a flower, and each string
Of golden wire, each line of silk ; there run
Italian works whose thread the sisters spun ;
And there did sing or seem to sing, the choice
Birds of a foreign note and various voice :
Here hangs a mossy rock, there plays a fair
But chiding fountain, purled : Not the air,
Nor clouds, nor thunder, but were living drawn
Not out of common tiffany or lawn,
But fine materials which the Muses know,
And only know the countries where they grow.

Now when they could no longer him enjoy
In mortal garments pent ;—death may destroy
They say his body, but his verse shall live,
And more than nature takes, our hands shall give.

In a less volume, but more strongly bound,
Shakespeare shall breathe and speak; with laurel crown'd
Which never fades: Fed with Ambrosian meat,
In a well-lined vesture rich and neat.

So with this robe they clothe him, bid him wear it,
For time shall never stain, nor envy tear it.

The friendly admirer of his Endowments,

I. M. S.³

³ These admirable verses were prefixed to the second folio printed in 1632; they are a noble tribute from a contemporary to the genius of our immortal Poet. Conjecture had been vainly employed upon the initials I. M. S. affixed, until Mr. Hunter having occasion to refer to the *Iter Lancastrense*, a poem by *Richard James*, Fellow of Christ's College, Oxford, an eminent scholar and antiquary, the friend of Selden and Sir Robert Cotton, was struck with the similarity of style, the same unexpected and abrupt breaks in the middle of the lines, and the same disposition to view every thing under its antiquarian aspect, which we find in these verses, and therefore suggested the great probability that by I. M. S. we must understand IaMeS.

Without being at all aware of Mr. Hunter's suggestion, my excellent friend Mr. Lloyd had come to the same conclusion, from having seen some lines by James, printed in Mr. Halliwell's Essay on the Character of Falstaff. The coincident opinion of two independent and able authorities would be in itself conclusive, and for my own part, I have no doubt that it is to *Richard James* these highly poetical lines to the memory of the Poet must be attributed.

That Jasper Mayne could not have written them is quite evident, from his pedestrian verses to the Memory of Ben Jonson; and that they are not by Milton, and have no traces of his hand, is equally evident, although Mr. Collier feels "morally certain that they are by him!" The late Mr. Boaden thought they were from the pen of George Chapman; and it must be confessed that the structure of the verse would countenance the supposition; but whoever will compare the poems printed with the *Iter Lancastrense* by Mr. Corser, will need no further evidence that these verses are by the same hand.

IN THE SECOND FOLIO, PRINTED IN 1632, THE FOLLOWING
WERE ALSO ADDED.

VPON THE EFFIGIES OF MY WORTHY FRIEND, THE
AUTHOR
MASTER WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE
AND HIS WORKES.

 PECTATOR, this Life's Shaddow is ; To see
The truer image and a liuelier he.
Turne, Reader. But obserue his Comicke vaine,
Laugh ; and proceed next to a Tragick straine,
Then weepe : So when thou find'st two contraries,
Two different passions from thy rapt soul rise,
Say, (who alone effect such wonders could)
Rare Shake-speare to the life thou dost behold.

AN EPITAPH
ON THE ADMIRABLE DRAMATICKE POET,
W. SHAKESPEARE.

 HAT need my *Shakespeare* for his honour'd
bones
 The labour of an Age, in piled stones
Or that his hallow'd Reliques should be hid
Under a Star-ypointing Pyramid ?
Dear Son of Memory, great Heir of Fame,
What need'st thou such dull witnesse of thy Name ?
Thou in our wonder and astonishment
Hast built thy self a lasting Monument :
For whil'st to th'shame of slow-endavouring Art
Thy easy numbers flow, and that each heart⁴,

⁴ It is superfluous to say that these lines are Milton's. The folio has *part*, an evident misprint for *hart*, the old orthography of *heart*, which is the reading of the copy in Milton's Minor Poems printed in 1645, where there are other verbal variations.

Hath from the leaves of thy unvalued Book
Those Delphick Lines with deepe Impression took;
Then thou our fancy of her-self bereaving,
Dost make us Marble with too much conceiving,
And so Sepulcher'd in such pomp dost lie
That Kings for such a Tomb would wish to die.



RKES OF WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE,
ing all his Comedies, Histories, and Tra-
gedies; Truly set forth according
to their first Original.

IES OF THE PRINCIPALL ACTORS IN ALL
THESE PLAYES.

akespeare.	Samuel Gilburne.
urbage.	Robert Armin.
mings.	William Ostler.
Phillips.	Nathan Field.
empt.	John Vnderwood.
ope.	Nicholas Tooley.
yan.	William Ecclestone.
idell.	Joseph Taylor.
lye.	Robert Benfield.
owly.	Robert Gouge.
ine.	Richard Robinson
rosse.	John Shancke.
Cooke.	John Rice.





TEMPEST.

PRELIMINARY REMARKS.

MY friend Mr. Douce, in his Illustrations of Shakspeare, published in 1807, had suggested that the outline of a considerable part of this play was borrowed from the account of Sir George Somers's Voyage and Shipwreck on the Bermudas, in 1609, and had pointed out some passages which seemed to confirm his suggestion. At the same time, it appears, that Mr. Malone was engaged in investigating the relations of this voyage, and he subsequently printed the result in a pamphlet which he distributed among his friends, and which Mr. Boswell reprinted in the 15th volume of his edition of Shakspeare.

At a later period of his life, Mr. Douce met with a print, engraved on wood, inscribed LA MADONNA DI LAMPEDOSA, in which the coast of the Island with its Castle is represented; two vessels are approaching it, above which hover three large birds. The Virgin and child are in the clouds above, to whom an old and a young man, with swords by their sides, are kneeling in the act of adoration. This print was probably given to votaries, who made their offerings at the shrine in the chapel on the Island, by the hermit stationed there to relieve those who might be wrecked, or driven by stress of weather, on the coast. It is known among sailors in the Mediterranean as the Enchanted Island.

The late Mr. Thomas Rodd informed Mr. Hunter that the suggestion, that Lampedosa, from its situation and the traditions respecting it, was most likely to have been the Island intended by Shakspeare as the scene of the Tempest, first occurred to himself, and that he made Mr. Douce acquainted with it. Be this as it may, I know that Mr. Douce certainly entertained the idea upwards of twenty years since, and has thus recorded it. "The Island of Lampedossa is near the coast of Tunis; and from its description, in Dapper, and the real track of the king of Naples's voyage in Shakspeare's Tempest, will turn out to be the veritable and where he was shipwrecked, and to which Prospero had

been banished, whenever the Italian novel on which the play was founded shall be discovered." Whether Mr. Douce ever carried his conviction further, I am unable to say, but it is not a little remarkable that the same hint given to Mr. Hunter should have formed the groundwork of his Disquisition "On the Scene, Origin, Date, &c. of Shakspeare's *Tempest*," first printed in 1839, and since reprinted in his "New Illustrations of Shakspeare," 1845. Mr. Hunter has dwelt at large upon the resemblance of Lampedosa, in every respect, to the Island of the *Tempest*, and concludes that although the poet may not have obtained his acquaintance with it from any geographical source, he may have found it in a story which had been previously written by another hand, to whom the attributes, physical and metaphysical, of Lampedosa were familiarly known, and that it was most probably an Italian story.

Collins, the poet, told Thomas Warton that the plot was taken from the romance of Aurelio and Isabella, but this was probably a lapse of memory consequent upon his calamitous mental indisposition, for the story has no resemblance to that of the *Tempest*. A friend of the late James Boswell told him that he had some years ago perused an Italian novel, which answered Collins' description, but his memory, unfortunately, did not enable him to recover it.

Mr. Thoms, in a paper on the early English and German Dramas, published in the New Monthly Magazine for January, 1841, had the merit of first pointing out a dramatic piece by Jacob Ayrer, a notary of Nuremberg, which is given by Tieck, in his Deutsches Theater, under the title of "Comedia von der Schönen Sidea," which Tieck conceived to be a translation from an early English Drama, from which Shakspeare derived his idea of the *Tempest*. Mr. Thoms thinks this proved by the points of resemblance between the two plays, which he conceives to be far too striking and peculiar to be the result of accident. Ayer appears to have written his drama, which is in the style of Hans Sachs, at the close of the 16th or beginning of the 17th century, and he has other plays which are derived from old English sources; as "der Schöne Phœnicia," resembling in the plot "Much Ado about Nothing," and "The King of Cyprus and the King of France," resembling "The Dumb Knight" of Lewis Muchin.

It must be confessed, however, that we have hitherto nothing like proof of the origin of the plot of Shakspeare's Magic Creation, and it is but reasonable to hope that at some future period the novel, which has so confidently been said to exist, may be recovered.

The *Tempest* was first printed in the folio of 1623.

S. W. S.

PERSONS REPRESENTED .

ALONSO, *King of Naples.*
SEBASTIAN, *his Brother.*
PROSPERO, *the rightful Duke of Milan.*
ANTONIO, *his Brother; the usurping Duke of Milan.*
FERDINAND, *Son to the King of Naples.*
GONZALO, *the honest old Counsellor of Naples*
ADRIAN, } *Lords.*
FRANCISCO, }
CALIBAN, *a savage and deformed Slave.*
TRINCULO, *a Jester.*
STEPHANO, *a drunken Butler.*
Master of a Ship, Boatswain, and Mariners.

MIRANDA, *Daughter to Prospero.*

ARIEL, *an airy Spirit*
IRIS,
CERES,
JUNO,
Nymphs,
Reapers, } *Spirits.*

Other Spirits attending on Prospero.

SCENE, *the Sea, with a Ship; afterwards an uninhabited Island.*

¹ From the Folio Edition of 1623.



TEMPEST

ACT I.

SCENE I. *On a Ship at Sea. A Storm, with Thunder and Lightning.*

Enter a Shipmaster and a Boatswain.

Master.

BOATSWAIN,—
Boats. Here, master: what cheer?
Mast. Good: Speak to the mariners: fall
to't yarely¹, or we run ourselves aground:
bestir, bestir. [*Exit.*]

Enter Mariners.

Boats. Heigh, my hearts! cheerly, cheerly, my hearts!
yare, yare: Take in the top-sail; Tend to the master's whistle.—Blow till thou burst thy wind, if room
enough!

Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, FERDINAND, GONZALO, and others.

Alon. Good Boatswain, have care. Where's the master?
Play the men².

¹ That is, readily, nimbly.

² That is, act with spirit, behave like men. Thus Baref in his

Boats. I pray now, keep below.

Ant. Where is the master, boatswain?

Boats. Do you not hear him? You mar our labour! keep your cabins: you do assist the storm.

Gon. Nay, good, be patient.

Boats. When the sea is. Hence! What care these roarers for the name of king? To cabin: silence: trouble us not.

Gon. Good; yet remember whom thou hast aboard.

Boats. None that I more love than myself. You are a counsellor; if you can command these elements to silence, and work the peace of the present³, we will not hand a rope more; use your authority. If you cannot, give thanks you have lived so long, and make yourself ready in your cabin for the mischance of the hour, if it so hap.—Cheerly, good hearts!—Out of our way, I say. [Exit.

Gon. I have great comfort from this fellow: methinks, he hath no drowning mark upon him; his complexion is perfect gallows. Stand fast good Fate to his hanging! make the rope of his destiny our cable, for our own doth little advantage! If he be not born to be hanged, our case is miserable.

[*Exeunt.*

Re-enter Boatswain.

oats. Down with the top-mast; yare; lower, r. Bring her to Try with main course⁴. [*A cry*

earie: “To play the man, or to show himself a valiant man any matter. Se virum præbere.” P. 399.

“Viceroy and peers of Turkey play the men.”

Tamberlaine, 1590.

³ The present instant.

⁴ Smith's Sea Grammar, 1627, 4to. under the article How le a Ship in a storme:—“Let us lie as *Trie with our maine hat is*, to hale the tacke aboord, the sheet close aft, the up, and the helm tied close aboord.”

within.] A plague upon this howling! they are louder than the weather, or our office.—

Re-enter SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, and GONZALO.

*Yet again! what do you here? Shall we give o'er,
and drown? Have you a mind to sink?*

Seb. A pox o' your throat! you bawling, blasphemous, uncharitable dog!

Boats. Work you, then.

Ant. Hang, cur, hang! you whoreson, insolent noise-maker, we are less afraid to be drowned than thou art.

Gon. I'll warrant him for drowning; though the ship were no stronger than a nut-shell, and as leaky as an unstanch'd wench.

Boats. Lay her a-hold, a-hold! set her two courses⁵; off to sea again; lay her off.

Enter Mariners, wet.

Mar. All lost! to prayers, to prayers! all lost!

[Exeunt.

Boats. What, must our mouths be cold?

Gon. The king and prince at prayers! let us assist them,

For our case is as theirs.

Seb. I am out of patience.

Ant. We are merely⁶ cheated of our lives by drunkards.—

This wide-chapp'd rascal;—Would, thou might'st lie drowning,

The washing of ten tides!

Gon. He'll be hanged yet,

⁵ The *courses* are the main sail and fore sail. To lay a ship *a-hold*, is to bring her to lie as near the wind as she can, in order to keep clear of the land and get her out to sea.

⁶ Merely, absolutely, entirely; Merē, Lat.

Though every drop of water swear against it,
And gape at wid'st to glut⁷ him.

[*A confused Noise within.*] Mercy on us!—

We split, we split!—Farewell my wife and children!

—Farewell, brother!—We split, we split, we split.—

Ant. Let's all sink with the king.

[*Exit.*

Seb. Let's take leave of him.

[*Exit.*

Gon. Now would I give a thousand furlongs of sea for an acre of barren ground; ling⁸, heath, broom, furze, any thing: The wills above be done! but I would fain die a dry death.

[*Exit.*

SCENE II. *The Island: before the Cell of Prospero.*

Enter PROSPERO and MIRANDA.

Mira. If by your art, my dearest father, you have Put the wild waters in this roar, allay them. The sky, it seems, would pour down stinking⁹ pitch, But that the sea, mounting to the welkin's cheek, Dashes the fire out. O! I have suffer'd With those that I saw suffer: a brave vessel, Who had no doubt some noble creatures in her, Dash'd all to pieces. O! the cry did knock Against my very heart. Poor souls! they perish'd. Had I been any god of power, I would Have sunk the sea within the earth, or e'er¹

⁷ To englut, to swallow him.

⁸ The old copy reads, *long* heath, *brown* furze, &c. The correction was made by Sir Thomas Hanmer, who, in his edition, substituted the words *ling* and *broom*.

⁹ The folios have *stinking*, probably a press error. I should prefer to read *flaming*, the words, as written or printed with the ing fl and ft, as in the old copies, are easily confounded. The sequent *dashes the fire out* may serve to confirm this con-

ture.
i. e. or ever, ere ever; signifying, in modern English, *sooner at any time*. *Or* is a contraction of *ere*, *a&n;* Sax. prius, *an-quam*, *priusquam*; *ever*, from *a&fne*, *aliquando*, *unquam*.

It should the good ship so have swallowed, and
The fraughting souls within her.

Pro. Be collected :
No more amazement : tell your piteous heart,
There's no harm done.

Mira. O, woe the day !
Pro. No harm.
I have done nothing but in care of thee,
(Of thee, my dear one ! thee, my daughter !) who
Art ignorant of what thou art, nought knowing
Of whence I am ; nor that I am more better²
Than Prospero, master of a full poor cell,
And thy no greater father.

Mira. More to know
Did never meddle³ with my thoughts.

Pro. 'Tis time
I should inform thee further. Lend thy hand,
And pluck my magic garment from me.—So :

[Lays down his mantle.
Lie there, my art⁴.—Wipe thou thine eyes ; have
comfort.
The direful spectacle of the wrack⁵, which touch'd
The very virtue of compassion in thee,
I have with such precision in mine art

² The double comparative is in frequent use among our elder writers.

³ To meddle, is to mix, or interfere with.

⁴ Lord Burleigh, when he put off his gown at night, used to say " Lie there, Lord Treasurer."—Fuller's *Holy State*, p. 257.

⁵ Shakspeare, and most of his cotemporaries, wrote *wrack* for *wreck*, and there seems to be no reason for change, as the euphony of the verse would suffer by it. In Tarquin and Lucrece we have :

O, this dread night, would'st thou one hour come back
I could prevent this storm, and shun thy *wrack*.

I entirely coincide with Mr. Hunter in this suggestion. He has also shown that the poet wrote *precision* instead of *provision*, in a subsequent line. Thus anticipating the correction in Mr. Collier's folio.

So safely order'd, that there is no soul—
 No, not so much perdition as a hair,
 Betid to any creature in the vessel
 Which thou heard'st cry, which thou saw'st sink. Sit
 down ;
 For thou must now know further.

Mira. You have often
 Begun to tell me what I am ; but stopp'd,
 And left me to a bootless inquisition ;
 Concluding, ‘*Stay, not yet.*’—

Pro. The hour's now come ;
 The very minute bids thee ope thine ear ;
 Obey, and be attentive. Can'st thou remember
 A time before we came unto this cell ?
 I do not think thou can'st ; for then thou wast not
 Out⁶ three years old.

Mira. Certainly, sir, I can.
Pro. By what ? by any other house, or person ?
 Of any thing the image, tell me, that
 Hath kept with thy remembrance.

Mira. 'Tis far off ;
 And rather like a dream than an assurance
 That my remembrance warrants. Had I not
 Four or five women once, that tended me ?

Pro. Thou had'st, and more, Miranda. But how is it,
 That this lives in thy mind ? What seest thou else
 In the dark backward and abysm⁷ of time ?
 If thou remember'st aught ere thou cam'st here,
 How thou cam'st here, thou may'st.

Mira. But that I do not.
Pro. Twelve year since, Miranda, twelve year
 since,

⁶ *Out* is used for *entirely, quite.* Thus in Act iv : “ And be a
 right out.”

⁷ *Abyss* was the old mode of spelling *abyss* ; from its French
 final *abisme*.

Thy father was the duke of Milan, and
A prince of power.

Mira. Sir, are not you my father?

Pro. Thy mother was a piece of virtue, and
She said thou wast my daughter; and thy father
Was duke of Milan; thou⁸ his only heir
And princess—no worse issued.

Mira. O, the heavens!
What foul play had we, that we came from thence?
Or blessed was't we did?

Pro. Both, both, my girl:
By foul play, as thou say'st, were we heav'd thence;
But blessedly holp hither.

Mira. O! my heart bleeds
To think of the teen⁹ that I have turn'd you to,
Which is from my remembrance. Please you, farther.

Pro. My brother, and thy uncle, call'd Antonio—
I pray thee, mark me,—that a brother should
Be so perfidious!—he whom, next thyself,
Of all the world I lov'd, and to him put
The manage of my state; as, at that time,
Through¹⁰ all the seigniories it was the first,
And Prospero the prime duke; (being so reputed
In dignity,) and, for the liberal arts,
Without a parallel: those being all my study,
The government I cast upon my brother,

⁸ The old copy reads

and thy father
Was duke of Milan; and his only heir, &c.

Nothing is more common than for the compositor's eye to take by mistake a wrong word occurring in a preceding line; *and* has here been so taken instead of *thou*. In the second folio, in the same page and column, *compassion* has been so taken instead of the true word *precision*. This note was written in 1851

⁹ *Teen* is grief, sorrow.

¹⁰ The second folio has, *Though*, which, if read as an elision for *Though of*, as Mr. Hunter proposes, would give better sense. Or we may suppose *Throughout* to be intended.

And to my state grew stranger, being transported,
And rapt in secret studies. Thy false uncle—
Dost thou attend me?

Mira.

Sir, most heedfully.

Pro. Being once perfected how to grant suits,
How to deny them; whom to advance, and whom
To trash¹¹ for overtopping; new created
The creatures that were mine, I say, or chang'd them—
Or else new form'd them: having both the key
Of officer and office, set all hearts i' th' state
To what tune pleas'd his ear; that now he was
The ivy, which had hid my princely trunk,
And suck'd my verdure out on't.—Thou attend'st not—

Mira. O good sir! I do.

Pro.

I pray thee, mark me.

¹¹ To trash means to check the pace or progress of any one. The term is said to be still in use among sportsmen in the North, and signifies to correct a dog for misbehaviour in pursuing the game; or overtopping or outrunning the rest of the pack. Trashes are clogs strapped round the neck of a dog to prevent his overspeed. Todd has given four instances from Hammond's works of the word in this sense. "Clog and trash"—"encumber and trash"—"to trash or overslow"—and "foreslowed and trashed."

There was another word of the same kind used in Falconry (from whence Shakspeare very frequently draws his similes); "Trassing is when a hawk raises aloft any fowl, and soaring with it, at length descends therewith to the ground." — *Dictionary Rusticum*, 1704. Probably this term is used by Chapman in his address to the reader prefixed to his translation of Homer.

"That whosoever muse dares use her wing
When his muse flies she will be trass't by his,
And show as if a Bernacle should spring
Beneath an Eagle."

There is also a passage in the Bonduca of Beaumont and Fletcher, wherein Caratach says:

"I fled too,

But not so fast; your jewel had been lost then,
Young Hengo there, he trash't me, Nennius."

a. checked or stopped my flight.

The Editor has thought himself justified in changing trace ush in Othello. Act ii. Sc. I. See note thereon, vol. x., p. 53.

I thus neglecting worldly ends, all dedicate¹²
 To closeness, and the bettering of my mind
 With that, which, but by being so retir'd,
 O'er-priz'd all popular rate, in my false brother
 Awak'd an evil nature : and my trust,
 Like a good parent¹³, did beget of him
 A falsehood, in its contrary as great
 As my trust was ; which had, indeed, no limit,
 A confidence sans bound. He being thus lorded,
 Not only with what my revenue yielded,
 But what my power might else exact,—like one,
 Who having, unto truth¹⁴, by telling of it,
 Made such a sinner of his memory,
 To credit his own lie,—he did believe
 He was indeed the duke ; out of the substitution,
 And executing the outward face of royalty,
 With all prerogative :—Hence his ambition
 Growing,—Dost thou hear ?

Mira. Your tale, sir, would cure deafness.

Pro. To have no screen between this part he play'd
 And him he play'd it for, he needs will be
 Absolute Milan. Me, poor man !—my library
 Was dukedom large enough ; of temporal royalties
 He thinks me now incapable : confederates
 (So dry he was for sway) with the king of Naples,
 To give him annual tribute, do him homage ;

¹² The old copy has, *dedicated*.

¹³ Alluding to the observation that a father above the common
 rate of men has generally a son below it. *Heroum filii noxae*.

¹⁴ *Unto truth.* The old copy reads *into truth*. The correction
 is by Warburton. The meaning is, ‘Who having made his
 memory such a sinner to truth as to credit his own lie.’ Shad-
 well, in his preface to the *Sullen Lovers*, has the following pas-
 sage which may serve to show that the idea was familiar at least
 to him. “I freely confess my theft, and am ashamed on't, tho'
 I have the example of some that never wrote a play without
 stealing most of it, and (like men that lye so long, till they believe
 themselves,) at length by continual thieving reckon their stolen
 vods their own too.”

Subject his coronet to his crown, and bend
The dukedom, yet unbow'd, (alas, poor Milan!)
To much ignoble stooping.

Mira.

O the heavens!

Pro. Mark his condition, and the event; then tell me,
If this might be a brother.

Mira.

I should sin

To think but¹⁵ nobly of my grandmother:
Good wombs have borne bad sons.

Pro.

Now the condition.

This king of Naples, being an enemy
To me inveterate, hearkens my brother's suit;
Which was, that he in lieu¹⁶ o' the premises,—
Of homage, and I know not how much tribute,—
Should presently extirpate me and mine
Out of the dukedom; and confer fair Milan,
With all the honours, on my brother: Whereon,
A treacherous army levied, one mid-night
Fated to the purpose,¹⁷ did Antonio open
The gates of Milan; and, i' the dead of darkness,
The ministers for the purpose hurried thence

¹⁵ *But* is here used in its exceptive sense of *be out*, i. e. otherwise than. Tooke, in his *Diversions of Purley*, has clearly shown that we use one word, *But*, in modern English, for two words Böt and Büt, originally (in the Anglo Saxon) very different in signification, though (by repeated abbreviation and corruption) approaching in sound. Böt is the imperative of the A. S. *Botan* to *boot*. Büt is the imperative of the A. S. *Be-utan*, to *be out*. By this means all the seemingly anomalous uses of *But* may be explained; I must however content myself with referring the reader to the *Diversions of Purley*, vol. i. p. 190. Merely remarking that *BUT* (as distinguished from *Bot*) and *BE-OUT* have exactly the same meaning, viz. in modern English, *except*.

¹⁶ In *lieu* of the premises; that is, "in consideration of the premises,—&c." This seems to us a strange use of this French word, yet it was not then unusual.

"But takes their oaths *in lieu* of her assistance."

Beaumont and Fletcher's Prophets.

¹⁷ The corrector of Mr. Collier's folio substitutes practice.

Me, and thy crying self.

Mira. Alack, for pity !
I, not rememb'ring how I cried out then,
Will cry it o'er again ; it is a hint¹⁸,
That wrings mine eyes to't.

Pro. Hear a little further,
And then I'll bring thee to the present business
Which now's upon us ; without the which, this story
Were most impertinent.

Mira. Wherefore did they not
That hour destroy us ?

Pro. Well demanded, wench ;
My tale provokes that question. Dear, they durst not,
So dear the love my people bore me : nor set
A mark so bloody on the business ; but
With colours fairer painted their foul ends.
In few, they hurried us aboard a bark ;
Bore us some leagues to sea ; where they prepar'd
A rotten carcass of a boat¹⁹, not rigg'd,
Nor tackle, sail, nor mast ; the very rats
Instinctively have quit²⁰ it ; there they hoist us,
To cry to the sea that roar'd to us ; to sigh
To the winds, whose pity, sighing back again,
Did us but loving wrong.

Mira. Alack ! what trouble
Was I then to you !

Pro. O ! a cherubim
Thou wast, that did preserve me ! Thou didst smile,
Infused with a fortitude from heaven,

¹⁸ Hint is here for cause or subject suggesting. Thus in a future passage we have :—“ Our hint of woe.”

¹⁹ The old editions read—butt. Rowe made the necessary correction. To think of ‘the CARCASS of a BUTT not RIGG'D, without tackle, sail, or mast, is surely absurd. Yet the two last Editors have restored it ! Whoever looks at the whole context with attention must see the necessity of reading boat.

²⁰ Quit was commonly used for quitted.

When I have deck'd²¹ the sea with drops full salt ;
 Under my burden groan'd ; which rais'd in me
 An undergoing stomach, to bear up
 Against what should ensue.

Mira. How came we ashore ?

Pro. By Providence divine,
 Some food we had, and some fresh water, that
 A noble Neapolitan, Gonzalo,
 Out of his charity, (who being then appointed
 Master of this design,) did give us ; with
 Rich garments, linens, stuffs, and necessaries,
 Which since have steaded much ; so, of his gentleness,
 Knowing I lov'd my books, he furnish'd me,
 From mine own library, with volumes that
 I prize above my dukedom.

Mira. 'Would I might
 But ever see that man !

Pro. [Puts on his robe] Now I arise :—
 Sit still, and hear the last of our sea-sorrow.
 Here in this island we arriv'd ; and here
 Have I, thy school-master, made thee more profit
 Than other princes can, that have more time
 For vainer hours, and tutors not so careful.

Mira. Heavens thank you for't ! And now, I pray
 you, sir,
 (For still 'tis beating in my mind,) your reason
 For raising this sea-storm ?

Pro. Know thus far forth.—
 By accident most strange, bountiful fortune,
 Now my dear lady, hath mine enemies
 Brought to this shore : and by my prescience
 I find my zenith doth depend upon
 A most auspicious star ; whose influence
 If now I court not, but omit, my fortunes,

²¹ To deck, or deg, is still used in the northern counties for to
 sprinkle. * The old copy has *princesse*.

ever after droop.—Here cease more questions ;
I art inclin'd to sleep ; 'tis a good dulness,
give it way ;—I know thou can'st not choose.—

[MIRANDA *sleeps.*

e away, servant, come : I am ready now ;
coach, my Ariel ; come.

Enter ARIEL.

i. All hail, great master ! grave sir, hail ! I come
nswer thy best pleasure ; be't to fly,
wim, to dive into the fire, to ride
he curl'd clouds²² : to thy strong bidding, task
l, and all his quality²³.

"o. Hast thou, spirit,
orm'd to point²⁴ the tempest that I bade thee ?

i. To every article.

irded the king's ship ; now on the beak²⁵,
in the waist, the deck, in every cabin,
m'd amazement : Sometimes, I'd divide,

This is imitated in Fletcher's *Faithful Shepherdess*:

“ — tell me, sweetest,
What new service now is meetest
For the satyre ; shall I stray
In the middle air, and stay
The sailing racket, or nimbly take
Hold by the moon, and gently make
Suit to the pale queen of night,
For a beame to give thee light ?
Shall I dive into the sea,
And bring thee coral, making way
Through the rising waves, &c.”

Ariel's *quality* is not his confederates, but the *powers of his*
as a spirit, his *qualification in sprighting*.
i. e. to the minutest article, literally from the French *à point*,
the Chances,

“ — are you all fit ?
To point, Sir.”

The beak was a strong pointed body at the head of ancient
it is used here for the forecastle or boltsprit. The waist
art between the quarter-deck and the forecastle.

And burn in many places; on the top-mast,
The yards, and bowsprit, would I flame distinctly,
Then meet, and join. Jove's lightnings, the precursors
O' the dreadful thunder-claps, more momentary
And sight-out-running were not: The fire, and cracks
Of sulphurous roaring, the most mighty Neptune
Seem to besiege, and make his bold waves tremble,
Yea, his dread trident shake.

Pro. My brave spirit!
Who was so firm, so constant, that this coil²⁶
Would not infect his reason?

Ari. Not a sou.
But felt a fever of the mad, and play'd
Some tricks of desperation: All, but mariners,
Plung'd in the foaming brine, and quit the vessel,
Then all a-fire with me: the king's son, Ferdinand,
With hair up-staring (then like reeds, not hair,)
Was the first man that leap'd; cried, *Hell is empty,*
And all the devils are here.

Pro. Why, that's my spirit!
But was not this nigh shore?

Ari. Close by, my master.
Pro. But are they, Ariel, safe?
Ari. Not a hair perish'd;
On their sustaining garments not a blemish,
But fresher than before: and as thou bad'st me,
In troops I have dispers'd them 'bout the isle:
The king's son have I landed by himself;
Whom I left cooling of the air with sighs,
In an odd angle of the isle, and sitting,
His arms in this sad knot.

Pro. Of the king's ship,
The mariners, say, how thou hast dispos'd,
And all the rest o' the fleet?

Ari. Safely in harbour
Is the king's ship; in the deep nook, where once

²⁶ Coil is bustle, tumult.

Thou call'dst me up at midnight to fetch dew
 From the still-vex'd Bermoothes²⁷, there she's hid :
 The mariners all under hatches stow'd ;
 Who²⁸, with a charm join'd to their suffer'd labour,
 I have left asleep : and for the rest o' the fleet,
 Which I dispers'd, they all have met again ;
 And are upon the Mediterranean flote²⁹,
 Bound sadly home for Naples ;
 Supposing that they saw the king's ship wrack'd,
 And his great person perish.

Pro. Ariel, thy charge
 Exactly is perform'd ; but there's more work :
 What is the time o' the day ?

Ari. Past the mid season.

Pro. At least two glasses : the time 'twixt six and
 now

Must by us both be spent most preciously.

Ari. Is there more toil ? since thou dost give me
 pains,

Let me remember thee what thou hast promis'd,
 Which is not yet perform'd me.

Pro. How now ? moody ?
 What is't thou can'st demand ?

Ari. My liberty.

Pro. Before the time be out ? no more.

²⁷ The epithet here applied to the Bermudas will be best understood by those who have seen the chafing of the sea over the rugged rocks by which they are surrounded, and which renders access to them so difficult. It was then the current opinion that Bermudas was inhabited by *monsters* and *devils*. Setebos, the God of Caliban's dam, was an American devil, worshiped by the giants of Patagonia.

²⁸ This is the reading of the old copy. Shakspeare, with many of his most distinguished cotemporaries, wrote *who* and *whom* indifferently

²⁹ i. e. the waves, or the sea. *Flota, SAX. Flot, FR.* Mr. Collier's folio substitutes "And *all* upon the Mediterranean *float*." The words in the preceding line "they *all* have met again," make the alteration very doubtful, were it at all necessary.

Ari. I pray thee
Remember, I have done thee worthy service ;
Told thee no lies, made no mistakings, serv'd
Without or grudge or grumblings. Thou didst promise
To bate me a full year.

Pro. Dost thou forget
From what a torment I did free thee ?

Ari. No.

Pro. Thou dost ; and think'st it much, to tread
the ooze
Of the salt deep ;—
To run upon the sharp wind of the north ;
To do me business in the veins o' the earth,
When it is bak'd with frost.

Ari. I do not, sir.

Pro. Thou liest, malignant thing ! Hast thou forgot
The foul witch, Sycorax, who, with age and envy,
Was grown into a hoop ? hast thou forgot her ?

Ari. No, sir.

Pro. Thou hast : where was she born ?
 speak ; tell me.

Ari. Sir, in Argier ³⁰.

Pro. O, was she so ? I must,
Once in a month, recount what thou hast been,
Which thou forget'st. This damn'd witch, Sycorax,
For mischiefs manifold, and sorceries terrible
To enter human hearing, from Argier,
Thou know'st, was banish'd ; for one thing she did,
They would not take her life : Is not this true ?

Ari. Ay, sir.

Pro. This blue-ey'd hag was hither brought with
child,

And here was left by the sailors : Thou, my slave,
As thou report'st thyself, wast then her servant :
And, for thou wast a spirit too delicate

³⁰ The old English name of Algiers.

To act her earthy and abhor'd commands,
Refusing her grand hests³¹, she did confine thee,
By help of her more potent ministers,
And in her most unmitigable rage,
Into a cloven pine ; within which rift
Imprison'd, thou didst painfully remain
A dozen years ; within which space she died,
And left thee there ; where thou didst vent thy groans,
As fast as mill-wheels strike. Then was this island,
(Save for the son that she did litter here,
A freckled whelp, hag-born) not honour'd with
A human shape.

Ari. Yes ; Caliban her son.

Pro. Dull thing, I say so ; he, that Caliban,
Whom now I keep in service. Thou best know'st
What torment I did find thee in : thy groans.
Did make wolves howl, and penetrate the breasts
Of ever-angry bears : it was a torment
To lay upon the damn'd which Sycorax
Could not again undo ; it was mine art,
When I arriv'd, and heard thee, that made gape
The pine, and let thee out.

Ari. I thank thee, master.

Pro. If thou more murmur'st, I will rend an oak,
And peg thee in his knotty entrails, till
Thou hast howl'd away twelve winters.

Ari. Pardon, master :
I will be correspondent to command,
And do my spriting gently.

Pro. Do so ; and after two days
I will discharge thee.

Ari. That's my noble master !
What shall I do ? say what ? what shall I do ?
Pro. Go, make thyself like to a nymph o' th' sea ;
be subject

³¹ *Behests, commands.*

To no sight but thine and mine ; invisible³²
 To every eyeball else. Go, take this shape,
 And hither come in't : go ; hence, with diligence.

[*Exit ARIEL.*

Awake, dear heart, awake ! thou hast slept well ;
 Awake !

Mira. [awaking] The strangeness of your story put
 Heaviness in me.

Pro. Shake it off. Come on ;
 We'll visit Caliban, my slave, who never
 Yields us kind answer.

Mira. 'Tis a villain, sir,
 I do not love to look on.

Pro. But, as 'tis,
 We cannot miss³³ him : he does make our fire,
 Fetch in our wood ; and serves in offices
 That profit us. What ho ! slave ! Caliban !
 Thou earth, thou ! speak.

Cal. [Within.] There's wood enough within.
Pro. Come forth, I say ; there's other business for
 thee :
 Come, thou tortoise ! when³⁴ ?

Re-enter ARIEL, like a Water-nymph.
 Fine apparition ! My quaint³⁵ Ariel,
 Hark in thine ear.

³² Steevens read this passage thus :

Go make thyself like to a nymph o' the sea,
 Be subject to no sight but mine, invisible
 To every eyeball else.

The word *to* is in the old copy, and the omission of the words *thine and* makes the whole more metrical. Indeed there seems to be no reason for making Ariel visible to his own eye ! In my corrected copy of the second folio, the words *thine and* are erased.

³³ i. e. we cannot do without him. The phrase is still common in the midland counties.

³⁴ This is a common expression of impatience. Vide note on King Richard II. Act i. Scene I.

³⁵ Quaint here means brisk, spruce, dexterous, from the French *cointe*.

Ari. My lord, it shall be done. [*Exit.*

Pro. Thou poisonous slave, got by the devil himself
Upon thy wicked dam, come forth !

Enter CALIBAN.

Cal. As wicked dew as e'er my mother brush'd
With raven's feather from unwholesome fen
Drop on you both ! a south-west blow on ye ³⁶,
And blister you all o'er !

Pro. For this, be sure, to-night thou shalt have
cramps,
Side-stitches that shall pen thy breath up ; urchins ³⁷
Shall, for that vast ³⁸ of night that they may work
All exercise on thee : thou shalt be pinch'd
As thick as honey-comb, each pinch more stinging
Than bees that made them.

Cal. I must eat my dinner.
This island's mine, by Sycorax my mother,
Which thou tak'st from me. When thou camest first,
Thou strok'dst me, and mad'st much of me ; would'st
give me

³⁶ A book with which Shakspeare appears to have been familiar, tells us, "This *southern wind* is hot and moist. *Southern winds* corrupt and destroy, they heat and maketh men fall into the sickness." *Batman upon Bartholome—De Proprietatibus Rerum*, Lib. xi. c. 3.

³⁷ *Urchins* were fairies of a particular class. Hedgehogs were also called *urchins*; and it is probable that the sprites were so named, because they were of a mischievous kind, the *urchin* being anciently deemed a very noxious animal. Shakspeare again mentions these fairy beings in *The Merry Wives of Windsor*.

"Like urchins, ouphes, and fairies green and white."
In the phrase still current, "a little urchin," the idea of the fairy remains.

³⁸ That *vast* of night is that *space* of night. So in *Hamlet*:

"In the dead *waist* and middle of the night," *nox vasta*, midnight, when all things are quiet and still, making the world appear one great *uninhabited waste*. In the pneumatology of *ancient times* visionary beings had different allotments of time *suitable to the variety and nature of their agency*.

Water with berries in't ; and teach me how
To name the bigger light, and how the less,
That burn by day and night : and then I lov'd thee,
And shew'd thee all the qualities o' the isle,
The fresh springs, brine pits, barren place, and fertile ;
Cursed be I that I did so !—All the charms
Of Sycorax, toads, beetles, bats, light on you !
For I am all the subjects that you have,
Which first was mine own king : and here you sty me
In this hard rock, whilsts you do keep from me
The rest of the island.

Pro. Thou most lying slave,
Whom stripes may move, not kindness : I have us'd
thee,
Filth as thou art, with human care ; and lodg'd thee
In mine own cell, till thou didst seek to violate
The honour of my child.

Cal. O ho, O ho !—would it had been done !
Thou didst prevent me ; I had peopled else
This isle with Calibans.

Pro. Abhorred slave ;
Which any print of goodness will not take,
Being capable of all ill ! I pitied thee,
Took pains to make thee speak, taught thee each hour
One thing or other ; when thou didst not, savage,
Know thine own meaning, but wouldst gabble like
A thing most brutish, I endow'd thy purposes
With words that made them known : But thy viler race,
Though thou didst learn, had that in't which good
natures

Could not abide to be with ; therefore wast thou
Deservedly confin'd into this rock,
Who hadst deserv'd more than a prison.

Cal. You taught me language ; and my profit on't
I know how to curse : The red plague rid you,
learning me your language !

Pro. Hag-seed, hence !
 Fetch us in fuel ; and be quick, thou'rt best,
 To answer other business. Shrug'st thou, malice ?
 If thou neglect'st, or dost unwillingly
 What I command, I'll rack thee with old cramps ;
 Fill all thy bones with aches³⁹ : make thee roar,
 That beasts shall tremble at thy din !

Cal. No, 'pray thee !—
 I must obey : his art is of such power, [Aside.
 I would control my dam's god, Setebos⁴⁰,
 And make a vassal of him.

Pro. So, slave ; hence !
 [Exit CALIBAN.

Re-enter ARIEL invisible, playing and singing ;
FERDINAND following him.

ARIEL'S SONG.
Come unto these yellow sands,
And then take hands :
Court'sied when you have, and kiss'd,
The wild waves whist⁴¹,

³⁹ The word *aches* is evidently a dissyllable here and in two passages of Timon of Athens. The reader may remember the senseless clamour that was raised against Kemble for his adherence to the text of Shakspeare in thus pronouncing it as the measure requires. “*Ake*,” says Baret in his Alvearie, “is the verb of this substantive *Ache*, ch being turned into k.” And that ache was pronounced in the same way as the letter *h* is placed beyond doubt by the passage in Much Ado about Nothing, in which Margaret asks Beatrice for what she cries Heigh ho, and she answers for an *h*. i. e. *ache*. See the Epigram of Heywood adduced in illustration of that passage. This orthography and pronunciation continued even to the times of Butler and Swift. It would be easy to produce numerous instances.

⁴⁰ The giants, when they found themselves fettered, “roared like bulls, and cried upon their great devill *Setebos* to help them.” —*Eden's Hist. of Travayle*, 1577, p. 434.

⁴¹ i. e. when you have courtsied and kissed the wild waves into silence, foot it, &c. It should be remembered that Ariel is invoking his fellow sprites.

*Foot it feately here and there ;
And, sweet sprites, the burden bear.*

Hark, hark !

Bur. Bowgh, wowgh. [dispersedly⁴²

The watch-dogs bark :

Bur. Bowgh, wowgh. [dispersedly.

Hark, hark ! I hear

The strain of strutting chanticleere

Cry, Cock-a-doodle-doo.

Fer. Where should this music be ? i' the air, or
the earth ?

It sounds no more ;—and sure, it waits upon
Some god of the island. Sitting on a bank,
Weeping again the king my father's wrack,
This music crept by me upon the waters ;
Allaying both their fury, and my passion,
With its sweet air : thence I have follow'd it,
Or it hath drawn me rather :—But 'tis gone.
No, it begins again.

ARIEL sings.

Full fathom five thy father lies ;

Of his bones are coral made ;

Those are pearls that were his eyes :

Nothing of him that doth fade,

But doth suffer a sea-change

Into something rich and strange.

Sea-nymphs hourly ring his knell :

[Burden, ding-dong.

Hark ! now I hear them,—ding-dong, bell.

Fer. The ditty does remember my drown'd father.—
There is no mortal business, nor no sound

dispersedly. This stage direction is in the old copy. It
means that the burden *Bowgh, wowgh*, was to be heard
several places behind the scene.

That the earth owes⁴³ :—I hear it now above me.

Pro. The fringed curtains of thine eye advance,
And say, what thou seest yond'.

Mira. What is't? a spirit?
Lord, how it looks about! Believe me, sir,
It carries a brave form:—But 'tis a spirit.

Pro. No, wench; it eats and sleeps, and hath
such senses
As we have, such: This gallant, which thou seest,
Was in the wrack; and but he's something stain'd
With grief, that's beauty's canker, thou mightst call
him

A goodly person: he hath lost his fellows,
And strays about to find them.

Mira. I might call him
A thing divine; for nothing natural
I ever saw so noble.

Pro. It goes on, I see, [Aside.
As my soul prompts it.—Spirit, fine Spirit! I'll free
thee

Within two days for this.

Fer. Most sure, the goddess
On whom these airs attend!—Vouchsafe, my prayer
May know, if you remain upon this island;
And that you will some good instruction give,
How I may bear me here: My prime request,
Which I do last pronounce, is, O you wonder!
If you be maid, or no?

Mira. No wonder, sir;
But, certainly a maid.

Fer. My language! heavens!—
I am the best of them that speak this speech,
Were I but where 'tis spoken.

Pro. How! the best?

⁴³ i. e. owns. To owe was to possess or appertain to, in ancient language.

What wert thou, if the king of Naples heard thee?

Fer. A single thing, as I am now, that wonders
To hear thee speak of Naples. He does hear me;
And, that he does, I weep: myself am Naples;
Who with mine eyes, ne'er since at ebb, beheld
The king my father wrack'd.

Mira.

Alack, for mercy!

Fer. Yes, faith, and all his lords; the duke of Milan,
And his brave son, being twain.

Pro. The duke of Milan,
And his more braver daughter, could control ⁴⁴ thee,
If now 'twere fit to do't:—At the first sight [Aside.
They have chang'd eyes.—Delicate Ariel,
I'll set thee free for this!—[To FERD.] A word,
good sir;

I fear, you have done yourself some wrong ⁴⁵: a word.

Mira. Why speaks my father so ungently? This
Is the third man that e'er I saw; the first
That e'er I sighed for: pity move my father
To be inclin'd my way!

Fer. O, if a virgin,
And your affection not gone forth, I'll make you
The queen of Naples.

Pro. Soft, sir; one word more.—
They are both in either's powers: but this swift business
I must uneasy make, lest too light winning [Aside.
Make the prize light.—One word more; I charge thee,
That thou attend me: thou dost here usurp
The name thou ow'st not; and hast put thyself
Upon this island, as a spy, to win it
From me, the lord on't.

⁴⁴ To *control* here signifies to *confute*, to contradict unanswerably. The ancient meaning of *control* was to *check* or exhibit a *contrary account*, from the old French *contre-roller*.

⁴⁵ “— you have done yourself some wrong;” that is spoken
school. Thus in the Merry Wives of Windsor:

“This is not well, master Ford, this wrongs you.”

No, as I am a man.

z. There's nothing ill can dwell in such a temple:
ill spirit have so fair a house,
hings will strive to dwell with't.

Follow me.—[To FERD.

not you for him ; he's a traitor.—Come.
nacle thy neck and feet together ;
ter shalt thou drink, thy food shall be
esh-brook muscles, wither'd roots, and husks,
in the acorn cradled : Follow.

No ;

resist such entertainment, till
enemy has more power.

[He draws, and is charmed from moving.

z. O dear father,
not too rash a trial of him, for
entle, and not fearful ⁴⁶.

What, I say,
ot my tutor !—Put thy sword up, traitor ;
nak'st a show, but dar'st not strike, thy con-
science
ossess'd with guilt : come from thy ward ;
can here disarm thee with this stick,
ake thy weapon drop.

z. Beseech you, father !
Hence ; hang not on my garments.

a. Sir, have pity ;

urful was sometimes used in the sense of *formidable*, *ter-
riful*, like the French *épouvantable*; as may be seen by
ig Cotgrave or any of our old Dictionaries. Shakespeare
lways uses it in this sense. In K. Henry VI. Act iii. Sc.
ighty and a *fearful* head they are." He has also *fear-*
fearful bravery; &c. &c. The verb to *fear* is most
ly used for to *fright*, to *terrify*, to *make afraid*. Mr. Gif-
marks, "as a proof how little our old dramatists were
ed at the Restoration, that Dryden censures Jonson for
er use of this word, the sense of which he altogether

I'll be his surety.

Pro. Silence : one word more
Shall make me chide thee, if not hate thee. What!
An advocate for an impostor? hush !
Thou think'st there are no more such shapes as he,
Having seen but him and Caliban : Foolish wench !
To the most of men this is a Caliban,
And they to him are angels.

Mira. My affections
Are then most humble ; I have no ambition
To see a goodlier man.

Pro. Come on ; obey : [To FERD.
Thy nerves are in their infancy again,
And have no vigour in them.

Fer. So they are :
My spirits, as in a dream, are all bound up.
My father's loss, the weakness which I feel,
The wrack of all my friends, or this man's threats,
To whom I am subdued, are but light to me,
Might I but through my prison once a day
Behold this maid : all corners else o' the earth
Let liberty make use of ; space enough
Have I in such a prison.

Pro. It works :—Come on.—
Thou hast done well, fine Ariel !—Follow me.—

[To FERD. and MIRA.
Hark, what thou else shalt do me. [To ARIEL

Mira. Be of comfort ;
My father's of a better nature, sir,
Than he appears by speech ; this is unwonted,
Which now came from him.

Pro. Thou shalt be as free
Mountain winds : but then exactly do
nts of my command.

To the syllable.
Come, follow : speak not for him. [Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I. *Another part of the Island.*

*Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, GONZALO,
ADRIAN, FRANCISCO, and others.*

Gonzalo.

BESEECH you, sir, be merry : you have cause
(So have we all) of joy ; for our escape
Is much beyond our loss : our hint¹ of woe
Is common ; every day, some sailor's wife,
The masters of some merchant², and the merchant,
Have just our theme of woe : but for the miracle,
I mean our preservation, few in millions
Can speak like us : then wisely, good sir, weigh
Our sorrow with our comfort.

Alon.

Prythee, peace.

Seb. He receives comfort like cold porridge.

Ant. The visitor³ will not give him o'er so.

Seb. Look, he's winding up the watch of his wit ;
by and by it will strike.

Gon. Sir,—

Seb. One :—Tell.

Gon. When every grief is entertain'd, that's offer'd,
Comes to the entertainer—

Seb. A dollar.

Gon. Dolour comes to him, indeed ; you have spoken
truer than you purposed.

Seb. You have taken it wiselier than I meant you
should.

Gon. Therefore, my lord,—

¹ Hint of woe, i. e. cause or subject of sorrow

² It was usual to call a merchant-vessel a merchant, as we
say a merchant-man. The masters are probably put for owners

³ He calls Gonzalo the visitor, in allusion to the office of
who visits the sick to give advice and consolation.

Ant. Fie, what a spendthrift is he of his tongue!

Alon. I pr'ythee, spare.

Gon. Well, I have done: But yet—

Seb. He will be talking.

Ant. Which of them, he, or Adrian, for a good wager, first begins to crow?

Seb. The old cock.

Ant. The cockrel.

Seb. Done: The wager?

Ant. A laughter.

Seb. A match.

Adr. Though this island seem to be desert,—

Seb. Ha, ha, ha!

Ant. So you're pay'd.

Adr. Uninhabitable, and almost inaccessible,—

Seb. Yet—

Adr. Yet—

Ant. He could not miss it.

Adr. It must needs be of subtle, tender, and delicate temperance⁴.

Ant. Temperance was a delicate wench.

Seb. Ay, and a subtle; as he most learnedly delivered.

Adr. The air breathes upon us here most sweetly.

Seb. As if it had lungs, and rotten ones.

Ant. Or, as 'twere perfumed by a fen.

Gon. Here is every thing advantageous to life.

Ant. True; save means to live.

Seb. Of that there's none, or little.

Gon. How lush⁵ and lusty the grass looks? how green?

⁴ *Temperance* is used by Adrian for *temperature*. Antonio plays upon the word as *Temperance* was not an uncommon name for a female in puritanical times, when children were often named after the cardinal virtues.

⁵ *Lush* is *luxuriant*, in like manner *luscious* is used in *A Midsummer Night's Dream*:

"Quite over-canopied with luscious woodbine."

Ant. The ground, indeed, is tawny.

Seb. With an eye⁶ of green in't,

Ant. He misses not much.

Seb. No ; he doth but mistake the truth totally.

Gon. But the rarity of it is (which is indeed almost beyond credit)—

Seb. As many vouch'd rarities are.

Gon. That our garments, being, as they were, drenched in the sea, hold, notwithstanding, their freshness, and glosses ; being rather new dyed than stain'd with salt water.

Ant. If but one of his pockets could speak, would it not say, he lies ?

Seb. Ay, or very falsely pocket up his report.

Gon. Methinks, our garments are now as fresh as when we put them on first in Africk, at the marriage of the king's fair daughter Claribel to the king of Tunis.

Seb. 'Twas a sweet marriage, and we prosper well in our return.

Adr. Tunis was never graced before with such a paragon to their queen.

Gon. Not since widow Dido's time.

Ant. Widow ? a pox o' that ! How came that widow in ? Widow Dido !

Seb. What if he had said widower Æneas too ? good lord, how you take it !

Adr. Widow Dido, said you ? you make me study of that : she was of Carthage, not of Tunis.

Gon. This Tunis, sir, was Carthage.

Adr. Carthage ?

Gon. I assure you, Carthage.

Ant. His word is more than the miraculous harp⁷.

⁶ That is, with a shade or small portion of green.

⁷ Red with an eye of blue makes a purple."—Boyle.

⁷ Alluding to the wonders of Amphion's music.

Seb. He hath rais'd the wall, and houses too.

Ant. What impossible matter will he make easy next?

Seb. I think he will carry this island home in his pocket, and give it his son for an apple.

Ant. And sowing the kernels of it in the sea, bring forth more islands.

Gon. Ay?

Ant. Why, in good time.

Gon. Sir, we were talking that our garments seem now as fresh as when we were at Tunis at the marriage of your daughter, who is now queen.

Ant. And the rarest that e'er came there.

Seb. 'Bate, I beseech you, widow Dido.

Ant. O, widow Dido; ay, widow Dido.

Gon. Is not, sir, my doublet as fresh as the first day I wore it? I mean, in a sort.

Ant. That sort was well fish'd for.

Gon. When I wore it at your daughter's marriage?

Alon. You cram these words into mine ears, against The stomach of my sense: 'Would I had never Married my daughter there! for, coming thence, My son is lost; and, in my rate, she too, Who is so far from Italy remov'd, I ne'er again shall see her. O thou mine heir Of Naples and of Milan, what strange fish Hath made his meal on thee!

Fran. Sir, he may live;
I saw him beat the surges under him,
And ride upon their backs; he trod the water,
Whose enmity he flung aside, and breasted
The surge most swoln that met him: his bold head
Bove the contentious waves he kept, and oar'd
himself with his good arms in lusty stroke
the shore, that o'er his wave-worn basis bow'd,
stooping to relieve him: I not doubt,
came alive to land.

Alon. No, no, he's gone.

Seb. Sir, you may thank yourself for this great loss ;
That would not bless our Europe with your daughter.
But rather lose her to an African ;
Where she, at least, is banish'd from your eye,
Who hath cause to wet the grief on't.

Alon. Pr'ythee, peace.

Seb. You were kneel'd to, and impórtun'd otherwise
By all of us ; and the fair soul herself
Weigh'd ⁸, between loathness and obedience, at
Which end o' the beam she'd⁹ bow. We have lost
your son,
I fear, for ever ; Milan and Naples have
More widows in them of this business' making,
Than we bring men to comfort them : the fault's
Your own.

Alon. So is the dearest ¹⁰ of the loss.

Gon. My lord Sebastian,
The truth you speak doth lack some gentleness,
And time to speak it in ; you rub the sore,
When you should bring the plaster.

Seb. Very well.

Ant. And most chirurgeonly.

Gon. It is foul weather in us all, good sir,
When you are cloudy.

Seb. Foul weather ?

Ant. Very foul.

Gon. Had I plantation of this isle, my lord,—

Ant. He'd sow't with nettle-seed.

Seb. Or docks, or mallows.

Gon. And were the king on't, What would I do ?

Seb. 'Scape being drunk, for want of wine.

Gon. I' the commonwealth I would by contraries

⁸ i. e. Deliberated, was in suspense.

⁹ The old copies have "should," which was most probably intended for "should."

¹⁰ See note on *Twelfth Night*, Act v. Sc. 1.

Execute all things : for no kind of traffic¹¹
 Would I admit ; no name of magistrate ;
 Letters should not be known ; riches, poverty,
 And use of service, none ; contract, succession,
 Bourn, bound of land, tilth, vineyard, none :
 No use of metal, corn, or wine, or oil :
 No occupation ; all men idle, all ;
 And women too ; but innocent and pure :
 No sovereignty :—

Seb.

Yet he would be king on't.

Ant. The latter end of his commonwealth forgets
 the beginning.

Gon. All things in common nature should produce
 Without sweat or endeavour : treason, felony,
 Sword, pike, knife, gun, or need of any engine¹²,
 Would I not have ; but nature should bring forth,
 Of its own kind, all foizon¹³, all abundance,
 To feed my innocent people.

Seb. No marrying 'mong his subjects ?

Ant. None, man ; all idle ; whores, and knaves.

¹¹ It was long since pointed out by Capel, that the poet had evidently the following passage from Montaigne in his mind ; and it is remarkable that it should be from the only book that has come down to us bearing his autograph. "It is a nation, would I answere Plato, that hath no *kinde of traffike*, no *knowledge of letters*, no intelligence of numbers, no *name of magistrate*, nor of *politike superiority* ; no *use of service, of riches, or of poverty*; no *contracts, no successions, no dividences, no occupation, but idle* ; no respect of kindred, but common ; no apparell, but naturall ; no manuring of lands ; no use of wine, corne, or mettle. The very words that import lying, and falsehood, *treason*, dissimulation, covetousness, envie, detraction, and pardon, were never heard amongst them." See Montaigne's Essays translated by John Florio, fol. 1603, Chap. 30, B. i. "Of the Caniballes."

¹² An *engine* was a term applied to any kind of *machine* in Shakspeare's age.

¹³ *Foizon* is only another word for *plenty* or *abundance* of provision, but chiefly of the fruits of the earth. In a subsequent scene we have—

"Earth's increase, and foizon plenty."

Gon. I would with such perfection govern, sir,
To excel the golden age ¹⁴.

Seb. 'Save his majesty !

Ant. Long live Gonzalo !

Gon. And, do you mark me, sir ?—

Alon. Pr'ythee, no more : thou dost talk nothing
to me.

Gon. I do well believe your highness ; and did it
to minister occasion to these gentlemen, who are of
such sensible and nimble lungs, that they always use
to laugh at nothing.

Ant. 'Twas you we laugh'd at.

Gon. Who, in this kind of merry fooling, am no-
thing to you ; so you may continue, and laugh at
nothing still.

Ant. What a blow was there given ?

Seb. An it had not fallen flat-long.

Gon. You are gentlemen of brave mettle : you
would lift the moon out of her sphere, if she would
continue in it five weeks without changing ¹⁵.

Enter ARIEL, invisible, playing solemn music.

Seb. We would so, and then go a bat-fowling.

Ant. Nay, good my lord, be not angry.

Gon. No, I warrant you ; I will not adventure
my discretion so weakly. Will you laugh me asleep,
for I am very heavy ?

Ant. Go sleep, and hear us.

[All sleep but ALON. SEB. and ANT.

Alon. What, all so soon asleep ! I wish mine eyes
Would, with themselves, shut up my thoughts : I find,
They are inclin'd to do so.

¹⁴ See Montaigne as cited before.

¹⁵ Warburton remarks that "all this dialogue is a fine satire
on the Utopian Treatises of Government, and the impracticable
inconsistent schemes therein recommended."

Seb. Please you, sir,
Do not omit the heavy offer of it :
It seldom visits sorrow ; when it doth,
It is a comforter.

Ant. We two, my lord,
Will guard your person, while you take your rest,
And watch your safety.

Alon. Thank you. Wondrous heavy.
[ALONSO sleeps. *Exit ARIEL.*

Seb. What a strange drowsiness possesses them !

Ant. It is the quality o' the climate.

Seb. Why
Doth it not then our eye-lids sink ? I find not
Myself dispos'd to sleep.

Ant. Nor I ; my spirits are nimble.
They fell together all, as by consent ;
They dropp'd, as by a thunder-stroke. What might
Worthy Sebastian ?—O, what might ?—No more ;—
And yet, methinks, I see it in thy face,
What thou should'st be : th' occasion speaks thee, and
My strong imagination sees a crown
Dropping upon thy head.

Seb. What, art thou waking ?

Ant. Do you not hear me speak ?

Seb. I do ; and, surely,
It is a sleepy language ; and thou speak'st
Out of thy sleep : What is it thou didst say ?
This is a strange repose, to be asleep
With eyes wide open ; standing, speaking, moving,
And yet so fast asleep.

Ant. Noble Sebastian,
Thou let'st thy fortune sleep—die rather ; wink'st
Whiles thou art waking.

Seb. Thou dost snore distinctly ;
There's meaning in thy snores.

Ant. I am more serious than my custom : you

Must be so too, if heed me ; which to do,
Trebles thee o'er ¹⁶.

Seb. Well ; I am standing water.

Ant. I'll teach you how to flow.

Seb. Do so : to ebb,
Hereditary sloth instructs me.

Ant. O !

If you but knew how you the purpose cherish,
Whiles thus you mock it ! how, in stripping it,
You more invest it ¹⁷ ! Ebbing men, indeed,
Most often do so near the bottom run,
By their own fear, or sloth.

Seb. Pr'ythee, say on :
The setting of thine eye, and cheek, proclaim
A matter from thee ; and a birth, indeed,
Which throes thee much to yield.

Ant. Thus, sir :
Although this lord of weak remembrance,—this
Who shall be of as little memory,
When he is earth'd ¹⁸—hath here almost persuaded
For he's a spirit of persuasion, only
Professes to persuade) the king, his son's alive ;
Tis as impossible that he's undrown'd,
As he that sleeps here, swims.

¹⁶ Antonio apparently means to say, " You must be more serious than you usually are, if you would pay attention to my proposals ; which attention, if you bestow it, will in the end make 'ou *thrice what you are.*" I think we should read "*and heed ne,*" the & has been taken for *if.*

¹⁷ Sebastian introduces the simile of water. It is taken up by Antonio, who says he will teach his stagnant water to flow. "It is already learned to ebb," says Sebastian. To which Antonio replies—"O, if you but knew how much even that metaphor, which you use in jest, encouraged the design which I hint at ; now, in stripping the words of their common meaning, and using them figuratively, you adapt them to your own situation."—*Edinburgh Magazine, Nov. 1786.*

¹⁸ There seems to be some corruption in this involved passage which was rendered more obscure by the pointing of some of the

Seb.
That he's undrown'd.

Ant.
O ! out of that no hope,
What great hope have you ! no hope, that way, is
Another way so high a hope, that even
Ambition cannot pierce a wink beyond¹⁹,
But doubts discovery there. Will you grant, with me,
That Ferdinand is drown'd ?

Seb.
Ant.
Who's the next heir of Naples ?

Seb.
Ant. She that is queen of Tunis ; she that dwells
Ten leagues beyond man's life ; she that from Naples
Can have no note²⁰, unless the sun were post,
(The man i' the moon's too slow,) till new-born chins
Be rough and razorable : she, from whom²¹ coming
We all were sea-swallow'd, though some cast again :
And, by that destiny, to perform an act,
Whereof what's past is prologue ; what to come,

editors, who have made a wrongly placed parenthesis of the words "who shall be of as little memory when he is earth'd."

¹⁹ i. e. The utmost extent of the prospect of ambition, the point where the eye can pass no farther.

²⁰ The commentators have treated this as a remarkable instance of Shakspeare's ignorance of Geography, but though the real distance between Naples and Tunis is not so immeasurable ; the intercourse in early times between the Neapolitans and the Tunisians was not so frequent as to make it popularly considered less than a formidable voyage ; Shakspeare most probably followed the novel from which the plot was taken, but he may however be countenanced in his poetical exaggeration, when we remember that Æschylus has placed the river Eridanus in Spain ; and that Appolonius Rhodius describes the Rhone and the Po as meeting in one and discharging themselves into the Gulf of Venice.

²¹ The old copy has "she that from whom," which can hardly be right. The word *coming* was most probably omitted at the end of the line by the compositor, and the word that caught from *e previous repetitions*. Alonso just before had said, "for *coming once my son is drown'd.*"

I have no hope

Then tell me,

Claribel.

In your's and my discharge.

Seb. What stuff is this?—How say you? 'Tis true, my brother's daughter's queen of Tunis; So is she heir of Naples; 'twixt which regions There is some space.

Ant. A space whose every cubit Seems to cry out, *How shall that Claribel Measure us back to Naples?*—Keep in Tunis, And let Sebastian wake!—Say, this were death That now hath seiz'd them; why they were no worse Than now they are. There be, that can rule Naples, As well as he that sleeps; lords, that can prate As amply, and unnecessarily, As this Gonzalo; I myself could make A chough²² of as deep chat. O, that you bore The mind that I do! what a sleep were this For your advancement! Do you understand me?

Seb. Methinks, I do.

Ant. And how does your content Tender your own good fortune?

Seb. I remember, You did supplant your brother Prospero.

Ant. True: And, look, how well my garments sit upon me; Much feater than before: My brother's servants Were then my fellows, now they are my men.

Seb. But, for your conscience—

Ant. Ay, sir; where lies that? if it were a kybe, 'Twould put me to my slipper; but I feel not This deity in my bosom: twenty consciences, That stand 'twixt me and Milan, candied be they, And melt, ere they molest! Here lies your brother, No better than the earth he lies upon, If he were *that which now he's like*, that's dead;

²² A chough is a bird of the jackdaw kind.

Whom I, with this obedient steel, three inches of it,
 Can lay to bed for ever : whilsts you, doing thus,
 To the perpetual wink for aye might put
 This ancient morsel, this sir Prudence, who
 Should not upbraid our course. For all the rest,
 They'll take suggestion²³, as a cat laps milk ;
 They'll tell the clock to any business that
 We say befits the hour.

Seb. Thy case, dear friend,
 Shall be my precedent ; as thou got'st Milan,
 I'll come by Naples. Draw thy sword : one stroke
 Shall free thee from the tribute which thou pay'st ;
 And I the king shall love thee.

Ant. Draw together :
 And when I rear my hand, do you the like,
 To fall it on Gonzalo.

Seb. O, but one word.

[They converse apart.]

Music. Re-enter ARIEL, invisible.

Ari. My master through his art foresees the danger
 That you, his friend, are in ; and sends me forth,
 Or else his projects die²⁴, to keep them living.

[Sings in GONZALO's ear.]

While you here do snoring lie,
 Open-ey'd conspiracy

His time doth take :
 If of life you keep a care,
 Shake off slumber, and beware.

Awake ! Awake !

²³ Suggestion is frequently used in the sense of temptation, or seduction, by Shakspere and his contemporaries. The sense here is that they will adopt and bear witness to any tale that may be dictated to them.

²⁴ The old copies read "For else his project dies." By the insertion of a letter this passage, which has much puzzled the rendered intelligible.—" — t. keep them living," relates

Ant. Then let us both be sudden.

Gon. Now, good angels, preserve the king !

[*They wake.*

Alon. Why, how now, ho ! awake ! Why are you drawn ?

Wherefore this ghastly looking ?

Gon. What's the matter ?

Seb. Whilst we stood here securing your repose, Even now, we heard a hollow burst of bellowing Like bulls, or rather lions ; did it not wake you ? It struck mine ear most terribly.

Alon. I heard nothing

Ant. O, 'twas a din to fright a monster's ear ; To make an earthquake ; sure it was the roar Of a whole herd of lions.

Alon. Heard you this, Gonzalo ?

Gon. Upon mine honour, sir, I heard a humming, And that a strange one too, which did awake me : I shak'd you, sir, and cried ; as mine eyes open'd, I saw their weapons drawn.—There was a noise, That's verity²⁵ : 'Tis best we stand upon our guard ; Or that we quit this place : let's draw our weapons.

Alon. Lead off this ground ; and let's make further search

For my poor son.

Gon. Heavens keep him from these beasts ! For he is, sure, i' the island.

Alon. Lead away.

Ari. Prospero my lord shall know what I have done : [Aside.]

So, king, go safely on to seek thy son. [Exeunt.]

to projects, and not to *Alonzo* and *Gonzalo*, as erroneously supposed. If the old reading is retained we must read thee instead of them.

* The old copies read verily. Pope corrected it.

SCENE II. *Another part of the Island.*

Enter CALIBAN, with a burden of Wood. A noise of Thunder heard.

Cal. All the infections that the sun sucks up
 From bogs, fens, flats, on Prosper fall, and make him
 By inch-meal a disease ! His spirits hear me,
 And yet I needs must curse. But they'll nor pinch,
 Fright me with urchin shows, pitch me i' the mire,
 Nor lead me, like a fire-brand, in the dark
 Out of my way, unless he bid 'em ; but
 For every trifle are they set upon me :
 Sometime like apes, that moe¹ and chatter at me,
 And after, bite me ; then like hedge-hogs, which
 Lie tumbling in my bare-foot way, and mount
 Their pricks² at my foot-fall ; sometime am I
 All wound with adders, who, with cloven tongues,
 Do hiss me into madness :—Lo ! now ! lo !

Enter TRINCULO.

Here comes a spirit of his ; and to torment me,
 For bringing wood in slowly : I'll fall flat ;
 Perchance he will not mind me.

Trin. Here's neither bush nor shrub, to bear off
 any weather at all, and another storm brewing : I
 hear it sing i' the wind : yond' same black cloud,
 yond' huge one, looks like a foul bombard³ that
 would shed his liquor. If it should thunder, as it
 did before, I know not where to hide my head :
 yond' same cloud cannot choose but fall by pailfuls.
 —What have we here ? a man or a fish ? Dead or

¹ To moe is to make mouths. “To make a moe like an ape. Distorquere os. Rictum deducere.”—Baret.

² Pricks is the ancient word for prickles.

³ A bombard is a black jack of leather, to hold beer, &c.

alive? A fish: he smells like a fish; a very ancient and fish-like smell; a kind of, not of the newest, Poor-John. A strange fish! Were I in England now, (as once I was,) and had but this fish painted, not a holiday-fool there but would give a piece of silver: there would this monster make a man; any strange beast there makes a man: when they will not give a doit to relieve a lame beggar, they will lay out ten to see a dead Indian. Legg'd like a man! and his fins like arms! Warm, o' my troth! I do now let loose my opinion, hold it no longer; this is no fish but an islander, that hath lately suffered by a thunderbolt. [Thunder.] Alas! the storm is come again: my best way is to creep under his gaberdine⁴; there is no other shelter hereabout: Misery acquaints a man with strange bed-fellows, I will here shroud, till the dregs of the storm be past.

Enter STEPHANO, singing; a Bottle in his hand.

Ste. *I shall no more to sea, to sea,
Here shall I die ashore;*—

This is a very scurvy tune to sing at a man's funeral: Well, here's my comfort. [Drinks.

*The master, the swabber, the boatswain, and I,
The gunner, and his mate,*

⁴ A gaberdine was a coarse outer garment. "A shepherd's pelt, frock, or gaberdine, such a coarse long jacket as our porters wear over the rest of their garments," says Cotgrave. "A kind of rough cassock or frock like an Irish mantle," says Philips. It is from the low Latin *Gabardina*, whence the Spanish *Gabardina* and *Gaban*; and the French *Gaban*. One would almost think Shakespeare had been acquainted with the following passage in Chapman's version of the fourth Book of the *Odyssey*:

" ————— The sea calves savour was
So passing sowre (they still being bred at seas)
It much afflicted us, for who can please
To ~~be~~ by one of these same sea-bred whales."

*Lov'd Mall, Meg, and Marian, and Margery,
 But none of us car'd for Kate :
 For she had a tongue with a tang,
 Would cry to a sailor, Go, hang :
 She lov'd not the savour of tar nor of pitch,
 Yet a tailor might scratch her where-e'er she did itch :
 Then to sea boys, and let her go hang.*

This is a scurvy tune too : But here's my comfort.

[Drinks.]

Cal. Do not torment me : O !

Ste. What's the matter ? Have we devils here ?
 Do you put tricks upon us with savages, and men
 of Inde ? Ha ! I have not scap'd drowning, to be
 afeard now of your four legs ; for it hath been said,
 As proper a man as ever went on four legs, cannot
 make him give ground : and it shall be said so again,
 while Stephano breathes at nostrils.

Cal. The spirit torments me : O !

Ste. This is some monster of the isle, with four
 legs ; who hath got, as I take it, an ague : Where
 the devil should he learn our language ? I will give
 him some relief, if it be but for that. If I can recov-
 er him, and keep him tame, and get to Naples with
 him, he's a present for any emperor that ever trod
 on neat's-leather.

Cal. Do not torment me, pr'ythee ; I'll bring my
 wood home faster.

Ste. He's in his fit now ; and does not talk after
 the wisest. He shall taste of my bottle : if he have
 never drunk wine afore, it will go near to remove his
 fit. If I can recover him, and keep him tame, I will
 not take too much for him : he shall pay for him that
 hath him, and that soundly.

Cal. Thou dost me yet but little hurt ; thou wilt
i, I know it by thy trembling : now Prosper works
 thee.

Ste. Come on your ways ; open your mouth ; here is that which will give language to you, cat ; open your mouth : this will shake your shaking, I can tell you, and that soundly : you cannot tell who's your friend : open your chaps again.

Trin. I should know that voice. It should be— But he is drowned ; and these are devils : O ! defend me !—

Ste. Four legs, and two voices ; a most delicate monster ! His forward voice now is to speak well of his friend ; his backward voice is to utter foul speeches, and to detract. If all the wine in my bottle will recover him, I will help his ague. Come, —Amen ! I will pour some in thy other mouth.

Trin. Stephano,—

Ste. Doth thy other mouth call me ? Mercy ! mercy ! This is a devil, and no monster : I will leave him ; I have no long spoon⁵.

Trin. Stephano !—If thou beest Stephano, touch me, and speak to me ; for I am Trinculo ;—be not afeard,—thy good friend Trinculo.

Ste. If thou beest Trinculo, come forth ; I'll pull thee by the lesser legs ; If any be Trinculo's legs, these are they. Thou art very Trinculo, indeed ! How cam'st thou to be the siege of this moon-calf ? Can he vent Trinculos ?

Trin. I took him to be killed with a thunder-stroke :—But art thou not drowned, Stephano ? I hope now, thou art not drowned. Is the storm overblown ? I hid me under the dead moon-calf's⁶

⁵ Shakspeare gives his characters appropriate language, “They belch forth proverbs in their drink,” “Good liquor will *make a cat speak*,” and “he who eats with the devil had need of a *long spoon*.” The last is again used in *The Comedy of Errors*,” Act iv. Sc. 2.

⁶ The best account of the moon-calf may be found in Drayton's poem with that title.

gaberdine, for fear of the storm : And art thou living, Stephano ? O Stephano ! two Neapolitans 'scap'd !

Ste. Pr'ythee, do not turn me about ; my stomach is not constant.

Cal. These be fine things, an if they be not sprites. That's a brave god, and bears celestial liquor : I will kneel to him.

Ste. How did'st thou 'scape ? How cam'st thou hither ? swear by this bottle, how thou cam'st hither. I escaped upon a butt of sack, which the sailors heaved over-board, by this bottle ! which I made of the bark of a tree, with mine own hands, since I was cast a-shore.

Cal. I'll swear, upon that bottle, to be thy true subject ; for the liquor is not earthly.

Ste. Here ; swear then how thou escap'dst.

Trin. Swam a-shore, man, like a duck ; I can swim like a duck, I'll be sworn.

Ste. Here, kiss the book : Though thou canst swim like a duck, thou art made like a goose.

Trin. O Stephano ! hast any more of this ?

Ste. The whole butt, man ; my cellar is in a rock by the sea-side, where my wine is hid. How now, moon-calf ? how does thine ague ?

Cal. Hast thou not dropped from heaven ⁷ ?

Ste. Out o' the moon, I do assure thee : I was the man in the moon ⁸, when time was.

Cal. I have seen thee in her, and I do adore thee ;

⁷ The Indians of the Island of S. Salvador asked by signs whether Columbus and his companions were *not come down from heaven*.

⁸ The reader may consult a curious note on this passage in Mr. Douce's Illustrations of Shakspeare ; where it is observed that Dante makes Cain the *man in the moon* with his bundle of sticks ; or in other words describes the moon by the periphrasis "*Caino e le spine.*"

my mistress shewed me thee, and thy dog, and thy bush.

Ste. Come, swear to that : kiss the book : I will furnish it anon with new contents : swear.

Trin. By this good light, this is a very shallow monster :—I afraid of him ?—a very weak monster :—The man i' the moon !—a most poor credulous monster :—Well drawn, monster, in good sooth.

Cal. I'll shew thee every fertile inch o' the island : And I will kiss thy foot. I pr'ythee, be my god.

Trin. By this light, a most perfidious and drunken monster ; when his god's asleep, he'll rob his bottle.

Cal. I'll kiss thy foot : I'll swear myself thy subject.

Ste. Come on then ; down, and swear.

Trin. I shall laugh myself to death at this puppy-headed monster : A most scurvy monster : I could find in my heart to beat him,—

Ste. Come, kiss.

Trin. —but that the poor monster's in drink. An abominable monster !

Cal. I'll shew thee the best springs ; I'll pluck thee berries :

I'll fish for thee, and get thee wood enough.

A plague upon the tyrant that I serve !

I'll bear him no more sticks, but follow thee,

Thou wondrous man.

Trin. A most ridiculous monster ; to make a wonder of a poor drunkard.

Cal. I pr'ythee, let me bring thee where crabs grow ; And I with my long nails will dig thee pig-nuts ; Shew thee a jay's nest, and instruct thee how To snare the nimble marmozet ; I'll bring thee To clust'ring filberds, and sometimes I'll get thee Young scamels⁹ from the rock : Wilt thou go with me ?

⁹ The old copies read *scamels*. Theobald substituted *sea-mells*.

Ste. I pr'ythee now, lead the way, without any more talking.—Trinculo, the king and all our company else being drowned, we will inherit here.—Here; bear my bottle. Fellow Trinculo, we'll fill him by and by again.

Cal. Farewell, master; farewell, farewell.

[*Sings drunkenly.*

Trin. A howling monster; a drunken monster.

Cal. No more dams I'll make for fish;
Nor fetch in firing
At requiring,
Nor scrape trencher¹⁰, nor wash dish;
'Ban 'Ban, Ca—Caliban,
Has a new master—Get a new man.

Freedom, hey-day! hey-day, freedom! freedom, hey-day, freedom!

Ste. O brave monster! lead the way. [*Exeunt.*

meaning thereby the common *sea-mall* or *mew* of Willoughby and Ray, but *limpets* are said to be called *scams* or *scamels* in some parts of England and Ireland. There have been various other conjectures, but none deserving attention except that of Mr. Dyce, who proposes to read *staniels*, i. e. the kestrel, *staned* or windhover, which also “breeds in rocky situations, and high cliffs on our coasts.” Mr. D. observes, that it is nearer to the trace of the old letters, and that *staniel* or *stanniel* occurs in Act ii. Sc. 5 of Twelfth Night, where all the old editions exhibit the gross misprint “*stallion*.” The two latest editors retain *scamels*.

¹⁰ The old copy has *trenchering*, an evident error; the eye of the compositor having caught the termination from the words in the preceding lines.

ACT III.

SCENE I. *Before Prospero's Cell.*

Enter FERDINAND, bearing a Log.

Ferdinand.

HERE be some sports are painful ; and¹ their labour [ness] Delight in them sets off² : some kinds of base- nobly undergone ; and most poor matters nt to rich ends. This my mean task uld be as heavy to me, as odious ; but e mistress, which I serve, quickens what's dead, d makes my labours pleasures : O, she is times more gentle than her father's crabbed ; d he's composed of harshness. I must remove ne thousands of these logs, and pile them up, on a sore injunction : My sweet mistress eps when she sees me work ; and says, such base- ness I never like executor. I forget : : these sweet thoughts do even refresh my labour ; st busiest when I do it³.

We must read *and* in the sense of *and yet*.

Molliter austерум studio fallente labore. — Hor. Sat. ii. l. 2. in Macbeth : “The labour we delight in physicks pain.”

The first folio reads: Most *busy least* ; the second: *busy least*. Theobald altered it to *busy-less*, and might well say that “he d not afford to think well of his own sagacity for having disred it.” Subsequent editors, and, among others, Mr. Knight, pt this reading, which Mr. Dyce approves. Mr. Collier has *least*, but he essays in vain to make sense of this restora-. It is clear that *labours* in the preceding line should be *or else what does “when I do it,” refer to?* I doubt if the *i busy-less* ever existed except in Theobald's emendation. *lest* should evidently be *busiest* ; the double superlative is poet's manner. Thus we have before in this play, Act i.

Enter MIRANDA; and PROSPERO at a distance.

Mira. Alas, now ! pray you,
Work not so hard : I would, the lightning had
Burnt up those logs, that you are enjoin'd to pile !
Pray, set it down, and rest you : when this burns,
'Twill weep for having wearied you. My father
Is hard at study ; pray now, rest yourself ;
He's safe for these three hours.

Fer. O most dear mistress,
The sun will set, before I shall discharge
What I must strive to do.

Mira. If you'll sit down,
I'll bear your logs the while. Pray, give me that :
I'll carry it to the pile.

Fer. No, precious creature ;
I'd rather crack my sinews, break my back,
Than you should such dishonour undergo,
While I sit lazy by.

Mira. It would become me
As well as it does you : and I should do it
With much more ease ; for my good will is to it,
And your's it is against.

Pro. Poor worm ! thou art infected ;
This visitation shews it.

Mira. You look weakly.

Fer. No, noble mistress ; 'tis fresh morning with me,
When you are by at night ⁴. I do beseech you,

Sc. I., *more better*, and *more braver*, and in K. Lear, Act. ii. Sc. 3 :

"To take the basest and *most poorest* shape."

The sense of the passage may now be made evident by a mere transposition, preserving every word, thus :

But these sweet thoughts, most busiest when I do
My labour, do even refresh it.

⁴ "Tu mihi curarum requies, tu nocte vel atra
Lumen." Tibull. lib. iv. el. 13.

(Chiefly that I might set it in my prayers,)
What is your name?

Mira. Miranda.—O my father!
I have broke your hest⁵ to say so!

Fer. Admir'd Miranda!
Indeed, the top of admiration; worth
What's dearest to the world! Full many a lady
I have ey'd with best regard; and many a time
The harmony of their tongues hath into bondage
Brought my too diligent ear: for several virtues
Have I lik'd several women; never any
With so full soul, but some defect in her
Did quarrel with the noblest grace she ow'd⁶.
And put it to the foil: but you, O you,
So perfect, and so peerless, are created
Of every creature's best⁷.

Mira. I do not know
One of my sex; no woman's face remember,
Save, from my glass, mine own; nor have I seen
More that I may call men, than you, good friend,
And my dear father: how features are abroad,
I am skill-less of; but, by my modesty,
(The jewel in my dower,) I would not wish
Any companion in the world but you;
Nor can imagination form a shape,
Besides yourself, to like of. But I prattle
Something too wildly, and my father's precepts
I therein do forget.

Fer. I am, in my condition,
A prince, Miranda; I do think, a king;

⁵ *Behest, command.*

⁶ See Note 43, p. 27.

⁷ In the first book of Sidney's Arcadia, a lover says of his mistress:

“ She is herself of best things the collection.”

In the third book there is a fable which may have been in Shakespeare's mind.

(I would, not so !) and would no more endure
 This wooden slavery, than to suffer
 The flesh-fly blow my mouth.—Hear my soul
 speak ;—
 The very instant that I saw you, did
 My heart fly to your service ; there resides,
 To make me slave to it ; and, for your sake,
 Am I this patient log-man.

Mira.

Do you love me ?

Fer. O heaven, O earth, bear witness to this sound,
 And crown what I profess with kind event,
 If I speak true ; if hollowly, invert
 What best is boded me to mischief ! I,
 Beyond all limit of what else⁸ i' the world,
 Do love, prize, honour you.

Mira.

I am a fool,

To weep at what I am glad of⁹.

Pro.

Fair encounter

Of two most rare affections ! Heavens rain grace
 On that which breeds between them !

Fer.

Wherefore weep you ?

Mira. At mine unworthiness, that dare not offer
 What I desire to give ; and much less take,
 What I shall die to want. But this is trifling ;
 And all the more it seeks to hide itself,
 The bigger bulk it shows. Hence, bashful cunning !
 And prompt me, plain and holy innocence !
 I am your wife, if you will marry me ;

⁸ The old copies have “of *what else*,” an evident error for *aught else*, and so I think we should read. Malone’s citation from K. Henry VI. in defence of the old reading, is not to the purpose. It there signifies “*somewhat else*.”

⁹ Steevens observes justly that this is one of those touches of nature which distinguish Shakspeare from all other writers. There is a kindred thought in Romeo and Juliet :

“ Back, foolish tears, back to your native spring !
 Your tributary drops belong to woe,
 Which you mistaking offer up to joy.”

it, I'll die your maid : to be your fellow ¹⁰
may deny me ; but I'll be your servant,
ther you will or no.

'ra. My mistress, dearest,
I thus humble ever.

'ra. My husband then ?

'er. Ay, with a heart as willing
ondage e'er of freedom : here's my hand.

'ra. And mine, with my heart in't : And now
farewell,

half an hour hence.

'er. A thousand ! thousand !

[*Exeunt Fer. and Mir.*]

'ro. So glad of this as they, I cannot be,
o are surpris'd with all ; but my rejoicing
nothing can be more. I'll to my book ;
yet, ere supper time, must I perform
h business appertaining.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE II. *Another part of the Island.*

ter STEPHANO and TRINCULO ; CALIBAN fol-
lowing with a Bottle.

'te. Tell not me ;—when the butt is out, we will
k water ; not a drop before : therefore bear up,
board 'em.—Servant-monster, drink to me.

'rin. Servant-monster ? the folly of this island !
y say, there's but five upon this isle : we are three
iem ; if the other two be brained like us, the state
irs.

'te. Drink, servant-monster, when I bid thee ;
eyes are almost set in thy head.

i. e. your companion. Malone has cited a very apposite pas-
from Catullus ; but, as Mr. Douce remarks, Shakspeare had
probably the pathetic old poem of The Nut Brown Maid in
collection.

Trin. Where should they be set else? he were a brave monster indeed, if they were set in his tail.

Ste. My man-monster hath drowned his tongue in sack: for my part, the sea cannot drown me: I swam, ere I could recover the shore, five-and-thirty leagues, off and on, by this light.—Thou shalt be my lieutenant, monster, or my standard.

Trin. Your lieutenant, if you list; he's no standard.

Ste. We'll not run, monsieur monster.

Trin. Nor go neither: but you'll lie, like dogs; and yet say nothing neither.

Ste. Moon-calf, speak once in thy life, if thou beest a good moon-calf.

Cal. How does thy honour? Let me lick thy shoe: I'll not serve him, he is not valiant.

Trin. Thou liest, most ignorant monster; I am in case to justle a constable: Why, thou deboshed¹ fish thou, was there ever man a coward, that hath drunk so much sack as I to-day? Wilt thou tell a monstrous lie, being but half a fish, and half a monster?

Cal. Lo, how he mocks me! wilt thou let him, my lord?

Trin. Lord, quoth he!—that a monster should be such a natural!

Cal. Lo, lo, again! bite him to death, I pr'ythee.

Ste. Trinculo, keep a good tongue in your head; if you prove a mutineer, the next tree.—The poor monster's my subject, and he shall not suffer indignity.

Cal. I thank my noble lord. Wilt thou be pleas'd to hearken once again to the suit I made to thee?

Ste. Marry will I: kneel, and repeat it; I will stand, and so shall Trinculo.

¹ *Deboshed*, this is the old orthography of Debauched; following the sound of the French original. In altering the spelling we ave departed from the proper pronunciation of the word.

Enter ARIEL, invisible.

Cal. As I told thee before, I am subject to a tyrant ; a sorcerer, that by his cunning hath cheated me of the island.

Ari. Thou liest.

Cal. Thou liest, thou jesting monkey, thou !
I would, my valiant master would destroy thee :
I do not lie.

Ste. Trinculo, if you trouble him any more in his tale, by this hand, I will supplant some of your teeth.

Trin. Why, I said nothing.

Ste. Mum then, and no more.—[To CALIBAN.] Proceed.

Cal. I say, by sorcery he got this isle
From me he got it. If thy greatness will
Revenge it on him—for, I know, thou dar'st ;
But this thing dare not.

Ste. That's most certain.

Cal. Thou shalt be lord of it, and I'll serve thee.

Ste. How now shall this be compassed ? Canst thou bring me to the party ?

Cal. Yea, yea, my lord ; I'll yield him thee asleep,
Where thou may'st knock a nail into his head.

Ari. Thou liest, thou canst not.

Cal. What a pied² ninny's this ? Thou scurvy patch !—

I do beseech thy greatness, give him blows,
And take his bottle from him : when that's gone,
He shall drink nought but brine ; for I'll not shew him
Where the quick freshes³ are.

Ste. Trinculo, run into no further danger : interrupt the monster one word further, and, by this hand,

² He calls him a *pied ninny*, alluding to Trinculo's party-coloured dress, he was a licensed fool or jester, patch was a name by which they were often distinguished.

³ Quick freshes are living springs.

I'll turn my mercy out of doors, and make a stock-fish of thee.

Trin. Why, what did I? I did nothing; I'll go further off.

Ste. Didst thou not say, he lied?

Ari. Thou liest.

Ste. Do I so? take thou that. [Strikes him.] As you like this, give me the lie another time.

Trin. I did not give the lie:—Out o' your wits, and hearing too?—A pox o' your bottle! this can sack, and drinking do.—A murrain on your monster, and the devil take your fingers!

Cal. Ha, ha, ha!

Ste. Now, forward with your tale. Pr'ythee stand further off.

Cal. Beat him enough: after a little time, I'll beat him too.

Ste. Stand further.—Come, proceed.

Cal. Why, as I told thee, 'tis a custom with him I' the afternoon to sleep: there thou mayst brain him, Having first seiz'd his books; or with a log Batter his skull, or paunch him with a stake, Or cut his wezand with thy knife: Remember First to possess his books; for without them He's but a sot, as I am, nor hath not One spirit to command: They all do hate him, As rootedly as I: Burn but his books; He has brave utensils, (for so he calls them,) Which, when he has a house, he'll deck withal. And that most deeply to consider, is The beauty of his daughter; he himself Calls her a non-pareil: I never saw a woman, But only Sycorax my dam, and she; But she as far surpasseth Sycorax, *As great'st does least.*

Ste. Is it so brave a lass?

Cal. Ay, lord ; she will become thy bed, I warrant,
And bring thee forth brave brood.

Ste. Monster, I will kill this man : his daughter
And I will be king and queen : (save our graces !)
And Trinculo and thyself shall be viceroys :—Dost
hou like the plot, Trinculo ?

Trin. Excellent.

Ste. Give me thy hand ; I am sorry I beat thee :
But, while thou livest, keep a good tongue in thy
head.

Cal. Within this half hour will he be asleep ;
Wilt thou destroy him then ?

Ste. Ay, on mine honour.

Ari. This will I tell my master.

Cal. Thou mak'st me merry : I am full of pleasure ;
Let us be jocund : Will you troll the catch
You taught me but while-ere ?

Ste. At thy request, monster, I will do reason, any
reason : Come on, Trinculo, let us sing. [Sings.

*Flout 'em, and skout 'em ; and skout 'em, and
flout 'em,
Thought is free.*

Cal. That's not the tune.

[*ARIEL plays the tune on a tabor and pipe.*

Ste. What is this same ?

Trin. This is the tune of our catch, played by the
picture of No-body⁴.

Ste. If thou beest a man, shew thyself in thy like-
ness : if thou beest a devil, take't as thou list.

Trin. O, forgive me my sins !

Ste. He that dies, pays all debts : I defy thee :—
Mercy upon us !

⁴ The picture of No-body was a common sign. There is also
wood cut prefixed to an old play of No-body and Some-body
which represents this notable person.

Cal. Art thou afeard ⁵?

Ste. No, monster, not I.

Cal. Be not afeard ; the isle is full of noises,
Sounds, and sweet airs, that give delight, and hurt not.
Sometimes a thousand twangling instruments
Will hum about mine ears ; and sometimes voices,
That, if I then had wak'd after long sleep,
Will make me sleep again : and then, in dreaming,
The clouds, methought, would open, and shew riches
Ready to drop upon me ; that, when I wak'd,
I cry'd to dream again.

Ste. This will prove a brave kingdom to me, where
I shall have my music for nothing.

Cal. When Prospero is destroyed.

Ste. That shall be by and by : I remember the story.

Trin. The sound is going away : let's follow it,
and after, do our work.

Ste. Lead, monster ; we'll follow.—I would, I
could see this taborer ⁶ : he lays it on.

Trin. Wilt come ? I'll follow, Stephano. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *Another part of the Island.*

*Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, GONZALO,
ADRIAN, FRANCISCO, and others.*

Gon. By'r lakin¹, I can go no further, sir ;
My old bones ake ; here's a maze trod, indeed,

⁵ *To affear* is an obsolete verb with the same meaning as *to affray, or make afraid.*

⁶ " You shall heare in the ayre the sound of *tubers and other instruments*, to put the trauellers in feare, &c. by evill spirites that make these soundes, and also do call diuers of the trauellers by their names, &c." — *Trauels of Marcus Paulus*, by John Frampion, 4to. 1579. To some of these circumstances Milton also alludes :

" — calling shapes, and beckoning shadows dire,
And aery tongues that syllable men's names
On sands, and shores, and desert wildernesses."

¹ *By'r LAKIN* is a contraction of *By our LADYKIN*, the diminutive of *our lady*.

Through forth-rights², and meanders ! by your patience,
needs must rest me.

Alon. Old lord, I cannot blame thee,
Who am myself attach'd with weariness,
'o the dulling of my spirits : sit down, and rest.
Even here I will put off my hope, and keep it
No longer for my flatterer : he is drown'd,
Whom thus we stray to find ; and the sea mocks
Our frustrate search on land. Well, let him go.

Ant. I am right glad that he's so out of hope.

[*Aside to SEBASTIAN.*

Do not, for one repulse, forego the purpose
That you resolv'd to effect.

Seb. The next advantage
Will we take thoroughly.

Ant. Let it be to-night :
For, now they are oppress'd with travel, they
Will not, nor cannot, use such vigilance,
As when they are fresh.

Seb. I say, to-night : no more.
Solemn and strange music ; and PROSPERO above, invisible. Enter several strange Shapes, bringing, in a Banquet ; they dance about it with gentle actions of salutation ; and inviting the King, &c. to eat, they depart.

Alon. What harmony is this ? my good friends, hark !
Gon. Marvellous sweet music !

Alon. Give us kind keepers, heavens ! What were
these ?

Seb. A living drollery³. Now I will believe
That there are unicorns ; that, in Arabia

² Forth-rights, i. e. *strait-lines*. Mazes were of two kinds, rectangular and curvilinear. Mr. Knight gives a figure of one of the former.

³ Shows, called *Drolleries*, were in Shakspeare's time performed by puppets only. From these our modern *drolls*, exhibited at fairs, &c. took their name. "A living drollery," is therefore a show not by wooden but by living personages.

There is one tree, the phœnix' throne⁴; one phœnix
At this hour reigning there.

Ant. I'll believe both;
And what does else want credit, come to me,
And I'll be sworn 'tis true: Travellers ne'er did lie,
Though fools at home condemn them.

Gon. If in Naples
I should report this now, would they believe me?
If I should say I saw such islanders,
(For, certes, these are people of the island,) Who, though they are of monstrous shape, yet note,
Their manners are of a more gentle kind,
Than of our human generation you shall find⁵
Many,—nay, almost any.

Pro. [Aside.] Honest lord,
Thou hast said well; for some of you there present
Are worse than devils.

Alon. I cannot too much muse,
Such shapes, such gesture, and such sound, expressing
(Although they want the use of tongue) a kind
Of excellent dumb discourse.

Pro. Praise in departing⁶. [Aside.
Fran. They vanish'd strangely.

Seb. No matter, since
They have left their viands behind; for we have stomachs.—

⁴ “ I myself have heard straunge things of this kind of tree; namely, in regard of the bird Phœnix, which is supposed to have taken that name of this date tree (called in Greek φοινιξ); for it was assured unto me, that the said bird died with that tree, and revived of itselue as the tree sprung againe.”—*Holland's Translation of Pliny*, B. xiii. C. 4.

⁵ In the old copy this passage stands thus

Their manners are more gentle, kind, than of
Our human generation you shall find.

The correction is made in my copy of the second folio.

⁶ “ *Praise in departing*,” is a proverbial phrase signifying, Do not praise your entertainment too soon, lest you should have reason to retract your commendation.

Will't please you taste of what is here ?

Alon. Not I.

Gon. Faith, sir, you need not fear. When we were
boys,

Who would believe that there were mountaineers,
Jew-lapp'd like bulls, whose throats had hanging at
them

Wallets of flesh ? or that there were such men,
Whose heads stood in their breasts ? which now we find,
Each putter-out on five for one⁷, will bring us
Good warrant of.

Alon. I will stand to, and feed,
Although my last : no matter, since I feel
The best is past :—Brother, my lord the duke,
Stand to, and do as we.

Thunder and Lightning. Enter ARIEL like a Harpy ;
claps his wings upon the table, and, by a quaint de-
vice, the Banquet vanishes⁸.

Ari. You are three men of sin, whom destiny,
(That hath to instrument this lower world,
And what is in't,) the never-surfeited sea
Hath caused to belch up ; and on this island
Where man doth not inhabit ; you 'mongst men
Being most unfit to live. I have made you mad ;

[*Seeing ALON. SEB. &c. draw their swords.*
And even with such like valour, men hang and drown
Their proper selves. You fools ! I and my fellows
Are ministers of fate ; the elements

⁷ "Each putter-out on five for one," i. e. each *traveller* ; it appears to have been the custom to place out a sum of money upon going abroad to be returned with enormous interest if the party returned safe ; a kind of insurance of a gambling nature. The old copy has "of five for one."

⁸ By *vanish*, probably the disappearance of the viands only is meant, (which was to be effected by the contrivance of the ma-
gician,) as if they had been devoured by the harpy.

Of whom⁹ your swords are temper'd, may as well
 Wound the loud winds, or with bemock'd-at stabs
 Kill the still-closing waters, as diminish
 One dowle¹⁰ that's in my plume ; my fellow ministers
 Are like invulnerable : if you could hurt,
 Your swords are now too massy for your strengths,
 And will not be uplifted. But, remember,
 (For that's my business to you,) that you three
 From Milan did supplant good Prospero ;
 Expos'd unto the sea, (which hath requit it,)
 Him, and his innocent child : for which foul deed
 The powers, delaying, not forgetting, have
 Incens'd the seas and shores, yea all the creatures
 Against your peace. Thee, of thy son, Alonso,
 They have bereft ; and do pronounce by me,
 Lingering perdition (worse than any death
 Can be at once,) shall step by step attend
 You, and your ways ; whose wraths to guard you from
 (Which here, in this most desolate isle, else falls
 Upon your heads,) is nothing, but heart's sorrow,
 And a clear¹¹ life ensuing.

*He vanishes in Thunder : then, to soft music, enter the
 Shapes again, and dance with mops and mowes, and
 carry out the table.*

⁹ I cannot persuade myself that Shakspeare wrote "of whom;" for, though *which* and *who* were confounded, I do not recollect an instance of *whom* for *which*.

¹⁰ Bailey, in his Dictionary, says that *dowle* is a feather or rather the single particles of the down. Coles, in his Latin Dictionary, 1679, interprets young *dowle* by *Lanugo*. And in a History of most Manual Arts, 1661, *wool* and *dowl* are treated as synonymous. Tooke contends that this word and others of the same form are nothing more than the past participle of *deal*; and Junius and Skinner both derive it from the same. I fully believe that Tooke is right; the provincial word *dool* is a portion of unploughed land left in a field; Coles, in his English Dictionary,

¹¹, has given *dowl* as a cant word, and interprets it *deal*. I must the reader to the Diversions of Purley for further proof.

A *clear* life, is a *pure, blameless*, life.

Pro. [Aside.] Bravely the figure of this harpy hast thou

'erform'd, my Ariel ; a grace it had, devouring
f my instruction hast thou nothing 'bated,
i what thou hadst to say : so, with good life¹²,
nd observation strange, my meaner ministers
heir several kinds have done : my high charms work,
nd these, mine enemies, are all knit up
t their distractions : they now are in my power ;
nd in these fits I leave them, whilst I visit
oung Ferdinand, (whom they suppose is drown'd,)
nd his and my loved darling. [*Exit PROSPERO.*]
Gon. I the name of something holy, sir, why stand you
this strange stare ?

Alon. O, it is monstrous ! monstrous !
ethought, the billows spoke, and told me of it ;
he winds did sing it to me ; and the thunder,
hat deep and dreadful organ-pipe, pronounc'd
he name of Prosper ; it did base my trespass.
herefore my son i' the ooze is bedded ; and
I seek him deeper than e'er plummet sounded,
nd with him there lie mudded. [*Exit.*]

Seb. But one fiend at a time,
ll fight their legions o'er.

Ant. I'll be thy second.

[*Exeunt SEB. and ANT.*]

Gon. All three of them are desperate ; their great guilt,
ike poison given to work a great time after¹³,
ow 'gins to bite the spirits : I do beseech you
hat are of suppler joints, follow them swiftly,

¹² With good *life*, i. e. with the full bent and energy of mind.
r. Henley says that the expression is still in use in the west of
igland.

¹³ The natives of Africa have been supposed to be possessed of
a secret how to temper poisons with such art as not to operate
l several years after they were administered. Their drugs were
en as certain in their effect as subtle in their preparation.

And hinder them from what this ecstasy¹⁴
May now provoke them to.

Adr.

Follow, I pray you.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT IV.

SCENE I. *Before Prospero's Cell.*

Enter PROSPERO, FERDINAND, and MIRANDA.

Prospero.

FI have too austerity punish'd you,
Your compensation makes amends ; for I
Have given you here a thread¹ of mine own life,
Or that for which I live ; whom once again
I tender to thy hand. All thy vexations
Were but my trials of thy love, and thou
Hast strangely stood the test : here, afore Heaven,
I ratify this my rich gift. O Ferdinand !
Do not smile at me, that I boast her off,
For thou shalt find she will outstrip all praise,
And make it halt behind her.

Fer. I do believe it,
Against an oracle.

Pro. Then, as my gift, and thine own acquisition
Worthily purchas'd, take my daughter : But

¹⁴ Shakspeare uses *ecstasy* for any temporary alienation of mind, a fit, or madness. Minshew's definition of this word will serve to explain its meaning wherever it occurs throughout the following pages. "Extasie or trance; *G.* extase; *Lat.* extasis, abstractio mentis. Est proprie mentis emotio, et quasi ex statione sua turbatio, seu furore, seu admiratione, seu timore, aliisque casu decidat."—*Guide to the Tongues*, 1617.

¹ The old editions have *third*, except that of 1668, which has *thred*. There can be no doubt that *third* is a misprint for *thrid*, the old mode of spelling *thread*. The "vital *thread*" was in the mind of the poet. Thus in K. Henry V. Act iii. Sc. 6, "Let not Bardolph's *vital thread* be cut." In *Macedorus*, 1619, we have:

To cut in twain the twisted *thrid* of life.

If thou dost break her virgin knot before
 All sanctimonious ceremonies may
 With full and holy rite be minister'd,
 No sweet aspersion² shall the heavens let fall
 To make this contract grow ; but barren hate,
 Sour-ey'd disdain, and discord, shall bestrew
 The union of your bed with weeds so loathly,
 That you shall hate it both : therefore, take heed,
 As Hymen's lampe shall light you.

Fer. As I hope
 For quiet days, fair issue, and long life,
 With such love as 'tis now ; the murkiest den,
 The most opportune place, the strong'st suggestion³,
 Our worser Genius can, shall never melt
 Mine honour into lust, to take away
 The edge of that day's celebration,
 When I shall think, or Phœbus' steeds are founder'd,
 Or night kept chain'd below.

Pro. Fairly spoke ;
 Sit then, and talk with her, she is thine own.—
 What, Ariel ! my industrious servant Ariel !

Enter ARIEL.

Ari. What would my potent master ? here I am.
Pro. Thou and thy meanner fellows your last service
 Did worthily perform ; and I must use you
 In such another trick. Go, bring the rabble,
 O'er whom I give thee power, here, to this place :
 Incite them to quick motion ; for I must
 Bestow upon the eyes of this young couple
 Some vanity⁴ of mine art ; it is my promise,
 And they expect it from me.

² *Aspersion* is here used in its primitive sense of *sprinkling*, at present it is used in its figurative sense of throwing out hints of calumny and detraction.

³ *Suggestion* here means *temptation* or wicked prompting.

⁴ "Some vanity of mine art" is some illusion. Thus in a

Ari.

Presently?

Pro. Ay, with a twink.

Ari. Before you can say, *Come*, and *go*,
And breathe twice ; and cry, *so, so,*
Each one, tripping on his toe,
Will be here with mop and mowe :
Do you love me, master ? no ?

Pro. Dearly, my delicate Ariel. Do not approach,
Till thou dost hear me call.

Ari.

Well I conceive. [Exit.

Pro. Look, thou be true ; do not give dalliance
Too much the rein ; the strongest oaths are straw
To the fire i' the blood : be more abstemious,
Or else, good night, your vow !

Fer.

I warrant you, sir
The white-cold virgin snow upon my heart
Abates the ardour of my liver.

Pro.

Well.—
Now come, my Ariel ! bring a corollary⁵,
Rather than want a spirit : appear, and pertly.—
No tongue ; all eyes ; be silent. [Soft music.

A Masque. Enter IRIS.

Iris. Ceres, most bounteous lady, thy rich leas
Of wheat, rye, barley, vetches, oats, and peas ;
Thy turfie mountains, where live nibbling sheep,
And flat meads thatch'd with stover⁶, them to keep;

passage, quoted by Warton, in his Dissertation on the *Gesta Romanorum*, from *EMARE*, a Metrical Romance :

“ The Emperor said on high
Sertes thys is a fayry
Or ellys a vanite.”

⁵ That is, bring *more than are sufficient*. “ *Corollary*, the addition or vantage above measure, an *overplus*, or *surplusage*.”—*Blount.*

⁶ *Stover*, i. e. fodder for cattle, as grass, &c. *Estovers* is the old law term for hay, straw, and the like, from the O. Fr. *estouvier*. The word is still in use in the north of England.

Thy banks with pioned and tilled brims⁷,
 Which spongy April at thy heat betrimbs,
 To make cold nymphs chaste crowns ; and thy broom
 groves,
 Whose shadow the dismissed bachelor loves,
 Being lass-lorn⁸ ; thy pole-clipt vineyard ;
 And thy sea-marge, steril, and rocky-hard,
 Where thou thyself dost air : The queen o' the sky,
 Whose watery arch, and messenger, am I,
 Bids thee leave these ; and with her sovereign grace,
 Here on this grass-plot, in this very place,
 To come and sport : her peacocks fly amain ;
 Approach, rich Ceres, her to entertain.

Enter CERES.

Cer. Hail, many colour'd messenger, that ne'er
 Dost disobey the wife of Jupiter ;
 Who, with thy saffron wings, upon my flowers
 Diffusest honey-drops, refreshing showers⁹ :
 And with each end of thy blue bow dost crown
 My bosky¹⁰ acres, and my unshrub'd down.
 Rich scarf to my proud earth : Why hath thy queen
 Summon'd me hither, to this short-grass'd green ?

⁷ The old copies read “*pioned and twilled*.” Steevens contended for *peonied* and *killed*, which received some support from James Boswell; but Mr. Holt’s emendation of *tilled* for *twilled*, seems to me perfectly satisfactory. *Pioning* is used by Spenser for digging. These banks thus *dug* and *tilled* “spongy April trims” with spring flowers; March would be too early for *peonies* and *killes*. Mr. Collier’s corrected folio also adopts *tilled*, and has *brown* groves for *broom* groves; an inadmissible reading.

⁸ That is, *forsaken by his lass*.

⁹ Mr. Douce remarks that this is an elegant expansion of the following lines in Phaeer’s Virgil, *Aeneid*, Lib. iv.

“Dame rainbow down therefore with safron wings of dropping showers,

Whose face a thousand sundry hues against the sun devoure,
From heaven descending came.”

¹⁰ *Bosky* acres are woody acres, fields intersected by luxuriant edge-rows and copses

Iris. A contract of true love to celebrate ;
And some donation freely to estate
On the bless'd lovers.

Cer. Tell me, heavenly bow,
If Venus, or her son, as thou dost know,
Do now attend the queen ? since they did plot
The means, that dusky Dis my daughter got,
Her and her blind boy's scandal'd company
I have forsorn.

Iris. Of her society
Be not afraid : I met her deity
Cutting the clouds towards Paphos ; and her son
Dove-drawn with her : here thought they to have done
Some wanton charm upon this man and maid,
Whose vows are, that no bed-rite shall be paid
Till Hymen's torch be lighted : but in vain ;
Mars's hot minion is return'd again ;
Her waspish-headed son has broke his arrows,
Swears he will shoot no more, but play with sparrows.
And be a boy right out.

Cer. Highest queen of state,
Great Juno comes ; I know her by her gait.

Enter JUNO¹¹.

Juno. How does my bounteous sister ? Go with me,
To bless this twain, that they may prosperous be,
And honour'd in their issue.

SONG.

Juno. Honour, riches, marriage-blessing,
Long continuance, and increasing,
Hourly joys be still upon you !
Juno sings her blessings on you.

¹¹ As in the folio the stage direction is, "Juno descends," she probably appeared above during the former speeches, and now is led to the stage.

Cer. *Earth's increase, and poison¹² plenty ;
 Barns and garners never empty ;
 Vines, with clust'ring bunches growing ;
 Plants, with goodly burden bowing ;
 Spring come to you, at the farthest,
 In the very end of harvest !
 Scarcity and want shall shun you ;
 Ceres' blessing so is on you.*

Fer. This is a most majestic vision, and
 Harmonious charmingly¹³ : May I be bold
 To think these spirits ?

Pro. Spirits, which by mine art
 I have from their confines call'd to enact
 My present fancies.

Fer. Let me live here ever ;
 So rare a wonder'd father¹⁴, and a wife¹⁵,
 Make this place Paradise.

[JUNO and CERES whisper, and send IRIS on
 employment.

Pro. Sweet now, silence !
 Juno and Ceres whisper seriously ;
 There's something else to do. Hush, and be mute,
 Or else our spell is marr'd.

Iris. You nymphs, call'd Naiads, of the winding¹⁶
 brooks,
 With your sedge-crowns, and ever harmless looks,

¹² *Poison* is abundance, particularly of harvest corn, and is wanting in the folio 1623. The return of *Spring* is not to be delayed by the intervention of Winter. Mr. Collier's second folio substitutes *Rain*, an alteration which would entirely ruin the poet's meaning. See Amos ix. 13, "Behold the days come, saith the Lord, that the plowman shall overtake the reaper, and the treader of grapes, him that soweth seed." See also Leviticus xxvi. 4, where this beautiful promise is repeated.

¹³ For charmingly harmonious. ¹⁴ "So rare a wonder'd father," is a father able to produce such wonders.

¹⁵ *Wise* is the reading of all the old copies for which *wife* has been substituted, and *make* put for *makes* in the next line.

¹⁶ The old copies read "windring" and *sedg'd* crowns.

Leave your crisp¹⁷ channels, and on this green land
Answer your summons ; Juno does command :
Come, temperate nymphs, and help to celebrate
A contract of true love ; be not too late.

Enter certain Nymphs.

You sun-burn'd sicklemen, of August weary,
Come hither from the furrow, and be merry ;
Make holy-day : your rye-straw hats put on,
And these fresh nymphs encounter every one
In country footing.

Enter certain Reapers, properly habited : they join with the Nymphs in a graceful dance ; towards the end of which PROSPERO starts suddenly, and speaks ; after which, to a strange, hollow, and confused noise, they heavily vanish.

Pro. [Aside.] I had forgot that foul conspiracy
Of the beast Caliban, and his confederates,
Against my life ; the minute of their plot
Is almost come.—[To the Spirits.] Well done.—
Avoid ;—no more.

Fer. This is strange : your father's in some passion
That works him strongly.

Mira. Never till this day,
Saw I him touch'd with anger so distemper'd.

Pro. You do look, my son, in a mov'd sort,
As if you were dismay'd : be cheerful, sir :
Our revels now are ended. These our actors,
As I foretold you, were all spirits, and
Are melted into air, into thin air :
And, like the baseless fabrick of this vision¹⁸,

¹⁷ *Crisp* channels ; i. e. curled, from the curl raised by a breeze
~ the surface of the water. So in 1 K. Hen. IV. Act i. Sc. 3.

“ — Hid his *crisp* head in the hollow bank.”

In the tragedy of Darius, by Lord Sterline, printed in 1608,
: following passage :

the cloud-capp'd towers, the gorgeous palaces,
the solemn temples, the great globe itself,
all which it inherit, shall dissolve;
and, like this insubstantial pageant faded¹⁹,
ave not a wrack²⁰ behind: We are such stuff

" Let greatness of her glassy scepters vaunt
Not scepters, no, but reeds, soon bruised soon broken;
And let this worldly pomp our wits enchant,
All fades, and scarcely leaves behind a token.
Those golden palaces, those gorgeous halls,
With furniture superfluously fair,
Those stately courts, those sky-encountering walls,
Evanish all like vapours in the air."

The preceding stanza also contains evidence of the same train of thought with Shakspeare.

" And when the eclipse comes of our glory's light,
Then what avails the adoring of a name?
A mere *illusion made to mock the sight,*
Whose best was but the shadow of a dream."

It is possible that one poet imitated the other. The exact period at which the *Tempest* was produced is not known, but it thought not earlier than 1611. It was first printed in the folio 1623. Lord Sterline also wrote a tragedy entitled *Julius Cæsar*, in which there are parallel passages to some in Shakspeare's play on the same subject, and Malone thinks the coincidences are than accidental.

¹⁹ *Faded*, i. e. *vanished*, from the Latin *vado*. The ancient English *pageants* were shows, on the reception of princes or other festive occasions; they were exhibited on stages in the open air. These allegorical spectacles very costly ornaments were bewed. See Warton's Hist. of Poetry, ii. 199, 202; Fabian, ii. 2; and above all Mr. Gifford's Ben Jonson *passim*.

²⁰ The folio has *racke*, which the poet elsewhere uses for *the wds in motion*, but it is evident here that *wracke* (the mode in which *wreck* is uniformly given in the old copies,) was meant. According to Horne Tooke's observations on this passage, the word *racke* has been retained in recent editions, with the meaning he gave to the word; even Malone retained it, notwithstanding his sensible observation that " rack is a misspelling for wrack or *wreck*," and that the words relate not to " the baseless fabrick this vision," but to the final destruction of the world, of which " towers, temples, and palaces, shall, (*like a vision, or a pantomime*) be dissolved, and leave no vestige behind." See Richardson's Dictionary *a. Rack*; Jamieson's Scottish Dictionary *v. Rak*; Notes and Queries, Vol. iii. p. 218, Vol. iv. pp. 121 and 158.

As dreams are made of, and our little life
 Is rounded with a sleep.—Sir, I am vex'd ;
 Bear with my weakness ; my old brain is troubled.
 Be not disturb'd with my infirmity.
 If you be pleas'd, retire into my cell,
 And there repose ; a turn or two I'll walk,
 To still my beating mind.

Fer. Mira.

We wish your peace.

[*Ezeunt.*]

Pro. Come with a thought :—I thank you :—
 Ariel, come.

Enter ARIEL.

Ari. Thy thoughts I cleave to : What's thy pleasure ?

Pro. Spirit,

We must prepare to meet²¹ with Caliban.

Ari. Ay, my commander : when I presented Ceres,
 I thought to have told thee of it ; but I fear'd,
 Lest I might anger thee.

Pro. Say again, where didst thou leave these var-
 lets ?

Ari. I told you, sir, they were red-hot with drinking ;
 So full of valour, that they smote the air
 For breathing in their faces ; beat the ground
 For kissing of their feet : yet always bending
 Towards their project : then I beat my tabor,
 At which, like unback'd colts, they prick'd their ears,
 Advanc'd their eye-lids, lifted up their noses,
 As they smelt music ; so I charm'd their ears,
 That, calf-like, they my lowing follow'd, through
 Tooth'd briars, sharp furzes, pricking gorse, and thorns,

²¹ To *counteract*, to play stratagem against stratagem.

" — You may *meet*

With her abusive malice, and exempt

Yourself from the suspicion of revenge,"

Cynthia's Revenge, 1613.

Which enter'd their frail skins : ~~as~~ but I left them
I' the filthy mantled pool beyond your cell.
There dancing up to the chin, that the foul ~~air~~
O'er-stunk their feet.

Pro. This was well done, my lord.
Thy shape invisible retain thou still :
The trumpery in my house, go bring it hither
For stale²² to catch these thieves.

Ari. I go, I go. *Exe.*
Pro. A devil, a born devil, on whose nature
Nurture²³ can never stick ; on whom my pains,
Humanely taken, all, all lost, quite lost ;
And as, with age, his body aglier grows,
So his mind cankers : I will plague them all.

Re-enter ARIEL loaded with glistening apparel, &c.
Even to roaring :—Come, hang them on this line.²⁴

PROSPERO and ARIEL remain invisible. Enter CALIBAN, STEPHANO, and TRINCULO; all wet.

Cal. Pray you, tread softly, that the blind mole
may not
Hear a foot fall : we now are near his cell.

Ste. Monster, your fairy, which, you say, is a
harmless fairy, has done little better than play'd the
Jack²⁵ with us.

Trin. Monster, I do smell all horse-piss ; at which
my nose is in great indignation.

²² *Stale*, in the art of fowling, signified a *bait* or *lure* to decoy birds.

²³ *Nurture* is *Education*, in our old language.

²⁴ Mr. Hunter suggests that by *line* a *lime-tree* is here meant. It has been urged that the subsequent play upon the word “we steal by *line* and *level*” makes against this conjecture. Still I must confess, I incline to Mr. Hunter’s reading of the passage. A *lime* or *lime-grove* defended Prospero’s cave from the weather.

²⁵ To play the *Jack*, was to play the *Knave*. Hence *Jack-o’-Lantern*, which is here alluded to.

Ste. So is mine. Do you hear, monster? If I should take a displeasure against you; look you,—

Trin. Thou wert but a lost monster.

Cal. Good my lord, give me thy favour still: Be patient, for the prize I'll bring thee to Shall hood-wink this mischance; therefore, speak softly,

All's hush'd as midnight yet.

Trin. Ay, but to lose our bottles in the pool,—

Ste. There is not only disgrace and dishonour in that, monster, but an infinite loss.

Trin. That's more to me than my wetting: yet this is your harmless fairy, monster.

Ste. I will fetch off my bottle, though I be o'er ears for my labour.

Cal. Pr'ythee, my king, be quiet: Seest thou here, This is the mouth of the cell: no noise, and enter: Do that good mischief, which may make this island Thine own for ever, and I, thy Caliban, For aye thy foot-licker.

Ste. Give me thy hand: for I do begin to have bloody thoughts.

Trin. O king Stephano! O peer²⁶! O worthy Stephano! look, what a wardrobe here is for thee!

Cal. Let it alone, thou fool: it is but trash.

Trin. O, ho, monster; we know what belongs to a frippery²⁷ :—O king Stephano!

Ste. Put off that gown, Trinculo; by this hand, I'll have that gown.

Trin. Thy grace shall have it.

Cal. The dropsy drown this fool! what do you mean, To doat thus on such luggage? Let's alone²⁸,

²⁶ This is a humorous allusion to the old ballad "King Stephen was a worthy peer," of which Iago sings a verse in Othello.

²⁷ A shop for the sale of old clothes.—Frippeerie. F.R.

The old copy reads—"Let's alone."

Ind do the murder first : if he awake,
From toe to crown he'll fill our skins with pinches ;
Take us strange stuff.

Ste. Be you quiet, monster.—Mistress line, is not
is my jerkin ? Now is the jerkin under the line :
ow, jerkin, you are like to lose your hair, and prove
bald jerkin.

Trin. Do, do : We steal by line and level, and't
ke your grace.

Ste. I thank thee for that jest ; here's a garment
r't : wit shall not go unrewarded, while I am king
this country : *Steal by line and level*, is an excel-
nt pass of pate ; there's another garment for't.

Trin. Monster, come, put some lime³⁰ upon your
ngers, and away with the rest.

Cal. I will have none on't : we shall lose our time,
nd all be turn'd to barnacles³⁰, or to apes
With foreheads villainous low.

Ste. Monster, lay-to your fingers ; help to bear
is away, where my hogshead of wine is, or I'll turn
u out of my kingdom. Go to ; carry this.

Trin. And this.

Ste. Ay, and this.

*noise of Hunters heard³¹. Enter divers Spirits in
shape of hounds, and hunt them about ; PROSPERO
and ARIEL setting them on.*

³⁰ *Bird-lime.*

³¹ The *barnacle* is a kind of shell-fish, *lepas anatifera*, which
cient credulity believed to produce the barnacle-goose. Bishop
all refers to it in the second Satire of his fourth Book—

“ That Scottish *barnacle*, if I might choose,
That of a worm doth wax a winged goose.”

errard, in his Herbal, 1597, p. 1391, gives a full description of
; and the worthy Dr. Bullein treats those as ignorant and in-
dulgent who do not believe in the transformation.—*Bubwarke of
ence*, 1562. *Caliban's Barnacle* is the *clakis*, or tree-goose.
See *Tyrwhitt's Chaucer*, Note on v. 6441.

Pro. Hey, Mountain, hey !

Ari. Silver ! there it goes, Silver !

Pro. Fury ! Fury ! there, Tyrant, there ! hark, hark !

[*CAL.* *STE.* and *TRIN.* are driven out.]

Go, charge my goblins that they grind their joints
With dry convulsions ; shorten up their sinews
With aged cramps ; and more pinch-spotted make
them,

Than pard ³², or cat o' mountain.

Ari. Hark, they roar.

Pro. Let them be hunted soundly : At this hour
Lie at my mercy all mine enemies :
Shortly shall all my labours end, and thou
Shalt have the air at freedom : for a little,
Follow, and do me service.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT V.

SCENE I. *Before the Cell of Prospero.*

Enter PROSPERO in his magic robes, and ARIEL.

Prospero.

OW does my project gather to a head :
My charms crack not ; my spirits obey ; and
time

Goes upright with his carriage ¹. How's the day ?

Ari. On the sixth hour ; at which time, my lord,
You said our work should cease.

Pro. I did say so,
When first I rais'd the tempest. Say, my spirit,
How fares the king and his followers ?

Ari. Confin'd together
In the same fashion as you gave in charge ;

³² Pard, i. e. Leopard
i. e. with his burthen. See Acts xxi. 15.

Just as you left them, all prisoners, sir,
In the line grove² which weather-fends your cell :
They cannot budge, till you release. The king,
His brother, and yours, abide all three distracted ;
And the remainder mourning over them,
Brim-full of sorrow, and dismay ; but chiefly
Him that you term'd, sir, *The good old lord, Gonzalo* ;
His tears run down his beard, like winter's drops
From eaves of reeds : your charm so strongly works
them,
That if you now beheld them, your affections
Would become tender.

Pro. Dost thou think so, spirit ?

Ari. Mine would, sir, were I human.

Pro. And mine shall.
Hast thou, which art but air, a touch³, a feeling
Of their afflictions ? and shall not myself,
One of their kind, that relish all as sharply
Passion as they, be kindlier mov'd than thou art ?
Though with their high wrongs I am struck to the
quick,

Yet, with my nobler reason, 'gainst my fury
Do I take part. The rarer action is
In virtue than in vengeance : they being penitent,
The sole drift of my purpose doth extend
Not a frown further. Go, release them, Ariel ;
My charms I'll break, their senses I'll restore,
And they shall be themselves.

Ari. I'll fetch them, sir. [*Exit.*]

Pro. Ye elves of hills, brooks, standing lakes, and
groves⁴ ;

And ye, that on the sands with printless foot

² Thus the old copy. The *Line*, or *Lind*, was the *Linden-tree*, now corruptly called the *Lime*. Mr. Hunter has the merit of pointing out this.

³ A sensation.

⁴ This speech is in some measure borrowed from Medea's in

Do chase the ebbing Neptune, and do fly him
When he comes back ; you demy-puppets, that
By moon-shine do the green sour⁵ ringlets make,
Whereof the ewe not bites ; and you, whose pastime
Is to make midnight-mushrooms ; that rejoice
To hear the solemn curfew ; by whose aid
(Weak masters though ye be⁶) I have be-dimm'd
The noon-tide sun, call'd forth the mutinous winds,
And 'twixt the green sea and the azur'd vault
Set roaring war : to the dread rattling thunder
Have I given fire, and rifted Jove's stout oak
With his own bolt : the strong-bas'd promontory
Have I made shake ; and by the spurs pluck'd up
The pine, and cedar : graves, at my command,
Have wak'd their sleepers ; op'd and let them forth,
By my so potent art. But this rough magic
I here abjure : and, when I have requir'd
Some heavenly music, (which even now I do,)
To work mine end upon their senses, that
This airy charm is for, I'll break my staff,
Bury it certain fathoms in the earth,
And, deeper than did ever plummet sound,
I'll drown my book.

[*Solemn music.*

Re-enter ARIEL: after him, ALONSO, with a frantic gesture, attended by GONZALO; SEBASTIAN and ANTONIO in like manner, attended by ADRIAN and FRANCISCO: They all enter the circle which PROSPERO had made, and there stand charmed; which PROSPERO observing, speaks.

Ovid; the expressions are, many of them in the old translation by Golding. But the exquisite fairy imagery is Shakspeare's own.

⁵ The old copy has *green soure*. The late Mr. Douce thought it should be *green-sward*, sometimes written *green-soord*, but the is most probably correct.

⁶ is; ye are powerful auxiliaries, but weak if left to your-
our employments are of the trivial nature before men-

A solemn air, and the best comforter
 To an unsettled fancy, cure thy brains.
 Now useless, boiling in thy skull⁷ ! There stand,
 For you are spell-stopp'd.—
 Holy Gonzalo, honourable man,
 Mine eyes, even sociable to the shew of thine,
 Fall fellowly drops.—The charm dissolves apace ;
 And as the morning steals upon the night,
 Melting the darkness, so their rising senses
 Begin to chase the ignorant fumes that mantle
 Their clearer reason.—O good Gonzalo,
 My true preserver, and a loyal sir
 To him thou follow'st ; I will pay thy graces
 Home, both in word and deed.—Most cruelly
 Didst thou, Alonso, use me and my daughter :
 Thy brother was a furtherer in the act ;—
 Thou'rt pinch'd for't now, Sebastian.—Flesh and
 blood,
 You brother mine, that entertain'd ambition,
 Expell'd remorse⁸ and nature ; who with Sebastian
 (Whose inward pinches therefore are most strong,)
 Would here have kill'd your king ; I do forgive thee,
 Unnatural though thou art !—Their understanding
 Begins to swell ; and the approaching tide
 Will shortly fill the reasonable shores,
 That now lie foul and muddy. Not one of them,
 That yet looks on me, or would know me :—Ariel,
 Fetch me the hat and rapier in my cell ;

[Exit ARIEL.]

⁷ The old copies have ‘boile within,’ which has been changed to *boil'd within*. It seems to me that, as change is necessary, the reading I have adopted is better. The poet himself tells us in Midsummer Night’s Dream, Act v. Sc. 1,

Lovers and madmen have such *seething* brains.

Two lines lower I find *Noble* suggested for *Holy* in Mr. Collier’s folio; the corrector also substitutes *flow* for *show* in the next line; but in both cases the old authentic text requires no alteration.

⁸ *Remorse* is pity, tenderness of heart; *nature* is natural affection.

I will dis-case me, and myself present,
As I was sometime Milan.—Quickly, spirit;
Thou shalt ere long be free.

ARIEL re-enters, singing, and helps to attire PROSPERO.

Ari. *Where the bee sucks, there suck I ;
In a cowslip's bell I lie :
There I couch, when owls do cry ;
On the bat's back I do fly,
After summer, merrily.
Merrily, merrily, shall I live now,
Under the blossom that hangs on the bough*⁹.

Pro. Why, that's my dainty Ariel; I shall miss thee;
But yet thou shalt have freedom · so so so—
To the king's ship, invisible as thou art.
There shalt thou find the mariners asleep
Under the hatches ; the master, and the boatswain,

⁹ This was the received opinion: so in Fairfax's Tasso, B. iv.
St. 18.—

"The goblins, fairies, fiends, and furies mad,
Ranged in flowrie dales, and mountaines hore,
And under every trembling leaf they sit."

This charming song is so generally known in connection with Dr. Arne's music, that changes in the readings or punctuation must be startling and little acceptable to the general reader. Mr. Knight's proposed change certainly mars it. If Malone's reading, of a full point after *couch*, is adopted, Theobald's substitution of *sunset* for *summer* seems to be called for, thus:

When owls do cry,
On the bat's back I do fly,
After sunset, merrily.

Ariel, who sucks honey for luxury in the cowslip's bell, retreats thither for quiet when owls are abroad and screeching. When winter approaches he follows summer on a bat's back. The bat being torpid and therefore missing in winter, it is quite allowable fairy natural philosophy, to suppose that some of them at least have flown off with fairies on their backs in pursuit of the genial weather that suited both so well.

Being awake, enforce them to this place ;
And presently, I pr'ythee.

Ari. I drink the air before me and return
Or e'er your pulse twice beat. [Exit ARIEL.]

Gon. All torment, trouble, wonder, and amazement
Inhabits here : Some heavenly power guide us
Out of this fearful country !

Pro. Behold, sir king,
The wronged duke of Milan, Prospero :
For more assurance that a living prince
Does now speak to thee, I embrace thy body ;
And to thee and thy company, I bid
A hearty welcome.

Alon. Whe'r¹⁰ thou beest he, or no,
Or some enchanted trifle to abuse me,
As late I have been, I not know : thy pulse
Beats, as of flesh and blood ; and, since I saw thee,
The affliction of my mind amends, with which,
I fear, a madness held me. This must crave
(An if this be at all) a most strange story.
Thy dukedom I resign ; and do entreat
Thou pardon me my wrongs :—But how should

Prospero
Be living, and be here ?

Pro. First, noble friend,
Let me embrace thine age ; whose honour cannot
Be measur'd, or confin'd.

Gon. Whether this be,
Or be not, I'll not swear.

Pro. You do yet taste
Some subtleties¹¹ o' the isle, that will not let you
Believe things certain :—Welcome, my friends all :—

¹⁰ Whe'r, whether.

¹¹ Subtleties are quaint deceptive inventions ; the word is common to ancient cookery, in which a disguised or ornamented dish is termed.

But you, my brace of lords, were I so minded,

[*Aside to SEB. and AN.*

I here could pluck his highness' frown upon you,
And justify you traitors : at this time
I'll tell no tales.

Seb. The devil speaks in him. [*Aside*
Pro. No :-

For you, most wicked sir, whom to call brother
Would even infect my mouth, I do forgive
Thy rankest faults ; all of them ; and require
My dukedom of thee, which, perforce, I know,
Thou must restore.

Alon. If thou beest Prospero,
Give us particulars of thy preservation :
How thou hast met us here, who three hours since¹²
Were wrack'd upon this shore ; where I have lost
(How sharp the point of this remembrance is !)
My dear son Ferdinand.

Pro. I am woe for't, sir.
Alon. Irreparable is the loss ; and Patience
Says, it is past her cure.

Pro. I rather think,
You have not sought her help ; of whose soft grace,
For the like loos, I have her sovereign aid,
And rest myself content.

Alon. You the like loss ?
Pro. As great to me, as late ; and supportable
To make the dear loss, have I means much weaker
Than you may call to comfort you ; for I
Have lost my daughter.

Alon. A daughter ?
O heavens ! that they were living both in Naples,

¹² The unity of time is most rigidly observed in this piece. The fable scarcely takes up a greater number of hours than are employed in the representation. Mr. Steevens thinks that Shakespeare purposely designed to show the cavillers of the time, that he too could write a play within all the strictest laws of probability.

The king and queen there ! that they were !—I wish
Myself were muddled in that oozy bed
Where my son lies. When did you lose your daughter?

Pro. In this last tempest. I perceive, these lords
At this encounter do so much admire,
That they devour their reason ; and scarce think
Their eyes do offices of truth, their words
Are natural breath : but, howsoe'er you have
Been justled from your senses, know for certain,
That I am Prospero, and that very duke
Which was thrust forth of Milan ; who most strangely
Upon this shore, where you were wreck'd, was landed,
To be the lord on't. No more yet of this ;
For 'tis a chronicle of day by day,
Not a relation for a breakfast, nor
Befitting this first meeting. Welcome, sir ;
This cell's my court : here have I few attendants,
And subjects none abroad : pray you, look in.
My dukedom, since you have given me again,
I will requite you with as good a thing ;
At least, bring forth a wonder, to content ye,
As much as me my dukedom.

The entrance of the Cell opens, and discovers FERDINAND and MIRANDA playing at chess.

Mira. Sweet lord, you play me false.

Fer. No, my dearest love,
I would not for the world.

Mira. Yea, for a score of kingdoms you should
wrangle¹³,

¹³ So in Henry V. the king, in allusion to the tennis balls, directs the ambassadors to tell the dauphin—

"He hath made a match with such a *wrangleer*,
That all the courts of France shall be disturb'd
With chases."

To wrangle, in the language of the poet's time, was "to hast
or overthwart ; to run back and yet not cease to contend."

And I would call it fair play.

Alon. If this prove
A vision of the island, one dear son
Shall I twice lose.

Seb. A most high miracle!

Fer. Though the seas threaten, they are merciful:
I have curs'd them without cause.

[*Fer.* kneels to *Alon.*

Alon. Now all the blessings
Of a glad father compass thee about!
Arise, and say how thou cam'st here.

Mira. O! wonder!
How many goodly creatures are there here!
How beauteous mankind is! O brave new world,
That has such people in't!

Pro. 'Tis new to thee.

Alon. What is this maid, with whom thou wast at
play?

Your eld'st acquaintance cannot be three hours:
Is she the goddess that hath sever'd us,
And brought us thus together?

Fer. Sir, she's mortal
But, by immortal Providence, she's mine;
I chose her, when I could not ask my father
For his advice; nor thought I had one. She
Is daughter to this famous duke of Milan,
Of whom so often I have heard renown,
But never saw before; of whom I have
Received a second life, and second father
This lady makes him to me.

Alon. I am her's:
But O, how oddly will it sound, that I
Must ask my child forgiveness!

Pro. There, sir, stop
t us not burden our remembrances, with
heaviness that's gone.

Gon. I have inly wept,
Or should have spoke ere this. Look down, you gods,
And on this couple drop a blessed crown ;
For it is you, that have chalk'd forth the way
Which brought us hither !

Alon. I say, Amen, Gonzalo !

Gon. Was Milan thrust from Milan, that his issue
Should become kings of Naples ? O ! rejoice
Beyond a common joy : and set it down
With gold on lasting pillars : In one voyage
Did Claribel her husband find at Tunis ;
And Ferdinand, her brother, found a wife
Where he himself was lost ; Prospero his dukedom,
In a poor isle ; and all of us, ourselves,
When no man was his own ¹⁴.

Alon. Give me your hands :
[To FER. and MIRΛ

Let grief and sorrow still embrace his heart,
That doth not wish you joy !

Gon. Be't so ! Amen !

*Re-enter ARIEL, with the Master and Boatswain
amazedly following.*

O look, sir, look, sir ; here are more of us !
I prophesied, if a gallows were on land,
This fellow could not drown :—Now, blasphemy,
That swear'st grace o'erboard, not an oath on shore ?
Hast thou no mouth by land ? What is the news ?

Boats. The best news is, that we have safely found
Our king, and company : the next our ship,—
Which, but three' glasses since, we gave out split,—
Is tight and yare ¹⁵, and bravely rigg'd, as when
We first put out to sea.

¹⁴ When no man was his own, when no man was in his senses
or had self-possession.

¹⁵ Yare, i. e. prepared, ready.

Ari. Sir, all this service
Have I done since I went.

Pro. My tricksy¹⁶ spirit!

Alon. These are not natural events; they strengthen,
From strange to stranger:— Say, how came you
hither?

Boats. If I did think, sir, I were well awake,
I'd strive to tell you. We were dead of sleep,
And (how, we know not,) all clapp'd under hatches,
Where, but even now, with strange and several noises
Of roaring, shrieking, howling, jingling chains,
And more diversity of sounds, all horrible,
We were awak'd; straightway at liberty:
Where we, in all her trim¹⁷, freshly beheld
Our royal, good, and gallant ship; our master
Capering to eye her: on a trice, so please you,
Even in a dream, were we divided from them,
And were brought moping hither.

Ari. Was't well done?

Pro. Bravely, my diligence! Thou shalt

be free.

Alon. This is as strange a maze as e'er men trod:
And there is in this business more than nature
Was ever conduct¹⁸ of: some oracle
Must rectify our knowledge.

Pro. Sir, my liege,
Do not infest your mind with beating on¹⁹
The strangeness of this business: at pick'd leisure,

¹⁶ Florio interprets “Pargoletta; *quaint*, pretty, nimble, *trixie*, tender, small.” When we remember the tiny dimensions of Ariel, who could lie in the bell of a cowslip, the epithet, like all those of the great poet, will be found peculiarly appropriate. Prospero had before called him “My *quaint* Ariel.”

¹⁷ The old copy has “*our trim.*”

¹⁸ *Conductor.*

¹⁹ There is a vulgar expression still in use, of similar import, “*Still hammering* at it.”

Which shall be shortly, single I'll resolve you
 'Which to you shall seem probable ²⁰⁾ of every
 These happen'd accidents : till when, be cheerful,
 And think of each thing well.—Come hither, spirit ;
[Aside.]

Set Caliban and his companions free :
 Untie the spell. [Exit ARIEL.] How fares my gra-
 cious sir ?

There are yet missing of your company
 Some few odd lads, that you remember not.

Re-enter ARIEL, driving in CALIBAN, STEPHANO,
and TRINCULO, in their stolen apparel.

Ste. Every man shift for all the rest, and let no
 man take care for himself ; for all is but fortune :—
 Coragio ! bully-monster, Coragio !

Trin. If these be true spies which I wear in my
 head, here's a goodly sight.

Cal. O Setebos, these be brave spirits, indeed !
 How fine my master is ! I am afraid
 He will chastise me.

Seb. Ha, ha !

What things are these, my lord Antonio ?
 Will money buy them ?

Ant. Very like ; one of them
 Is a plain fish, and, no doubt, marketable.

Pro. Mark but the badges of these men, my lords,
 Then say, if they be true ²¹⁾.—This mis-shapen knave,
 His mother was a witch ; and one so strong
 That could control the moon ²²⁾, make flows and ebbs,

²⁰⁾ This parenthetical passage seems to mean :—" When I have explained to you, then these strange events shall seem more probable than they do now."

²¹⁾ Honest.

²²⁾ In Adlington's translation of Apuleius, 1596, 4to. a marginal note says : " Witches in old time were supposed to be of such power that they could pul downe the moone by their enchantment."

And deal in her command, without her power²³:
 These three have robb'd me; and this demi-devil
 (For he's a bastard one) had plotted with them
 To take my life: two of these fellows you
 Must know, and own; this thing of darkness I
 Acknowledge mine.

Cal. I shall be pinch'd to death.

Alon. Is not this Stephano, my drunken butler?

Seb. He is drunk now: Where had he wine?

Alon. And Trinculo is reeling ripe: Where should
 they

Find this grand liquor that hath gilded them²⁴?—
 How cam'st thou in this pickle?

Trin. I have been in such a pickle, since I saw
 you last, that, I fear me, will never out of my bones:
 I shall not fear fly-blowing.

Seb. Why, how now, Stephano?

Ste. O, touch me not; I am not Stephano, but a
 cramp.

Pro. You'd be king of the isle, sirrah?

Ste. I shoud have been a sore one then.

Alon. This is as strange a thing as e'er I look'd on

[Pointing to CALIBAL]

Pro. He is as disproportion'd in his manners,
 As in his shape:—Go, sirrah, to my cell;
 Take with you your companions; as you look
 To have my pardon, trim it handsomely.

Cal. Ay, that I will; and I'll be wise hereafte

²³ That is, 'works the same effects as the moon without aid of her power,' exercises the command of the moon without being empowered by her to do so; usurps her authority.

²⁴ The allusion is to the *elixir* of the Alchemists. The pun of being *gilded* was a trite one for being *drunk*. Fletcher in *the Chances*:

Duke. Is she not drunk too?

Wh. A little *gilded* o'er, sir; old sack, old boys,

And seek for grace : What a thrice double ass
Was I, to take this drunkard for a god,
And worship this dull fool ?

Pro.

Go to ; away !

Alon. Hence, and bestow your luggage where you
found it.

Seb. Or stole it, rather.

[*Exeunt CAL. STE. and TRIN.*

Pro. Sir, I invite your highness, and your train,
To my poor cell : where you shall take your rest
For this one night ; which (part of it) I'll waste
With such discourse, as, I not doubt, shall make it
Go quick away : the story of my life,
And the particular accidents, gone by,
Since I came to this isle : and in the morn,
I'll bring you to your ship, and so to Naples,
Where I have hope to see the nuptial
Of these our dear-belov'd solemnized ;
And thence retire me to my Milan, where
Every third thought shall be my grave.

Alon.

I long

To hear the story of your life, which must
Take the ear strangely.

Pro. I'll deliver all ;
And promise you calm seas, auspicious gales.
And sail so expeditious, that shall catch
Your royal fleet far off.—My Ariel,—chick,—
That is thy charge ; then to the elements
Be free, and fare thou well !—[*Aside.*] Please you,
draw near.

[*Exeunt.*

EPILOGUE.

SPOKEN BY PROSPERO.

NOW my charms are all o'erthrown,
 And what strength I have's mine own;
 Which is most faint: now, 'tis true,
 I must be here confin'd by you,
 Or sent to Naples: Let me not,
 Since I have my dukedom got,
 And pardon'd the deceiver, dwell
 In this bare island, by your spell;
 But release me from my bands,
 With the help of your good hands¹,
 Gentle breath of yours my sails
 Must fill, or else my project fails,
 Which was to please: Now I want
 Spirits to enforce, art to enchant;
 And my ending is despair,
 Unless I be reliev'd by prayer;
 Which pierces so, that it assaults
 Mercy itself, and frees all faults.
 As you from crimes would pardon'd be,
 Let your indulgence set me free.

¹ By your *applause*. *Noise* was supposed to dissolve a spell
 Thus before in this play:—

“ — Hush! be mute;
 Or else our *spell is marr'd*.”



TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.





WO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

PRELIMINARY REMARKS.

HIS is one of Shakspeare's earliest plays. It was not printed until it appeared in the folio of 1623, but it is mentioned by Meres in his Wits' Treasury, printed in 1598 ; yet it cannot be said to bear internal marks of composition. Pope has observed, that "the style comedy is less figurative, and more natural and unaffected than the greater part of Shakspeare's, though supposed to be the first he wrote." Malone is inclined to consider this consequence of that very circumstance, and that it is and unaffected because it was a youthful performance. Many young poets of ordinary talents are led by false adoption inflated and figurative language, why should we suppose that such should have been the course pursued by this genius? The figurative style of Othello, Lear, and Macbeth when he was an established and long practised writer, may be ascribed to the additional knowledge of men which he had acquired during a period of fifteen years in consequence of which his mind teemed with images and thoughts crowded so fast upon him, that construction, in these and some other plays of a still later date is much more difficult and involved than in the production of his youth."

en I read this play (says Johnson), I cannot but think that both in the serious and ludicrous scenes, the language is not unworthy of the sentiments of Shakspeare. It is not indeed one of his most forcible effusions ; it has neither many diversities of character, nor a strong delineation of life ; but it abounds in *γνωμαι* beyond his plays, and few have more lines or passages which, considered, are eminently beautiful."

has set what he calls a mark of reprobation upon the play. *It is true that the familiar scenes abound with quibbles,* but the poet must not be condemned for adopting a writing admired by his contemporaries ; they were not

considered low and trifling in Shakspeare's age, but on the contrary, were very generally admired and allowed for pure and genuine wit. Yet some of these scenes have much farcical drolly and invention: that of Launce with his dog in the fourth act is an instance, and surely "Speed's mode of proving his master to be in love is neither deficient in wit nor sense."

"The tender scenes in this play, though not so highly wrought as in some others, have often much sweetness of sentiment and expression." Schlegel says: "it is as if the world was obliged to accommodate itself to a transient youthful caprice, called love." Julia may be considered a light sketch of the lovely characters of Viola and Imogen. Her answer to Lucetta's advice against following her lover in disguise is a beautiful and highly poetical passage.

"That it should ever have been a question whether this comedy were the genuine and entire composition of Shakspeare appears to me very extraordinary," says Malone. "Hamner and Upton never seem to have considered whether it were his first or one of his latest pieces:—is no allowance to be made for the first flights of a young poet? nothing for the imitation of a preceding celebrated dramatist¹, which in some of the lower dialogues of this comedy (and these only) may, I think, be traced? But even these, as well as the other parts of the play, are perfectly Shakspearian (I do not say as finished and beautiful as any of his other pieces); and the same judgment must, I conceive, be pronounced concerning the Comedy of Errors and Love's Labour's Lost, by every person who is intimately acquainted with his manner of writing and thinking."

Sir William Blackstone observes, "that one of the great faults of the Two Gentlemen of Verona is the hastening too abruptly, and without preparation, to the *dénouement*, which, he thinks, shows that it was one of Shakspeare's very early performances." Dr. Johnson in his concluding observations has remarked upon the geographical errors. They cannot be defended by attributing them to his youthful inexperience, for one of his latest productions is also liable to the same objection. To which Malone replies: "The truth, I believe, is, that as he neglected to observe the rules of the drama with respect to the unities, though before he began to write they had been enforced by Sidney in a treatise which doubtless he had read; so he seems to have thought that the whole terraqueous globe was at his command; and as he brought in a child at the beginning of a play, who in the fourth act appears as a woman, so he seems to have set geo-

¹ Malone points at Lilly, whose comedies were performed with great success and admiration previous to Shakspeare's commencement of his dramatic career.

rraphy at defiance, and to have considered countries as inland or maritime just as it suited his fancy or convenience."

Some of the incidents may be supposed to have been taken from *The Arcadia*, book 1, ch. vi. where Pyrocles consents to lead the Helots. *The Arcadia* was entered on the Stationers' books in 1588. The love adventure of Julia resembles that of Viola in *Twelfth Night*, and is indeed common to many of the ancient novels.

Mrs. Lennox informs us, that the story of Proteus and Julia might be taken from a similar one in "The Diana" of Montetaylor. This pastoral romance was translated from the Spanish in Shakspeare's time, by Bartholomew Young, and published in 1598. It does not appear that it was previously published, though it was translated two or three years before by one Thomas Wilson, perhaps some parts of it may have been made public, or Shakspeare may have found the tale elsewhere. It has before been observed that Meres mentions the Two Gentlemen of Verona in his book, published in 1598. Malone conjectures that this play was the first that Shakspeare wrote, and places the date of its composition in the year 1591. It was first printed in the folio of 1623.

S. W. S.



PERSONS REPRESENTED.

DUKE of MILAN, *Father to Silvia.*
VALENTINE, { *Gentlemen of Verona.*
PROTEUS,¹ }
ANTONIO, *Father to Proteus.*
THURIO, *a foolish Rival to Valentine.*
EGLAMOUR, *Agent for Silvia in her escape.*
SPEED, *a clownish Servant to Valentine.*
LAUNCE, *Servant to Proteus.*
PANTHINO, *Servant to Antonio.*
Host, *where Julia lodges in Milan.*
Outlaws,

JULIA, *a Lady of Verona, beloved by Proteus.*
SILVIA, *the Duke's Daughter, beloved by Valentine.*
LUCETTA, *Waitingwoman to Julia.*

Servants, Musicians.

SCENE, *sometimes in VERONA; sometimes in MILAN;*
and on the frontiers of MANTUA.

¹ In the old copy, this name is everywhere spelled *Proteus*, as it is wherever it occurs in cotemporary writers, as in Lodge's "Wits Miserie," &c. It was probably therefore pronounced with a more lengthened sound than Proteus would be. Perhaps the old spelling should have been retained.



W^O GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

ACT I.

SCENE I. *An open place in Verona.*

Enter VALENTINE and PROTEUS.

Valentine.

EASE to persuade, my loving Proteus ;
Home-keeping youth have ever homely
wits.¹

Wer't not, affection chains thy tender days
, the sweet glances of thy honour'd love,
rather would entreat thy company,
, see the wonders of the world abroad,
ian living dully sluggardiz'd at home,
ear out thy youth with shapeless idleness².
it, since thou lov'st, love still, and thrive therein,
en as I would, when I to love begin.

Pro. Wilt thou begone ? Sweet Valentine, adieu !
ink on thy Proteus, when thou, haply, seest

Milton has the same play upon words in his Comus.

“ It is for homely features to keep home,
They had their name thence.”

The expression *shapeless idleness* is admirably expressive, as
plying that idleness prevents the giving form or character to
manners.

Some rare note-worthy object in thy travel :
 Wish me partaker in thy happiness,
 When thou dost meet good hap ; and, in thy danger,
 If ever danger do environ thee,
 Commend thy grievance to my holy prayers,
 For I will be thy bead's-man³, Valentine.

Val. And on a love-book pray for my success.

Pro. Upon some book I love, I'll pray for thee.

Val. That's on some shallow story of deep love,
 How young Leander cross'd the Hellespont⁴.

Pro. That's a deep story of a deeper love ;
 For he was more than over shoes in love.

Val. 'Tis true ; but⁵ you are over boots in love,
 And yet you never swam the Hellespont.

Pro. Over the boots ? nay, give me not the boots⁶.

Val. No, I will not, for it boots thee not.

Pro. What?

Val. To be in love, where scorn is bought with
 groans ;

Coy looks, with heart-sore sighs ; one fading mo-
 ment's mirth,

³ A *beads-man* is one who offers up *prayers* to heaven for the welfare of another. In A. Saxon *bead* is a prayer, and hence the chaplet of little balls used in the Romish church, to number the prayers said, came to be named *beads*.

⁴ The allusion is to Marlowe's poem of Hero and Leander, which was entered on the Stationers' books in 1593, though not published till 1598. It was probably circulated in manuscript in the interim, as was the custom at that period. The poem seems to have made an impression on Shakspeare, who appears to have recently perused it, for he again alludes to it in the third act, and in As You Like It he has quoted a line from it.

⁵ The old copy has *for*, a very probable misprint, which is corrected in Mr. Collier's folio to *but*.

⁶ "Nay, give me not the boots :" a proverbial expression, used, signifying, 'Don't make a laughing-stock of me.' such have a phrase *Bailler foin en corne* : which Cotgrave ts, 'To give one the boots; to sell him a bargain.' Per-
 deduced from a humorous punishment at harvest home Warwickshire.

With twenty watchful, weary, tedious nights :
If haply won, perhaps a hapless gain ;
If lost, why then a grievous labour won ;
However, but a folly bought with wit,
Or else a wit by folly vanquished.

Pro. So, by your circumstance, you call me fool.
Val. So, by your circumstance⁷, I fear, you'll prove.
Pro. 'Tis Love you cavil at ; I am not Love.
Val. Love is your master, for he masters you :
And he that is so yoked by a fool,
Methinks should not be chronicled for wise.

Pro. Yet writers say ; As in the sweetest bud
The eating canker dwells, so eating love
Inhabits in the finest wits of all.

Val. And writers say ; As the most forward bud
Is eaten by the canker ere it blow,
Even so by Love the young and tender wit
Is turn'd to folly ; blasting in the bud,
Losing his verdure even in the prime,
And all the fair effects of future hopes.
But wherefore waste I time to counsel thee,
That art a votary to fond desire ?
Once more adieu : my father at the road
Expects my coming, there to see me shipp'd.

Pro. And thither will I bring thee, Valentine.
Val. Sweet Proteus, no ; now let us take our leave.
To⁸ Milan, let me hear from thee by letters,
Of thy success in love, and what news else
Betideth here in absence of thy friend ;
And I likewise will visit thee with mine.

Pro. All happiness bechance to thee in Milan !
Val. As much to you at home ! and so, farewell !

[Exit VALENTINE.

⁷ Circumstance is used equivocally. It here means conduct ; in the preceding line, circumstantial deduction.

⁸ The construction of this passage is, "Let me hear from thee - letters to Milan," i. e. addressed to Milan.

Pro. He after honour hunts, I after love.
 He leaves his friends, to dignify them more ;
 I leave myself, my friends, and all for love.
 Thou, Julia, thou hast metamorphos'd me ;
 Made me neglect my studies, lose my time,
 War with good counsel, set the world at nought ;
 Made wit with musing weak, heart sick with thought.

Enter SPEED.

Speed. Sir Proteus, save you : Saw you my master ?
Pro. But now he parted hence, to embark for Milan.
Speed. Twenty to one then, he is shipp'd already ;
 And I have played the sheep⁹, in losing him.

Pro. Indeed a sheep doth very often stray
 An if the shepherd be awhile away.

Speed. You conclude that my master is a shepherd
 then, and I a sheep ?

Pro. I do.

Speed. Why then, my horns are his horns, whether
 I wake or sleep.

Pro. A silly answer, and fitting well a sheep.

Speed. This proves me still a sheep.

Pro. True ; and thy master a shepherd.

Speed. Nay, that I can deny by a circumstance.

Pro. It shall go hard, but I'll prove it by another.

Speed. The shepherd seeks the sheep, and not the
 sheep the shepherd ; but I seek my master, and my
 master seeks not me : therefore I am no sheep.

Pro. The sheep for fodder follow the shepherd,
 the shepherd for food follows not the sheep ; thou
 for wages followest thy master, thy master for wages
 follows not thee : therefore thou art a sheep.

Speed. Such another proof will make me cry baa.

⁹ In Warwickshire, and some other counties, a sheep is pro-
 nounced a ship. Without this explanation the jest, such as it
 might escape the reader.

Pro. But dost thou hear! gav'st thou my letter to Julia?

Speed. Ay, sir; I, a lost mutton, gave your letter to her, a laced mutton¹⁰; and she, a laced mutton, gave me, a lost mutton, nothing for my labour.

Pro. Here's too small a pasture for such a store of muttions.

Speed. If the ground be overcharged, you were best stick her.

Pro. Nay, in that you are astray; 'twere best pound you.

Speed. Nay, sir, less than a pound shall serve me for carrying your letter.

Pro. You mistake; I mean the pound, a pinfold.

Speed. From a pound to a pin? fold it over and over,

'Tis threefold too little for carrying a letter to your lover.

Pro. But what said she? did she nod¹¹?

Speed. I. [SPEED nods.]

Pro. Nod, I? why, that's noddy.

Speed. You mistook, sir; I say she did nod: and you ask me, if she did nod? and I say, I.

Pro. And that set together is—noddy.

Speed. Now you have taken the pains to set it together, take it for your pains.

¹⁰ Cotgrave explains *laced mutton*, une garce, putain, fille de joye. It was so established a term for a courtezan, that a lane in Clerkenwell, much frequented by loose women, is said to have been thence called Mutton Lane. What is meant by *laced*, may be gathered from Deloney's Thomas of Reading, Chap. ii. "No meat pleased him so well as *mutton*, such as was *laced* in a red petticoat."

"Did she nod?" These words were supplied by Theobald to introduce what follows. In Speed's answer, the old spelling of the affirmative particle has been retained; otherwise the conceit would be unintelligible. *Noddy* was a game at cards, the knave as so called, and is still sometimes termed "*his nob*."

Pro. No, no, you shall have it for bearing the letter.

Speed. Well, I perceive I must be fain to bear with you.

Pro. Why, sir, how do you bear with me?

Speed. Marry, sir, the letter very orderly; having nothing but the word, noddy, for my pains.

Pro. Besrew me, but you have a quick wit.

Speed. And yet it cannot overtake your slow purse.

Pro. Come, come, open the matter in brief: What said she?

Speed. Open your purse, that the money and the matter may be both at once delivered.

Pro. Well, sir, here is for your pains: What said she?

Speed. Truly, sir, I think you'll hardly win her.

Pro. Why? Could'st thou perceive so much from her?

Speed. Sir, I could perceive nothing at all from her; no, not so much as a ducat for delivering your letter: And being so hard to me that brought your mind, I fear she'll prove as hard to you in telling your mind.¹² Give her no token but stones, for she's as hard as steel.

Pro. What, said she nothing?

Speed. No, not so much as—*take this for thy pains.* To testify your bounty, I thank you, you have testern'd¹³ me; in requital whereof, henceforth carry

¹² The first folio copy reads *your*, Steevens follows the second, and reads *her*. Malone explains the old reading thus—She being so hard to me who was the bearer of your mind, I fear she will prove no less so to you in the act of telling your mind. The corrector of Mr. Collier's folio has, with some license, thrown this passage into rhyme, probably for effect on the stage.

¹³ "You have *testerned* me," i.e. given me sixpence. *Testers* (or as we now commonly call them, *testers*), from a head *was* upon them, were coined in 1542. Sir H. Spelman says

ur letters yourself : and so, sir, I'll commend you
my master.

Pro. Go, go, begone, to save your ship from wrack ;
hich cannot perish, having thee aboard,
ing destined to a drier death on shore :—
nust go send some better messenger ;
ear my Julia would not deign my lines,
ceiving them from such a worthless post.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The same. Garden of Julia's House.*

Enter JULIA and LUCETTA.

Jul. But say, Lucetta, now we are alone,
ould'st thou then counsel me to fall in love ?

Luc. Ay, madam ; so you stumble not unheed-
fully.

Jul. Of all the fair resort of gentlemen,
at every day with parle encounter me,
thy opinion, which is worthiest love ?

Luc. Please you, repeat their names, I'll show my
mind

cording to my shallow simple skill.

Jul. What think'st thou of the fair Sir Eglamour ?

Luc. As of a knight well-spoken, neat and fine ;
it, were I you, he never should be mine.

Jul. What think'st thou of the rich Mercatio ?

Luc. Well of his wealth ; but of himself, so, so.

Jul. What think'st thou of the gentle Proteus ?

Luc. Lord, lord ! to see what folly reigns in us !

Jul. How now ! what means this passion at his
name ?

were a French coin of the value of 18d. ; and he does not
but that they might have gone for as much in England.
were afterward reduced to 12d., 9d., and finally, to sixpence.

Luc. Pardon, dear madam ; 'tis a passing shame,
That I, unworthy body as I am,
Should censure¹ thus on lovely gentlemen².

Jul. Why not on Proteus, as of all the rest ?

Luc. Then thus,—of many good I think him
best.

Jul. Your reason ?

Luc. I have no other but a woman's reason ;
I think him so, because I think him so.

Jul. And would'st thou have me cast my love on
him ?

Luc. Ay, if you thought your love not cast away.

Jul. Why, he of all the rest hath never mov'd me.

Luc. Yet he of all the rest, I think, best loves ye.

Jul. His little speaking shows his love but small.

Luc. Fire³, that's closest kept, burns most of all.

Jul. They do not love that do not show their love.

Luc. O, they love least, that let men know their love.

Jul. I would, I knew his mind.

Luc. Peruse this paper, madam.

Jul. To Julia.—Say, from whom ?

Luc. That the contents will show.

Jul. Say, say ; who gave it thee ?

Luc. Sir Valentine's page ; and sent, I think, from
Proteus :

He would have given it you, but I, being in the way,
Did in your name receive it ; pardon the fault, I pray.

¹ To *censure*, in Shakspeare's time, generally signified to give one's judgment or opinion. Thus in *The Winter's Tale*, Act ii. Sc. 1 :

“ ——— How blest am I

In my just *censure*? in my true opinion?”

² In Mr. Collier's folio, the following passage is also made to rhyme by the annotator, certainly not to its improvement :

That I unworthy body as *I can*
Should censure thus a loving gentleman.

³ *Fire* is here pronounced as a dissyllable.

Jul. Now, by my modesty, a goodly broker⁴!
Dare you presume to harbour wanton lines?
To whisper and conspire against my youth?
Now, trust me, 'tis an office of great worth,
And you an officer fit for the place.
There, take the paper, see it be return'd;
Or else return no more into my sight.

Luc. To plead for love deserves more fee than hate.

Jul. Will you⁵ be gone?

Luc. That you may ruminate.

[*Exit.*]

Jul. And yet, I would I had o'erlook'd the letter.
It were a shame to call her back again,
And pray her to a fault for which I chid her.
What fool is she, that knows I am a maid,
And would not force the letter to my view!
Since maids, in modesty, say *No*, to that
Which they would have the profferer construe, *Ay*.
Fie, fie, how wayward is this foolish love,
That, like a testy babe, will scratch the nurse,
And presently, all humbled, kiss the rod!
How churlishly I chid Lucetta hence,
When willingly I would have had her here!
How angerly I taught my brow to frown,
When inward joy enfor'd my heart to smile!
My penance is, to call Lucetta back,
And ask remission for my folly past:—
What ho! Lucetta!

Re-enter LUCETTA.

Luc. What would your ladyship?

Jul. Is it near dinner time?

Luc. I would it were:

⁴ "A goodly broker," a matchmaker. It was sometimes used for a procress.

⁵ First folio, *ye*.

That you might kill your stomach⁶ on your meat,
And not upon your maid.

Jul. What is't that you took up
So gingerly?

Luc. Nothing.

Jul. Why didst thou stoop then?

Luc. To take a paper up that I let fall.

Jul. And is that paper nothing?

Luc. Nothing concerning me.

Jul. Then let it lie for those that it concerns.

Luc. Madam, it will not lie where it concerns,
Unless it have a false interpreter.

Jul. Some love of your's hath writ to you in rhyme.

Luc. That I might sing it, madam, to a tune:
Give me a note: your ladyship can set⁷.

Jul. As little by such toys as may be possible:
Best sing it to the tune of *Light o' love*⁸.

Luc. It is too heavy for so light a tune.

Jul. Heavy? belike it hath some burden then.

Luc. Ay; and melodious were it, would you sing it.

Jul. And why not you?

Luc. I cannot reach so high.

Jul. Let's see your song:—How now, minion?

Luc. Keep tune there still, so you will sing it out:
And yet, methinks, I do not like this tune.

Jul. You do not?

Luc. No, madam; it is too sharp.

Jul. You, minion, are too saucy.

Luc. Nay, now you are too flat,

⁶ *Stomach* is here used in a double sense for *anger* and *hunger*.

⁷ *Set* is here used equivocally. Lucy uses it in the sense in which it is used by musicians, and Julia affects to understand it in a quite different sense. To *set by* in old language signifies, to make account of, to estimate. See the First Book of Samuel, xviii. 30.

⁸ *Light o' love.* This tune is frequently mentioned in the productions of Shakspere's time.

And mar the concord with too harsh a descant⁹:

There wanteth but a mean to fill your song.

Jul. The mean is drown'd with your unruly base.

Luc. Indeed, I bid the base¹⁰ for Proteus.

Jul. This babble shall not henceforth trouble me.

Here is a coil¹¹ with protestation!

[Tears the letter.]

Go, get you gone; and let the papers lie:

You would be fingering them, to anger me.

Luc. She makes it strange; but she would be best
pleas'd

To be so anger'd with another letter¹². [Exit.]

Jul. Nay, would I were so anger'd with the same!
O hateful hands, to tear such loving words!

Injurious wasps! to feed on such sweet honey,
And kill the bees, that yield it, with your stings!
I'll kiss each several paper for amends.

And here is writ—*kind Julia*;—*unkind Julia*!

As in revenge of thy ingratitude,
I throw thy name against the bruising stones,
Trampling contemptuously on thy disdain.

Look, here is writ—*love-wounded Proteus*;—
Poor wounded name! my bosom, as a bed,
Shall lodge thee, till thy wound be throughly heal'd;
And thus I search it with a sovereign kiss.
But twice, or thrice, was Proteus written down:
Be calm, good wind, blow not a word away,

⁹ *Descant* signified formerly what we now call *variations*. It has been well defined to be musical paraphrase. The *mean* is the minor in music.

¹⁰ To *bid the base* means, to run fast, challenging another to pursue at the rustic game called Base, or Prisonbase. The allusion is somewhat obscure, but it appears to mean here, “to challenge to an encounter.”

¹¹ *Coil*, i. e. bustle, stir.

¹² Thus altered to *rhyme* by the corrector of Mr. Collier's folio:
She makes it strange, but she would be pleased better
To be so anger'd with another letter.

Till I have found each letter in the letter,
 Except mine own name ; that some whirlwind bear
 Unto a ragged, fearful, hanging rock,
 And throw it thence into the raging sea !
 Lo, here in one line is his name twice writ,—
Poor forlorn Proteus, passionate Proteus,
To the sweet Julia ;—that I'll tear away
 And yet I will not, sith so prettily
 He couples it to his complaining names.
 Thus will I fold them one upon another ;
 Now kiss, embrace, contend, do what you will.

Re-enter LUCETTA.

Luc. Madam,
 Dinner is ready, and your father stays.

Jul. Well, let us go.

Luc. What, shall these papers lie like tell-tales here?

Jul. If you respect them, best to take them up.

Luc. Nay, I was taken up for laying them down :
 Yet here they shall not lie, for¹³ catching cold.

Jul. I see you have a month's mind¹⁴ to them.

Luc. Ay, madam, you may say what sights you see¹⁵ ;
 I see things too, although you judge I wink.

Jul. Come, come, will't please you go ? [*Exeunt.*

¹³ “for catching cold,” i. e. lest they should catch cold, anciently a common form of expression. See Horne Tooke’s explanation of this word in the first volume of “The Diversions of Purley.”

¹⁴ MONTH’S MIND, *a longing*, probably from “the longing of women, which takes place (or commences, at least) in the first month of pregnancy.” This is the ingenious conjecture of John Croft, Esq. of York. The commentators have endeavoured to refer this passage to the *month’s minds*, or periodical celebrations in memory of dead persons, usual in times of popery ;—but the phrase in this place can have no relation to them.

¹⁵ This line is made to rhyme with the next by the following substitution in Mr. Collier’s folio.

Ay, madam, you may see what sights you think.

SCENE III. *The same. A Room in Antonio's House.*

Enter ANTONIO and PANTHINO.

Ant. Tell me, Panthino, what sad¹ talk was that,
Wherewith my brother held you in the cloister?

Pant. 'Twas of his nephew Proteus, your son.

Ant. Why, what of him?

Pant. He wonder'd, that your lordship
Would suffer him to spend his youth at home ;
While other men, of slender reputation,
Put forth their sons to seek preferment out :
Some, to the wars, to try their fortune there ;
Some, to discover islands far away ;
Some, to the studious universities.
For any, or for all these exercises,
He said, that Proteus, your son, was meet ;
And did request me, to impótune you,
To let him spend his time no more at home,
Which would be great impeachment² to his age,
In having known no travel in his youth.

Ant. Nor need'st thou much impótune me to that
Whereon this month I have been hammering.
I have consider'd well his loss of time ;
And how he cannot be a perfect man,
Not being try'd and tutor'd in the world :
Experience is by industry achiev'd,
And perfected by the swift course of time :
Then, tell me, whither were I best to send him ?

Pant. I think, your lordship is not ignorant,
How his companion, youthful Valentine,
Attends the emperor in his royal court.

Ant. I know it well.

¹ Sad talk, i. e. grave or serious.

² Impeachment in this passage means reproach or imputation.

Pant. 'Twere good, I think, your lordship sent him
thither :

There shall he practise tilts and tournaments,
Hear sweet discourse, converse with noblemen ;
And be in eye of every exercise,
Worthy his youth and nobleness of birth.

Ant. I like thy counsel : well hast thou advised :
And, that thou may'st perceive how well I like it,
The execution of it shall make known ;
Even with the speediest expedition
I will despatch him to the emperor's court.

Pant. To-morrow, may it please you, Don Al-
phonso,
With other gentlemen of good esteem,
Are journeying to salute the emperor,
And to commend their service to his will.

Ant. Good company ; with them shall Proteus go :
And, in good time,—now will we break with him.³

Enter PROTEUS.

Pro. Sweet love ! sweet lines ! sweet life !
Here is her hand, the agent of her heart :
Here is her oath for love, her honour's pawn :
O, that our fathers would applaud our loves,
To seal our happiness with their consents !
O heavenly Julia !

Ant. How now ? what letter are you reading there ?
Pro. May't please your lordship, 'tis a word or two
Of commendations sent from Valentine,
Deliver'd by a friend that came from him.

Ant. Lend me the letter ; let me see what news.
Pro. There is no news, my lord ; but that he writes
How happily he lives, how well belov'd
And daily graced by the emperor ;

³ "Now will we break with him," i. e. break or open the matter
to him.

Wishing me with him, partner of his fortune.

Ant. And how stand you affected to his wish ?

Pro. As one relying on your lordship's will,
And not depending on his friendly wish.

Ant. My will is something sorted with his wish ;
Muse not that I thus suddenly proceed ;
For what I will, I will, and there an end.
I am resolv'd, that thou shalt spend some time
With Valentinus in the emperor's court ;
What maintenance he from his friends receives,
Like exhibition⁴ thou shalt have from me.
To-morrow be in readiness to go :
Excuse it not, for I am peremptory.

Pro. My lord, I cannot be so soon provided ;
Please you, deliberate a day or two.

Ant. Look, what thou want'st, shall be sent after
thee :

No more of stay ; to-morrow thou must go.—

Come on, Panthino ; you shall be employed

To hasten on his expedition.

[*Exeunt ANT. and PANT.*

Pro. Thus have I shunn'd the fire, for fear of
burning ;

And drench'd me in the sea, where I am drown'd :

I fear'd to shew my father Julia's letter,

Lest he should take exceptions to my love ;

And with the vantage of mine own excuse

Hath he excepted most against my love.

O, how this spring of love resembleth⁵

The uncertain glory of an April day ;

Which now shows all the beauty of the sun,

And by and by a cloud takes all away !

⁴ *Exhibition* is allowance of money ; it is still used in the Universities for a stipend.

⁵ *Resembleth* is pronounced as if written *resembeleth*, which makes it a quadrisyllable.

Re-enter PANTHINO.

Pant. Sir Proteus, your father calls for you;
He is in haste, therefore, I pray you go.

Pro. Why, this it is! my heart accords thereto;
And yet a thousand times it answers, no. [*Exeunt.*

ACT II.

SCENE I. Milan. *A Room in the Duke's Palace.*

Enter VALENTINE and SPEED.

Speed.

IR, your glove.

Val. Not mine; my gloves are on.
Speed. Why then this may be yours, for this
is but one¹.

Val. Ha! let me see: ay, give it me, it's mine:—
Sweet ornament that decks a thing divine!
Ah Silvia! Silvia!

Speed. Madam Silvia! madam Silvia!

Val. How now, sirrah?

Speed. She is not within hearing, sir.

Val. Why, sir, who bade you call her?

Speed. Your worship, sir; or else I mistook.

Val. Well, you'll still be too forward.

Speed. And yet I was last chidden for being too
slow.

Val. Go to, sir; tell me, do you know madam
Silvia?

Speed. She that your worship loves?

Val. Why, how know you that I am in love?

Speed. Marry, by these special marks: First, you

and one were anciently pronounced alike, and frequently

rned, like Sir Proteus, to wreath your arms
nale-content: to relish a love-song, like a
l-breast; to walk alone, like one that had
ilence; to sigh, like a school-boy that had
A. B. C.; to weep, like a young wench that
ed her grandam; to fast, like one that takes
watch, like one that fears robbing; to speak
like a beggar at Hallowmas³. You were
hen you laugh'd, to crow like a cock; when
ked, to walk like one of the lions; when you
it was presently after dinner; when you
sadly, it was for want of money: and now
o⁴ metamorphosed with a mistress, that, when
n you, I can hardly think you my master.

Are all these things perceived in me?

. They are all perceived without ye.

Without me? They cannot.

. Without you! nay, that's certain, for, with-
were so simple, none else would: but you
without these follies, that these follies are
you, and shine through you like the water in
al; that not an eye, that sees you, but is a
n to comment on your malady.

But, tell me, dost thou know my lady Silvia?

. She that you gaze on so, as she sits at supper?

Hast thou observed that? even she I mean.

. Why, sir, I know her not.

ke diet is to be under a regimen for a disease.
east of All-hallows, or All Saints, at which time the poor
shire go from parish to parish a soul^{ing}, as they call it;
y and puling (or singing small, as Bailey's Dictionary
puling), for soul cakes, and singing what they call the
ng. These terms point out the condition of this bene-
which was, that the beggars should pray for the souls
er's departed friends.

tot in the old copy, but added in my corrected second

Val. Dost thou know her by my gazing on her, and yet know'st her not?

Speed. Is she not hard-favour'd, sir?

Val. Not so fair, boy, as well favour'd.

Speed. Sir, I know that well enough.

Val. What dost thou know?

Speed. That she is not so fair, as (of you) well-favour'd.

Val. I mean, that her beauty is exquisite, but her favour infinite.

Speed. That's because the one is painted, and the other out of all count.

Val. How painted? and how out of count?

Speed. Marry, sir, so painted to make her fair, that no man 'counts of her beauty.

Val. How esteem'st thou me? I account of her beauty.

Speed. You never saw her since she was deform'd.

Val. How long hath she been deform'd?

Speed. Ever since you loved her.

Val. I have loved her ever since I saw her; and still I see her beautiful.

Speed. If you love her, you cannot see her.

Val. Why?

Speed. Because love is blind. O, that you had mine eyes; or your own eyes had the lights they were wont to have, when you chid at Sir Proteus for going ungartered⁵!

Val. What should I see then?

Speed. Your own present folly, and her passing deformity: for he, being in love, could not see to garter his hose; and you, being in love, cannot see to put on your hose.

Going ungartered is enumerated by Rosalind as one of the doubted marks of love. "Then your hose should be *ungartered*, your bonnet unbanded," &c. As You Like It, iii. 2.

Val. Belike, boy, then you are in love; for last morning you could not see to wipe my shoes.

Speed. True, sir; I was in love with my bed: I thank you, you swinged me for my love, which makes me the bolder to chide you for yours.

Val. In conclusion, I stand affected to her.

Speed. I would you were set⁶, so, your affection would cease.

Val. Last night she enjoined me to write some lines to one she loves.

Speed. And have you?

Val. I have.

Speed. Are they not lamely writ?

Val. No, boy, but as well as I can do them:—
Peace, here she comes.

Enter SILVIA.

Speed. O excellent motion⁷! O exceeding puppet! now will he interpret to her.

Val. Madam and mistress, a thousand good-mornings.

Speed. O, 'give you good even! here's a million of manners.

[Aside.]

Sil. Sir Valentine and servant⁸, to you two thousand.

Speed. He should give her interest, and she gives it him.

Val. As you enjoin'd me, I have writ your letter, Unto the secret nameless friend of yours;

⁶ *Set*, for seated, in opposition to stand in the preceding line. It appears, however, to be used metaphorically in the sense applied to the sun when it sinks below the horizon in the west.

⁷ *A motion* signified, in Shakspeare's time, a *puppet-show*. Speed means to say, what a fine puppet-show shall we have now? Here is the principal *puppet* to whom my master will be the interpreter. The showman was then frequently called the interpreter.

⁸ It was the custom with ladies formerly to call their admirers their *servants*.

Which I was much unwilling to proceed in,
But for my duty to your ladyship.

Sil. I thank you, gentle servant : 'tis very clerkly done.

Val. Now trust me, madam, it came hardly off ;
For, being ignorant to whom it goes,
I writ at random, very doubtfully.

Sil. Perchance you think too much of so much pain ?

Val. No, madam, so it stead you, I will write,
Please you command, a thousand times as much.
And yet,—

Sil. A pretty period ! Well, I guess the sequel ;
And yet I will not name it :—and yet I care not ;—
And yet take this again ;—and yet I thank you ;
Meaning henceforth to trouble you no more.

Speed. And yet you will ; and yet, another yet.

Val. What means your ladyship? do you not like it ?
Sil. Yes, yes ; the lines are very quaintly writ,
But since unwillingly, take them again ;
Nay, take them.

Val. Madam, they are for you.

Sil. Ay, ay ; you writ them, sir, at my request ;
But I will none of them ; they are for you :
I would have had them writ more movingly.

Val. Please you, I'll write your ladyship another.

Sil. And, when it's writ, for my sake read it over :
And, if it please you, so ; if not, why, so.

Val. If it please me, madam ! what then ?

Sil. Why if it please you, take it for your labour ;
And so good-morrow, servant. [Exit SILVIA.]

Speed. O jest unseen, inscrutable, invisible,
nose on a man's face, or a weathercock on a
steeple !

Her sues to her ; and she hath taught her suitor,
her pupil, to become her tutor.

O excellent device ! was there ever heard a better ?
That my master, being scribe, to himself should write
the letter ?

Val. How now, sir ! what are you reasoning with
yourself ?

Speed. Nay, I was rhyming ; 'tis you that have the
reason.

Val. To do what ?

Speed. To be a spokesman from madam Silvia.

Val. To whom ?

Speed. To yourself : why, she wooes you by a figure.

Val. What figure ?

Speed. By a letter, I should say.

Val. Why, she hath not writ to me ?

Speed. What need she, when she hath made you
write to yourself ? Why, do you not perceive the jest ?

Val. No, believe me.

Speed. No believing you indeed, sir : But did you
perceive her earnest ?

Val. She gave me none, except an angry word.

Speed. Why, she hath given you a letter.

Val. That's the letter I writ to her friend.

Speed. And that letter hath she deliver'd, and there
an end.

Val. I would, it were no worse !

Speed. I'll warrant you, 'tis as well :

For often have you writ to her ; and she, in modesty,
Or else for want of idle time, could not again reply ;
Or fearing else some messenger, that might her mind dis-
cover,

Herself hath taught her love himself to write unto her lover.
All this I speak in print⁷ ; for in print I found it.—
Why muse you, sir ? 'tis dinner-time.

Val. I have dined.

⁷ *In print, i. e. with exactness.* Speed affects to be repeating
some lines which he has read. He speaks as if reading.

RECORDED BY TELETYPE
AT 10:00 AM CDT
ON JUNE 10, 1968
IN THE CITY OF
KANSAS CITY, MISSOURI
BY THE KANSAS CITY POLICE DEPARTMENT
AND THE KANSAS CITY FIRE DEPARTMENT
FOR THE USE OF THE KANSAS CITY
TELETYPE SERVICE.
THE INFORMATION CONTAINED
HEREIN WAS OBTAINED FROM
A SOURCE IDENTIFIED AS
A POLICE OFFICER. THE INFORMATION
CONTAINED HEREIN IS UNTESTED
AND IS NOT TO BE USED AS EVIDENCE
IN ANY CRIMINAL PROSECUTION.

-३८५-

*Music foregoed.—What more without a word!
I am the man himself in I cannot speak;
The words which better needs than words to grace it.*

Perry PASTERNAK

Pupil. Sir Preceptor, you are scold for.

III. Go; I come, I come:
Alas! this parting strikes poor lovers dumb. [Exit.]

SCENE III. *The same. A Street.*

Enter LAUNCE, leading a Dog.

Laun. Nay, 'twill be this hour ere I have done weeping ; all the kind¹ of the Launces have this very fault : I have received my proportion, like the prodigious son, and am going with sir Proteus to the Imperial's court. I think, Crab my dog be the sour-est-natured dog that lives : my mother weeping, my father wailing, my sister crying, our maid howling, our cat wringing her hands, and all our house in a great perplexity, yet did not this cruel-hearted cur shed one tear : he is a stone, a very pebble stone, and has no more pity in him than a dog. A Jew would have wept to have seen our parting ; why, my grandam having no eyes, look you, wept herself blind at my parting. Nay, I'll show you the manner of it : This shoe is my father :—no, this left shoe is my father ;—no, no, this left shoe is my mother ;—nay, that cannot be so neither ;—yes, it is so, it is so ; it hath the worser sole ; This shoe, with the hole in it, is my mother ; and this my father : A vengeance on't ! there 'tis : now, sir, this staff is my sister ; for, look you, she is as white as a lily, and as small as a wand : this hat is Nan, our maid ; I am the dog :—no, the dog is himself, and I am the dog ;—O ! the dog is me, and I am myself : Ay, so, so. Now come I to my father ; *Father, your blessing* ; now should not the shoe speak a word for weeping ; now should I kiss my father ; well he weeps on. Now come I to my mother,—O, that shoe could speak now ! like a wood² woman,—well, I

¹ *Kind, is kindred.*

² *Like a wood woman.* The folio has "like a woud-woman." Theobald corrected it. *Wood* is *crazy, wild, distracted*. "O that *shoe* could speak now, like a wood woman." *Shoe* for *she*

kiss her ;—why there 'tis ; here's my mother's breath up and down. Now come I to my sister ; mark the moan she makes : now the dog all this while sheds not a tear, nor speaks a word ; but see how I lay the dust with my tears.

Enter PANTHINO.

Pan. Launce, away, away, aboard ; thy master is shipped, and thou art to post after with oars. What's the matter ? why weepest thou, man ? Away, ass ; you will lose the tide, if you tarry any longer.

Laun. It is no matter if the tied were lost ; for it is the unkindest tied that ever any man tied.

Pan. What's the unkindest tide ?

Laun. Why, he that's tied here ; Crab, my dog.

Pan. Tut, man, I mean thou'l lose the flood ; and, in losing the flood, lose thy voyage ; and, in losing thy voyage, lose thy master ; and, in losing thy master, lose thy service ; and in losing thy service,—Why dost thou stop my mouth ?

Laun. For fear thou should'st lose thy tongue.

Pan. Where should I lose my tongue ?

Laun. In thy tale.

Pan. In thy tail ?

Laun. Lose the tide, and the voyage, and the master, and the service, and the tied ! — Why, man, if the river were dry, I am able to fill it with my tears ; if the wind were down, I could drive the boat with my sighs.

Pan. Come, come away, man ; I was sent to call thee.

Laun. Sir, call me what thou dar'st.

Pan. Wilt thou go ?

Laun. Well, I will go.

[*Exeunt.*

is substituted in my corrected second folio. Blackstone had suggested that this might be the true reading.

SCENE IV. Milan. *A Room in the Duke's Palace.*

Enter VALENTINE, SILVIA, THURIO, and SPEED.

Sil. Servant—

Val. Mistress?

Speed. Master, Sir Thurio frowns on you.

Val. Ay, boy, it's for love.

Speed. Not of you.

Val. Of my mistress then.

Speed. 'Twere good you knock'd him.

Sil. Servant, you are sad¹.

Val. Indeed, madam, I seem so.

Thu. Seem you that you are not?

Val. Haply I do.

Thu. So do counterfeits.

Val. So do you.

Thu. What seem I, that I am not?

Val. Wise.

Thu. What instance of the contrary?

Val. Your folly.

Thu. And how quote² you my folly?

Val. I quote it in your jerkin.

Thu. My jerkin is a doublet.

Val. Well, then, I'll double your folly.

Thu. How?

Sil. What, angry, Sir Thurio? do you change colour?

Val. Give him leave, madam; he is a kind of chameleon.

Thu. That hath more mind to feed on your blood,
than live in your air.

¹ i. e. you are serious.

² To quote is to mark, to observe, the old pronunciation was evidently cote from the French original. Hence the quibble, I vat it in your jerkin.

Val. You have said, sir.

Thu. Ay, sir, and done too, for this time.

Val. I know it well, sir ; you always end ere you begin.

Sil. A fine volley of words, gentlemen, and quickly shot off.

Val. 'Tis indeed, madam ; we thank the giver.

Sil. Who is that, servant ?

Val. Yourself, sweet lady ; for you gave the fire. Sir Thurio borrows his wit from your ladyship's looks, and spends what he borrows, kindly in your company.

Thu. Sir, if you spend word for word with me, I shall make your wit bankrupt.

Val. I know it well, sir : you have an exchequer of words, and, I think, no other treasure to give your followers ; for it appears by their bare liveries, that they live by your bare words.

Sil. No more, gentlemen, no more ; here comes my father.

Enter DUKE.

Duke. Now, daughter Silvia, you are hard beset. Sir Valentine, your father's in good health : What say you to a letter from your friends Of much good news ?

Val. My lord, I will be thankful To any happy messenger from thence.

Duke. Know you Don Antonio, your countryman ?

Val. Ay, my good lord, I know the gentleman To be of worth³, and worthy estimation, And not without desert so well reputed.

Duke. Hath he not a son ?

Val. Ay, my good lord ; a son, that well deserves The honour and regard of such a father.

³ Thus the old copy. In Mr. Collier's second folio it is unnecessarily altered to wealth.

e. You know him well ?

I know⁴ him as myself ; for from our infancy
we convers'd, and spent our hours together :
though myself have been an idle truant,
ng the sweet benefit of time
the mine age with angel-like perfection ;
ith Sir Proteus, for that's his name,
use and fair advantage of his days ;
ars but young, but his experience old ;
ad unmellow'd, but his judgment ripe ;
n a word, (for far behind his worth
all the praises that I now bestow),
complete in feature⁵, and in mind,
ll good grace to grace a gentleman.

e. Beshrew me, sir, but, if he make this good,
as worthy for an empress' love,
et to be an emperor's counsellor.

sir ; this gentleman is come to me,
commendation from great potentates ;
ere he means to spend his time a while :
, 'tis no unwelcome news to you.

. Should I have wish'd a thing, it had been he.

e. Welcome him then according to his worth.

I speak to you ; and you, Sir Thurio :—
alentine, I need not 'cite⁶ him to it :
id him hither to you presently. [Exit Duke.

: old copy has *knew*. The error is corrected in my second

ture in the poet's age was often used for form or person
ral. Thus Baret : 'The *feature* and facion, or the pro-
and figure of the whole body. Conformatio quædam et
otius oris et corporis.' So in Ant. and Cleop. Act ii.

* Report the *feature* of Octavian.'

also Spenser :

'Which the fair *feature* of her limbs did hide.'
for incite.

Val. This is the gentleman, I told your ladyship,
Had come along with me, but that his mistress
Did hold his eyes lock'd in her crystal looks.

Sil. Belike, that now she hath entranchis'd the
Upon some other pawn for fealty.

Val. Nay, sure, I think, she holds them prison'd
still.

Sil. Nay, then he should be blind; and, being blind,
How could he see his way to seek out you?

Val. Why, lady, love hath twenty pair of eyes.

Thu. They say, that love hath not an eye at all —

Val. To see such lovers, Thurio, as yourself:
Upon a homely object love can wink.

Enter PROTEUS.

Sil. Have done, have done; here comes the gentle-
man.

Val. Welcome, dear Proteus! — Mistress, I beseech
you,

Confirm his welcome with some special favour.

Sil. His worth is warrant for his welcome hitherto,
If this be he you oft have wish'd to hear from.

Val. Mistress, it is. Sweet lady, entertain him
To be my fellow-servant to your ladyship.

Sil. Too low a mistress for so high a servant.

Pro. Not so, sweet lady; but too mean a servant
To have a look of such a worthy mistress.

Val. Leave off discourse of disability: —
Sweet lady, entertain him for your servant.

Pro. My duty will I boast of, nothing else.

Sil. And duty never yet did want his meed;
Servant, you are welcome to a worthless mistress.

Pro. I'll die on him that says so, but yourself.

Sil. That you are welcome?

Pro. That you are worthless.

Enter Servant.

Ser. Madam, my lord your father would speak with you⁷.

Sil. I'll wait upon his pleasure. [*Exit Servant.* Come, Sir Thurio,

Go with me :—Once more, new servant, welcome : I'll leave you to confer of home affairs ; When you have done, we look to hear from you.

Pro. We'll both attend upon your ladyship.

[*Exeunt SILVIA, THURIO, and SPEED.*

Val. Now, tell me, how do all from whence you came ?

Pro. Your friends are well, and have them much commended.

Val. And how do yours ?

Pro. I left them all in health.

Val. How does your lady ? and how thrives your love ?

Pro. My tales of love were wont to weary you ; I know you joy not in a love-discourse.

Val. Ay, Proteus, but that life is alter'd now : I have done penance for contemning love ; Whose high imperious⁸ thoughts have punish'd me With bitter fasts, with penitential groans, With nightly tears, and daily heart-sore sighs ; For, in revenge of my contempt of love, Love hath chas'd sleep from my enthralled eyes, And made them watchers of mine own heart's sorrow. O, gentle Proteus ! love's a mighty lord ; And hath so humbled me, as, I confess,

⁷ In the old copy this speech is given to Thurio. Theobald introduced the servant.

⁸ *Imperious*, i. e. commanding, stately. It has been said that *imperious* and *imperial* had formerly the same meaning, but this was not the case. See *Troilus and Cressida*, Act iv. Sc. 5.

There is no woe⁹ to his correction,
 Nor, to his service, no such joy on earth !
 Now, no discourse, except it be of love ;
 Now can I break my fast, dine, sup, and sleep,
 Upon the very naked name of love.

Pro. Enough ; I read your fortune in your eye :
 Was this the idol that you worship so ?

Val. Even she ; and is she not a heavenly saint ?

Pro. No ; but she's an earthly paragon.

Val. Call her divine.

Pro. I will not flatter her.

Val. O, flatter me ; for love delights in praises.

Pro. When I was sick, you gave me bitter pills ;
 And I must minister the like to you.

Val. Then speak the truth by her ; if not divine,
 Yet let her be a principality¹⁰,
 Sovereign to all the creatures on the earth

Pro. Except my mistress.

Val. Sweet, except not any,

Except thou wilt except against my love.

Pro. Have I not reason to prefer mine own ?

Val. And I will help thee to prefer her too :
 She shall be dignified with this high honour,—
 To bear my lady's train ; lest the base earth
 Should from her vesture chance to steal a kiss,
 And, of so great a favour growing proud,
 Disdain to root the summer-swelling flower,
 And make rough winter everlastingly.

Pro. Why, Valentine, what braggardism is this ?

Val. Pardon me, Proteus : all I can, is nothing
 To her, whose worth makes other worthies nothing ;
 She is alone.

Pro. Then let her alone.

⁹ *No woe, no misery that can be compared to the punishment inflicted by love.* This elliptic mode of expression occurs in other places.

¹⁰ *A principality is an angel of the first order*

Val. Not for the world: why, man, she is mine own;
 And I as rich in having such a jewel,
 As twenty seas, if all their sand were pearl,
 The water nectar, and the rocks pure gold.
 Forgive me, that I do not dream on thee,
 Because thou seest me dote upon my love.
 My foolish rival, that her father likes,
 Only for his possessions are so huge,
 Is gone with her along; and I must after,
 For love, thou know'st, is full of jealousy.

Pro. But she loves you?

Val. Ay, and we are betroth'd;
 Nay, more, our marriage hour,
 With all the cunning manner of our flight,
 Determin'd of: how I must climb her window;
 The ladder made of cords; and all the means
 Plotted, and 'greed on, for my happiness.
 Good Proteus, go with me to my chamber,
 In these affairs to aid me with thy counsel.

Pro. Go on before; I shall inquire you forth:
 I must unto the road¹¹, to disembark
 Some necessaries that I needs must use;
 And then I'll presently attend you.

Val. Will you make haste?

Pro. I will.— [Exit *VAL.*
 Even as one heat another heat expels,
 Or as one nail by strength drives out another,
 So the remembrance of my former love
 Is by a newer object quite forgotten.
 Is it her mien¹², or *Valentinus'* praise,

¹¹ *The road*, i. e. the *haven* where the ships lie at anchor.

¹² The first folio reads, "It is *mine*," &c. The present reading is by Malone. *Mien* was spelled *mine*, the French form of the word from which it was derived.

The second folio has,

"Is it mine *then*, or *Valentinian's* praise?"

It has been proposed to read

"Is it mine *eyne*, or *Valentinus'* praise?"

Her true perfection, or my false transgression,
 That makes me, reasonless, to reason thus?
 She is fair; and so is Julia, that I love;—
 That I did love, for now my love is thaw'd;
 Which, like a waxen image 'gainst a fire¹³,
 Bears no impression of the thing it was.
 Methinks, my zeal to Valentine is cold;
 And that I love him not, as I was wont:
 O! but I love his lady too, too much;
 And that's the reason I love him so little.
 How shall I dote on her with more advice¹⁴,
 That thus without advice begin to love her?
 'Tis but her picture¹⁵ I have yet beheld,
 And that hath dazzled¹⁶ my reason's light,
 But when I look on her perfections,
 There is no reason but I shall be blind.
 If I can check my erring love, I will;
 If not, to compass her I'll use my skill.

[Exit.]

SCENE V. *The same. A Street.**Enter SPEED and LAUNCE.*

Speed. Launce! by mine honesty, welcome to
 Milan¹.

Laun. Forswear not thyself, sweet youth; for I
 am not welcome. I reckon this always—that a man

¹³ Alluding to the figures made by witches as representatives of those they meant to destroy or torment. *V. Macbeth*, Act ii. Sc. 3.

¹⁴ *With more advice*, i. e. on further knowledge, on better consideration.

¹⁵ Proteus means to say, that as yet he had only seen her outward form, without having known her long enough to have any acquaintance with her mind.

¹⁶ *Dazzled* is used as a trisyllable.

¹ The folio reads *Padua*, which was probably a lapse of the poet's pen.

never undone, till he be hanged ; nor never welcome to a place, till some certain shot be paid, and the hostess say, Welcome.

Speed. Come on, you mad-cap, I'll to the alehouse with you presently ; where, for one shot of five pence thou shalt have five thousand welcomes. But, mrah, how did thy master part with madam Julia ?

Laun. Marry, after they closed in earnest, they parted very fairly in jest.

Speed. But shall she marry him ?

Laun. No.

Speed. How then ? Shall he marry her ?

Laun. No, neither.

Speed. What, are they broken ?

Laun. No, they are both as whole as a fish.

Speed. Why then, how stands the matter with them ?

Laun. Marry, thus ; when it stands well with him, stands well with her.

Speed. What an ass art thou ! I understand thee not.

Laun. What a block art thou, that thou canst not ? My staff understands me.

Speed. What thou say'st ?

Laun. Ay, and what I do too : look thee, I'll butean, and my staff understands me.

Speed. It stands under thee, indeed.

Laun. Why, stand-under and under-stand is all one.

Speed. But tell me true, will't be a match ?

Laun. Ask my dog : if he say, Ay, it will ; if he say, No, it will ; if he shake his tail, and say nothing, it will.

Speed. The conclusion is then, that it will.

Laun. Thou shalt never get such a secret from me, but by a parable.

Speed. 'Tis well that I get it so. But, Launce,

How say'st thou¹, that my master is become a notable lover?

Launce. I never knew him otherwise,

SSpeed. Then how?

Launce. A notable hulker, as thou reportest him to be.

Speed. Why, thou whereson ass, thou mistakst me.

Launce. Why, fie, I meant not thee; I meant thy master.

Speed. I tell thee, my master is become a hot lover.

Launce. Why, I tell thee, I care not though he burn himself in love. If thou wilt go with me to the alehouse, so²; if not, thou art a Hebrew, a Jew, and not worth the name of a Christian.

Speed. Why?

Launce. Because thou hast not so much charity in thee, as to go to the ale with a Christian. Wilt thou go?

Speed. At thy service.

[Exeunt.

SCENE VI. *The same. An Apartment in the Palace.*

Enter PROTEUS.

Pro. To leave my Julia, shall I be forsown;
To love fair Silvia, shall I be forsown;
To wrong my friend, I shall be much forsown;
And even that power, which gave me first my oath,
Provokes me to this threefold perjury.

Love bade me swear, and love bids me forswear:
O sweet suggesting³ love, if thou hast sinn'd,
Teach me, thy tempted subject, to excuse it.
At first I did adore a twinkling star,
But now I worship a celestial sun.

¹ How say'st thou, i. e. what say'st thou to this circumstance.

² The word *so* was inserted in the second folio. In Launce's next speech the allusion is probably to church-ales.

³ To suggest, in the language of our ancestors, was to tempt.

Unheedful vows may heedfully be broken ;
And he wants wit, that wants resolved will
To learn his wit to exchange the bad for better.—
Fie, fie, unreverend tongue ! to call her bad,
Whose sovereignty so oft thou hast preferr'd
With twenty thousand soul-confirming oaths.
I cannot leave to love, and yet I do ;
But there I leave to love, where I should love
Julia I lose, and Valentine I lose :
If I keep them, I needs must lose myself ;
If I lose them, thus find I by their loss,
For Valentine, myself ; For Julia, Silvia.
I to myself am dearer than a friend ;
For love is still most precious in itself :
And Silvia, (witness heaven, that made her fair !)
Shews Julia but a swarthy Ethiope.
I will forget that Julia is alive,
Rememb'ring that my love to her is dead ;
And Valentine I'll hold an enemy,
Aiming at Silvia as a sweeter friend.
I cannot now prove constant to myself,
Without some treachery used to Valentine.
This night, he meaneth with a corded ladder
To climb celestial Silvia's chamber-window ;
Myself in counsel, his competitor⁴ :
Now presently I'll give her father notice
Of their disguising, and pretended⁵ flight ;
Who, all enrag'd, will banish Valentine ;

⁴ *Myself in counsel, his competitor*, i. e. myself who am his competitor or rival, being admitted to his counsel. *Competitor* here means confederate, assistant, partner. Thus in Ant. Cleop. Act v. Sc. 1.

“ That thou my brother, my competitor
In top of all design, my mate in empire,
Friend and companion in the front of war.”

⁵ *Pretended flight*, i. e. proposed or intended flight. The verb *étendre* has the same signification in French.

For Thurio, he intends, shall wed his daughter :
 But, Valentine being gone, I'll quickly cross,
 By some sly trick, blunt Thurio's dull proceeding.
Love, lend me wings to make my purpose swift,
As thou hast lent me wit to plot this drift ! [Exit.

SCENE VII. Verona. *A Room in Julia's House.*

Enter JULIA and LUCETTA.

Jul. Counsel, Lucetta ; gentle girl, assist me !
 And, even in kind love, I do conjure thee,—
 Who art the table¹ wherein all my thoughts
 Are visibly character'd and engrav'd,—
 To lesson me ; and tell me some good mean,
 How, with my honour, I may undertake
 A journey to my loving Proteus.

Luc. Alas ! the way is wearisome and long

Jul. A true-devoted pilgrim is not weary
 To measure kingdoms with his feeble steps ;
 Much less shall she, that hath love's wings to fly ;
 And when the flight is made to one so dear,
 Of such divine perfection, as Sir Proteus.

Luc. Better forbear, till Proteus make return.

Jul. O, know'st thou not, his looks are my soul's
 food ?

Pity the dearth that I have pined in,
 By longing for that food so long a time.
 Didst thou but know the inly touch of love,
 Thou would'st as soon go kindle fire with snow,
 As seek to quench the fire of love with words.

Luc. I do not seek to quench your love's hot fire ;
 But qualify the fire's² extreme rage,
 Lest it should burn above the bounds of reason.

¹ *The table*, i. e. the *table-book*, or tables. Thus in Hamlet :

“ My *tables*,—meet it is I set it down.”

Fire as a dissyllable, as if spelt *Fier*.

Jul. The more thou damm'st it up, the more it burns;
The current, that with gentle murmur glides,
Thou know'st, being stopp'd, impatiently doth rage ;
But, when his fair course is not hindered,
He makes sweet music with th' enamel'd stones,
Giving a gentle kiss to every sedge
He overtaketh in his pilgrimage ;
And so by many winding nooks he strays,
With willing sport to the wild ocean³.
Then let me go, and hinder not my course :
I'll be as patient as a gentle stream,
And make a pastime of each weary step,
Till the last step have brought me to my love ;
And there I'll rest, as, after much turmoil,
A blessed soul doth in Elysium.

Luc. But in what habit will you go along ?

Jul. Not like a woman ; for I would prevent
The loose encounters of lascivious men :
Gentle Lucetta, fit me with such weeds
As may beseem some well reputed page.

Luc. Why then your ladyship must cut your hair

Jul. No, girl ; I'll knit it up in silken strings,
With twenty odd-conceited true-love knots :
To be fantastic may become a youth
Of greater time than I shall show to be.

Luc. What fashion, madam, shall I make your
breeches ?

Jul. That fits as well, as—" tell me, good my lord,
" What compass will you wear your farthingale ?"
Why, even what fashion thou best lik'st, Lucetta.

Luc. You must needs have them with a codpiece⁴,
madam.

³ Mr. Collier's folio substitutes " the wide ocean."

⁴ Whoever wishes to be acquainted with that singular appendage to dress, a *cod-piece*, may consult " Bulwer's Artificial Changeling." *Ocular instruction* might lately have been had

Jul. Out, out, Lucetta ; that will be ill favour'd.

Luc. A round hose, madam, now's not worth a pin,
Unless you have a cod-piece to stick pins on.

Jul. Lucetta, as thou lov'st me, let me have
What thou think'st meet, and is most mannerly :
But tell me, wench, how will the world repute me,
For undertaking so unstaid a journey ?
I fear me, it will make me scandaliz'd.

Luc. If you think so, then stay at home, and go not.

Jul. Nay, that I will not.

Luc. Then never dream on infamy, but go.
If Proteus like your journey, when you come,
No matter who's displeas'd, when you are gone :
I fear me, he will scarce be pleas'd withal.

Jul. That is the least, Lucetta, of my fear :
A thousand oaths, an ocean of his tears,
And instances of infinite⁵ of love,
Warrant me welcome to my Proteus.

Luc. All these are servants to deceitful men.

Jul. Base men, that use them to so base effect !
But truer stars did govern Proteus' birth :
His words are bonds, his oaths are oracles ;
His love sincere, his thoughts immaculate ;
His tears, pure messengers sent from his heart ;
His heart as far from fraud, as heaven from earth.

Luc. Pray heaven, he prove so, when you come to
him !

from the armour shown in the Tower. However offensive this language may appear to modern ears, it certainly gave none to any of the spectators in Shakspere's days. He only used the ordinary language of his contemporaries.

⁵ The second folio reads—" *as infinite of love.*" Malone wished to read *of the infinite of love*, because he found "*the infinite of thought*" in Much Ado about Nothing. The text, which is that of the folio of 1623, seems to me sufficiently intelligible, though we are not used to such construction. Malone has cited an instance of *infinite* used for an infinity from Lord Lonsdale's Memoirs, written in 1688. Chaucer has "Although the life of it be stretched with infinite of time."

Jul. Now, as thou lov'st me, do him not that wrong,
 To bear a hard opinion of his truth ;
 Only deserve my love, by loving him ;
 And presently go with me to my chamber,
 To take a note of what I stand in need of,
 To furnish me upon my longing⁶ journey.
 All that is mine I leave at thy dispose,
 My goods, my lands, my reputation ;
 Only, in lieu thereof⁷ despatch me hence :
 Come, answer not, but to it presently ;
 I am impatient of my tarriance. [*Exeunt.*]

ACT III.

SCENE I. Milan. *An Ante-room in the Duke's Palace.*

Enter DUKE, THURIO, and PROTEUS.

Duke.

 SIR Thurio, give us leave, I pray, awhile ;
 We have some secrets to confer about. [*Exit Thurio.*]

Now, tell me, Proteus, what's your will with me ?
Pro. My gracious lord, that which I would discover,
 The law of friendship bids me to conceal :
 But, when I call to mind your gracious favours
 Done to me, undeserving as I am,
 My duty pricks me on to utter that
 Which else no worldly good should draw from me.
 Know, worthy prince, Sir Valentine, my friend,
 This night intends to steal away your daughter ;

⁶ By her *longing* journey, Julia means a journey undertaken on account of her *longing* to see her lover. She had before said that she had pined by *longing* to look on him. The corrector of Mr. Collier's folio unnecessarily substitutes *loving*.

⁷ *In lieu thereof*, i. e. in *consideration* thereof.

Myself am one made privy to the plot.
I know you have determin'd to bestow her
On Thurio, whom your gentle daughter hates;
And should she thus be stolen away from you,
It would be much vexation to your age.
Thus, for my duty's sake, I rather chose
To cross my friend in his intended drift,
Than, by concealing it, heap on your head
A pack of sorrows, which would press you down,
Being un prevented, to your timeless grave.¹

Duke. Proteus, I thank thee for thine honest care;
Which to requite, command me while I live.
This love of theirs myself have often seen,
Haply, when they have judged me fast asleep;
And oftentimes have purpos'd to forbid
Sir Valentine her company, and my court:
But, fearing lest my jealous aim² might err,
And so unworthily disgrace the man,
(A rashness that I ever yet have shunn'd),
I gave him gentle looks; thereby to find
That which thyself hast now disclos'd to me.
And, that thou mayst perceive my fear of this,
Knowing that tender youth is soon suggested³,
I nightly lodge her in an upper tower,
The key whereof myself have ever kept;
And thence she cannot be convey'd away.

Pro. Know, noble lord, they have devis'd a mean
How he her chamber-window will ascend,
And with a corded ladder fetch her down;

¹ *Timeless* is here, as elsewhere, used for *untimely*. It is also thus used by Shirley.

² *Aim*, i. e. *guess, supposition*. So Fairfax, Tasso viii. 23,

"Yet still went on, which way he could not *aim*."
In Romeo and Juliet we have—

"I *aim'd* so near when I suppos'd you lov'd."

³ *Suggested*, i. e. tempted. Vide Note on Act ii. Sc. 3, p. 132, and The Tempest, Act ii. Sc. 1.

ch the youthful lover now is gone,
 s way comes he with it presently ;
 if it please you, you may intercept him.
 d my lord, do it so cunningly,
 / discovery be not aimed at⁴ ;
 : of you, not hate unto my friend, ✓
 ade me publisher of this pretence⁵.

Upon mine honour, he shall never know
 had any light from thee of this.
 Adieu, my lord ; Sir Valentine is coming.

[Exit.

Enter VALENTINE.

Sir Valentine, whither away so fast ?
 Please it your grace there is a messenger
 ys to bear my letters to my friends,
 m going to deliver them.

Be they of much import ?
 The tenor of them doth but signify
 th, and happy being at your court.

Nay, then no matter ; stay with me a while ;
 break with thee of some affairs,
 ich me near, wherein thou must be secret.
 unknown to thee, that I have sought
 h my friend, Sir Thurio, to my daughter.
 I know it well, my lord ; and, sure, the match
 ch and honourable ; besides, the gentleman
 f virtue, bounty, worth, and qualities
 ng such a wife as your fair daughter :
 your grace win her to fancy him ?

No, trust me ; she is peevish, sullen, foward,
 disobedient, stubborn, lacking duty ;
 regarding that she is my child,
 ring me as if I were her father :
 ay I say to thee, this pride of hers,

, guessed at.

* *Pretence*, i. e. design.

Upon advice⁶, hath drawn my love from her ;
 And, where⁷ I thought the remnant of mine age
 Should have been cherish'd by her childlike duty,
 I now am full resolv'd to take a wife,
 And turn her out to who will take her in :
 Then let her beauty be her wedding-dower ;
 For me and my possessions she esteems not.

Val. What would your grace have me to do in this ?

Duke. There is a lady, sir, in Milan⁸, here,
 Whom I affect ; but she is nice, and coy,
 And nought esteems my aged eloquence :
 Now, therefore, would I have thee to my tutor,
 (For long agone I have forgot to court ;
 Besides, the fashion of the time is chang'd) ;
 How, and which way, I may bestow myself,
 To be regarded in her sun-bright eye.

Val. Win her with gifts, if she respect not words ;
 Dumb jewels often, in their silent kind,
 More than quick words, do move a woman's mind.

Duke. But she did scorn a present that I sent her.

Val. A woman sometimes scorns what best contents
 her :

Send her another ; never give her o'er ;
 For seen at first makes after-love the more.
 If she do frown, 'tis not in hate of you,
 But rather to beget more love in you :
 If she do chide, 'tis not to have you gone ;
 For why, the fools are mad, if left alone.
 Take no repulse, whatever she doth say :
 For, *get you gone*, she doth not mean, *away* :
 Flatter, and praise, commend, extol their graces,
 Though ne'er so black, say, they have angels' faces.

⁶ Advice, i. e. consideration.

⁷ Where for whereas, often used by old writers.

⁸ The old copy reads,

"There is a lady in Verona here."
 Pope made the alteration.

That man that hath a tongue, I say, is no man,
If with his tongue he cannot win a woman.

Duke. But she, I mean, is promis'd by her friends
Unto a youthful gentleman of worth ;
And kept severely from resort of men,
That no man hath access by day to her.

Val. Why then I would resort to her by night.

Duke. Ay, but the doors be lock'd, and keys kept safe,
That no man hath recourse to her by night.

Val. What lets⁹, but one may enter at her window?

Duke. Her chamber is aloft, far from the ground ;
And built so shelving that one cannot climb it
Without apparent hazard of his life.

Val. Why then, a ladder, quaintly made of cords,
To cast up with a pair of anchoring hooks,
Would serve to scale another Hero's tower,
So bold Leander would adventure it.

Duke. Now, as thou art a gentleman of blood,
Advise me where I may have such a ladder.

Val. When would you use it? pray, sir, tell me that.

Duke. This very night ; for love is like a child,
That longs for every thing that he can come by.

Val. By seven o'clock I'll get you such a ladder.

Duke. But, hark thee ; I will go to her alone ;
How shall I best convey the ladder thither ?

Val. It will be light, my lord, that you may bear it
Under a cloak that is of any length.

Duke. A cloak as long as thine will serve the turn ?

Val. Ay, my good lord.

Duke. Then let me see thy cloak ;
I'll get me one of such another length.

Val. Why, any cloak will serve the turn, my lord.

Duke. How shall I fashion me to wear a cloak ?—
I pray thee, let me feel thy cloak upon me.—
What letter is this same ? What's here ?—*To Silvia !*

⁹ *What lets,* i. e. hinders.

And here an engine fit for my proceeding?
I'll be so bold to break the seal for once. [Reads.]

*My thoughts do harbour with my Silvia nightly;
And slaves they are to me, that send them flying:
O, could their master come and go as lightly,
Himself would lodge where senseless they are lying.
My herald thoughts in thy pure bosom rest them;
While I, their king, that thither them importune,
Do curse the grace that with such grace hath bless'd them,
Because myself do want my servants' fortune:
I curse myself, for¹⁰ they are sent by me,
That they should harbour where their lord should be.
What's here?
Silvia, this night I will enfranchise thee!*

'Tis so; and here's the ladder for the purpose.—
Why, Phaëton (for thou art Merop's son,)¹¹
Wilt thou aspire to guide the heavenly car,
And with thy daring folly burn the world?
Wilt thou reach stars because they shine on thee?
Go, base intruder! over-weening slave!
Bestow thy fawning smiles on equal mates;
And think, my patience, more than thy desert,
Is privilege for thy departure hence:
Thank me for this, more than for all the favours
Which, all too much, I have bestow'd on thee.
But if thou linger in my territories
Longer than swiftest expedition
Will give thee time to leave our royal court,
By heaven, my wrath shall far exceed the love
I ever bore my daughter, or thyself.

¹⁰ For, i. e. cause, or because.

¹¹ "Thou art Phaëton in thy rashness, but without his pretensions; thou art not the son of a divinity, but a *terre filius*, a low-born wretch; Merops is thy true father, with whom Phaëton was falsely reproached."—Johnson.

Be gone, I will not hear thy vain excuse,
But, as thou lov'st thy life, make speed from hence.

[*Exit Duke.*

Val. And why not death, rather than living torment?
To die, is to be banish'd from myself;
And Silvia is myself: banish'd from her,
Is self from self; a deadly banishment!
What light is light, if Silvia be not seen?
What joy is joy, if Silvia be not by?
Unless it be to think that she is by,
And feed upon the shadow of perfection¹²,
Except I be by Silvia in the night,
There is no musick in the nightingale;
Unless I look on Silvia in the day,
There is no day for me to look upon.
She is my essence; and I leave to be,
If I be not by her fair influence
Foster'd, illumin'd, cherish'd, kept alive.
I fly not death; to fly is deadly doom¹³;
Tarry I here, I but attend on death;
But, fly I hence, I fly away from life.

Enter PROTEUS and LAUNCE.

Pro. Run, boy, run, run, and seek him out.

Laun. So-ho! so-ho!

Pro. What seest thou?

Laun. Him we go to find; there's not a hair¹⁴ on's
head, but 'tis a Valentine.

Pro. Valentine?

¹² And feed upon the shadow of perfection.

“Animum pictura pascit inani.” — *Virgil*.

The folio misprints “to fly his deadly doom.” Proteus has before said “to be banished from Silvia is to die.” He now says I do not escape death by departing; to depart is deadly doom; if I fly hence I fly away from life.

¹⁴ Launce is still quibbling, he is running down the hare he started when he first entered.

Val. No.

Pro. Who then? his spirit?

Val. Neither.

Pro. What then?

Val. Nothing.

Laun. Can nothing speak? master, shall I strike?

Pro. Whom would'st thou strike?

Laun. Nothing.

Pro. Villain, forbear.

Laun. Why, sir, I'll strike nothing: I pray you—

Pro. Sirrah, I say, forbear: Friend Valentine, a word.

Val. My ears are stopp'd, and cannot hear good news,¹⁵

So much of bad already hath possess'd them.

Pro. Then in dumb silence will I bury mine,
For they are harsh, untunable, and bad.

Val. Is Silvia dead?

Pro. No, Valentine.

Val. No Valentine, indeed, for sacred Silvia!—
Hath she forsworn me?

Pro. No, Valentine.

Val. No Valentine, if Silvia have forsworn me!—
What is your news?

Laun. Sir, there's a proclamation that you are vanish'd.

Pro. That thou art banished, O, that's the news:
From hence, from Silvia, and from me, thy friend.

Val. O, I have fed upon this woe already,
And now excess of it will make me surfeit.
Doth Silvia know that I am banished?

¹⁵ *News* is here used as a noun singular. Florio uses it as both singular and plural. Dr. Latham, in his English Grammar, p. 62, observes that, "the word *news* is, in respect to its original form, plural; in respect to its meaning either singular or plural, most frequently the former."

Pro. Ay, ay ; and she hath offer'd to the doom,
(Which, unrevers'd, stands in effectual force,)
A sea of melting pearl, which some call tears :
Those at her father's churlish feet she tender'd ;
With them, upon her knees, her humble self ;
Wringing her hands, whose whiteness so became them,
As if but now they waxed pale for woe :
But neither bended knees, pure hands held up,
Sad sighs, deep groans, nor silver-shedding tears,
Could penetrate her uncompassionate sire ;
But Valentine, if he be ta'en, must die.
Besides, her intercession chaf'd him so
When she for thy repeal was suppliant,
That to close prison he commanded her,
With many bitter threats of 'biding there.

Val. No more ; unless the next word that thou
speak'st,
Have some malignant pow'r upon my life :
If so, I pray thee, breathe it in mine ear,
As ending anthem¹⁶ of my endless dolour.

Pro. Cease to lament for that thou canst not help,
And study help for that which thou lament'st.
Time is the nurse and breeder of all good.
Here if thou stay, thou canst not see thy love ;
Besides, thy staying will abridge thy life.
Hope is a lover's staff ; walk hence with that,
And manage it against despairing thoughts.
Thy letters may be here, though thou art hence ;
Which, being writ to me, shall be deliver'd
Even in the milk-white bosom of thy love¹⁷.

¹⁶ We should unquestionably read "ending *Amen !*" as appears from the context,—"the next word that thou speak'st."

¹⁷ So in Hamlet :

"These to her excellent white bosom."

To understand this mode of addressing letters, &c. it should be known that women anciently had a pocket in the forepart of their stays, in which they carried not only love letters and love tokens,

The time now serves not to expostulate :
Come, I'll convey thee through the city gate ;
And, ere I part with thee, confer at large
Of all that may concern thy love-affairs :
As thou lov'st Silvia, though not for thyself,
Regard thy danger, and along with me.

Val. I pray thee, Launce, an if thou seest my boy,
Bid him make haste, and meet me at the north gate.

Pro. Go, sirrah, find him out. Come, Valentine.

Val. O my dear Silvia ! hapless Valentine !

[*Exeunt VALENTINE and PROTEUS.*

Laun. I am but a fool, look you ; and yet I have the wit to think, my master is a kind of a knave : but that's all one, if he be but one knave. He lives not now, that knows me to be in love : yet I am in love ; but a team of horse shall not pluck that from me ; nor who 'tis I love, and yet 'tis a woman : but what woman, I will not tell myself : and yet 'tis a milk-maid : yet 'tis not a maid, for she hath had gossips¹⁸ : yet 'tis a maid, for she is her master's maid, and serves for wages. She hath more qualities than a water-s spaniel,—which is much in a bare¹⁹ christian. Here is the cate-log [*Pulling out a paper*] of her condition²⁰. Imprimis, *She can fetch and carry*. Why, a

but even their money, &c. In many parts of England rustic damsels still continue the practice. A very old lady informed Mr. Steevens, that when it was the fashion to wear very prominent stays it was the custom for stratagem or gallantry to drop its literary favours within the front of them.

¹⁸ *Gossips* not only signify those who answer for a child in baptism, but the tattling women who attend lyings-in. The quibble is evident.

¹⁹ *Bare* has two senses, *mere* and *naked*. Launce, quibbling on, uses it in both senses, and opposes the naked female to the water-s spaniel *covered with hairs of remarkable thickness*.

²⁰ “*Condition*, honest behaviour or demeanour in living, a custume or facion. Mos. Moris, *facon de faire*.”—BARET. The old copy reads *condition*, which was changed to *conditions* by Rowe.

horse can do no more ; nay, a horse cannot fetch, but only carry ; therefore is she better than a jade. Item, *She can milk* ; look you, a sweet virtue in a maid with clean hands.

Enter SPEED.

Speed. How now, signior Launce ? what news with your mastership ?

Laun. With my master's ship ? why it is at sea.

Speed. Well, your old vice still, mistake the word : What news then in your paper ?

Laun. The blackest news that ever thou heard'st

Speed. Why, man, how black ?

Laun. Why, as black as ink.

Speed. Let me read them.

Laun. Fie on thee, jolt-head ; thou canst not read.

Speed. Thou liest, I can.

Laun. I will try thee : Tell me this ; Who begot thee ?

Speed. Marry, the son of my grandfather²¹.

Laun. O illiterate loiterer ! it was the son of thy grandmother : this proves that thou canst not read.

Speed. Come, fool, come : try me in thy paper.

Laun. There : and saint Nicholas²² be thy speed !

Speed. Imprimis, *She can milk*.

Laun. Ay, that she can.

Speed. Item, *She brews good ale*.

²¹ It is undoubtedly true that the mother only knows the legitimacy of the child. Launce infers that if Speed could read, he must have read this well known observation.

²² St. Nicholas presided over scholars, who were therefore called St. Nicholas' clerks ; either because the legend makes this saint to have been bishop while yet a boy, or from his having restored three young scholars to life. The *parish clerks* of London finding that *scholars*, more usually termed *clerks*, were under the patronage of this saint, conceived that *clerks* of any kind might have the same right, and accordingly took him as their patron, much in the same way as the woolcombers did St. Blaise, who was martyred with an instrument like a carding comb ; the nailmakers St. Clow ; and the booksellers St. John Port Latin.

Laun. And therefore comes the proverb,—Blessing of your heart, you brew good ale.

Speed. Item, *She can sew.*

Laun. That's as much as to say, can she so?

Speed. Item, *She can knit.*

Laun. What need a man care for a stock with a wench, when she can knit him a stock²³.

Speed. Item, *She can wash and scour.*

Laun. A special virtue; for then she need not be washed and scour'd.

Speed. Item, *She can spin.*

Laun. Then may I set the world on wheels, when she can spin for her living.

Speed. Item, *She hath many nameless virtues.*

Laun. That's as much as to say, bastard virtues; that, indeed, know not their fathers, and therefore have no names.

Speed. Here follow her vices.

Laun. Close at the heels of her virtues.

Speed. Item, *She is not to be kissed²⁴ fasting, in respect of her breath.*

Laun. Well, that fault may be mended with a breakfast: Read on.

Speed. Item, *She hath a sweet mouth²⁵.*

Laun. That makes amends for her sour breath.

Speed. Item, *She doth talk in her sleep.*

Laun. It's no matter for that, so she sleep not in her talk.

Speed. Item, *She is slow in words.*

Laun. O villain, that set this down among her vices! To be slow in words, is a woman's only virtue: I pray thee, out with't; and place it for her chief virtue.

²³ Stock, i. e. stocking.

²⁴ Kissed is not in the old copy, Rowe introduced it.

²⁵ Speed uses the term a sweet mouth in the sense of a sweet tooth; but Launce chooses to understand it in the literal and laudatory sense. Cotgrave renders " Friend, A sweet-lips, chaw-tie-mouthed, sweet-toothed," &c

Speed. Item, *She is proud.*

Laun. Out with that too; it was Eve's legacy, and cannot be ta'en from her.

Speed. Item, *She hath no teeth.*

Laun. I care not for that neither, because I love crusts.

Speed. Item, *She is curst.*

Laun. Well, the best is, she hath no teeth to bite.

Speed. Item, *She will often praise her liquor.*

Laun. If her liquor be good, she shall: if she will not, I will; for good things should be praised.

Speed. Item, *She is too liberal*²⁶.

Laun. Of her tongue she cannot; for that's writ down she is slow of: of her purse she shall not; for that I'll keep shut; now of another thing she may; and that cannot I help. Well, proceed.

Speed. Item, *She hath more hair than wit*²⁷, and *more faults than hairs, and more wealth than faults.*

Laun. Stop there; I'll have her: she was mine, and not mine, twice or thrice in that last article: Rehearse that once more.

Speed. Item, *She hath more hair than wit.*—

Laun. More hair than wit,—it may be; I'll prove it: The cover of the salt hides the salt²⁸, and therefore it is more than the salt; the hair that covers the wit, is more than the wit; for the greater hides the less. What's next?

²⁶ *Liberal* is *licentious, free, frank*, beyond honesty or decency. Thus in Othello, Desdemona says of Iago: "is he not a most profane and *liberal* counsellor."

²⁷ This was an old familiar proverb, of which Steevens has given many examples. I will add one from Florio: "A tisty-tosty wag feather, *more haire than wit.*"

²⁸ The ancient English *saltcellar* was very different from the modern, being a large piece of plate, generally much ornamented, with a cover to keep the salt clean. There was but one on the dinner table, which was placed near the top, and those who sat below it were, for the most part, of inferior condition to those to sat above it.

Speed. And more faults than hairs.—

Laun. That's monstrous : O, that that were out !

Speed. And more wealth than faults.

Laun. Why, that word makes the faults gracious²⁹ : Well, I'll have her : and if it be a match, as nothing is impossible,—

Speed. What then ?

Laun. Why, then will I tell thee, that thy master stays for thee at the north-gate.

Speed. For me ?

Laun. For thee ? ay ; who art thou ? he hath staid for a better man than thee.

Speed. And must I go to him ?

Laun. Thou must run to him, for thou hast staid so long, that going will scarce serve the turn.

Speed. Why didst not tell me sooner ? 'pox of your love-letters ! [Exit.

Laun. Now will he be swinged for reading my letter : An unmannerly slave, that will thrust himself into secrets ! I'll after, to rejoice in the boy's correction. [Exit.

SCENE II. *The same. A Room in the Duke's Palace.*

Enter DUKE and THURIO ; PROTEUS behind.

Duke. Sir Thurio, fear not, but that she will love you, Now Valentine is banish'd from her sight.

Thu. Since his exile she hath despis'd me most, Forsworn my company, and rail'd at me, That I am desperate of obtaining her.

Duke. This weak impress of love is as a figure Trenched¹ in ice ; which with an hour's heat Dissolves to water, and doth lose his form. A little time will melt her frozen thoughts,

²⁹ *Gracious* was sometimes used for *favoured, countenanced, like the Italian Gratitato, v.* As You Like It, Act i. Sc. 2.

Trenched, i. e. cut, carved ; from the Fr. trancher.

And worthless Valentine shall be forgot.—
How now, Sir Proteus? Is your countryman,
According to our proclamation, gone?

Pro. Gone, my good lord.

Duke. My daughter takes his going grievously.

Pro. A little time, my lord, will kill that grief.

Duke. So I believe; but Thurio thinks not so.—
Proteus, the good conceit I hold of thee,
(For thou hast shown some sign of good desert),
Makes me the better to confer with thee.

Pro. Longer than I prove loyal to your grace,
Let me not live to look upon your grace.

Duke. Thou know'st, how willingly I would effect
The match between Sir Thurio and my daughter.

Pro. I do, my lord.

Duke. And also, I think, thou art not ignorant
How she opposes her against my will.

Pro. She did, my lord, when Valentine was here.

Duke. Ay, and perversely she persévers so.
What might we do, to make the girl forget
The love of Valentine, and love Sir Thurio?

Pro. The best way is to slancer Valentine
With falsehood, cowardice, and poor descent;
Three things that women highly hold in hate.

Duke. Ay, but she'll think that it is spoke in hate.

Pro. Ay, if his enemy deliver it:
Therefore it must, with circumstance², be spoken
By one, whom she esteemeth as his friend.

Duke. Then you must undertake to slander him.

Pro. And that, my lord, I shall be loth to do:
'Tis an ill office for a gentleman;
Especially against his very³ friend.

² *With circumstance*, i. e. with the addition of such incidental particulars as may induce belief.

³ *Very*, that is, *true*; from the Lat. *verus*. Massinger calls one of his plays "A *Very Woman*."

Duke. Where your good word cannot advantage him,
 Your slander never can endamage him ;
 Therefore the office is indifferent,
 Being entreated to it by your friend.

Pro. You have prevail'd, my lord : if I can do it,
 By aught that I can speak in his dispraise,
 She shall not long continue love to him.
 But say, this weed⁴ her love from Valentine,
 It follows not that she will love Sir Thurio.

Thu. Therefore, as you unwind her love from him,
 Lest it should ravel, and be good to none,
 You must provide to bottom it on me⁵ :
 Which must be done, by praising me as much
 As you in worth dispraise Sir Valentine.

Duke. And, Proteus, we dare trust you in this kind ;
 Because we know, on Valentine's report,
 You are already love's firm votary,
 And cannot soon revolt and change your mind.
 Upon this warrant shall you have access,
 Where you with Silvia may confer at large ;
 For she is lumpish, heavy, melancholy,
 And, for your friend's sake, will be glad of you ;
 Where you may temper her, by your persuasion,
 To hate young Valentine, and love my friend.

Pro. As much as I can do, I will effect :—
 But you, Sir Thurio, are not sharp enough ;
 You must lay lime⁶, to tangle her desires,
 By wailful sonnets, whose composed rhymes,
 Should be full fraught with serviceable vows.

Duke. Ay, much is the force of heaven-bred poesy.

Pro. Say, that upon the altar of her beauty
 You sacrifice your tears, your sighs, your heart :

⁴ The corrector of Mr. Collier's folio substitutes *wean*.

⁵ As you unwind her love from him, make me the *bottom* on
 which you wind it. A bottom is the housewife's term for a ball
 thread wound upon a central body.

⁶ *lime*, i. e. *birdlime*.

Write till your ink be dry ; and with your tears
Moist it again ; and frame some feeling line,
That may discover such integrity⁷ :—
For Orpheus' lute was strung with poet's sinews ;
Whose golden touch could soften steel and stones,
Make tigers tame, and huge leviathans
Forsake unsounded deeps to dance on sands.
After your dire-lamenting elegies,
Visit by night your lady's chamber window
With some sweet consort⁸ : to their instruments
Tune a deploring dump⁹ ; the night's dead silence
Will well become such sweet complaining grievance.
This, or else nothing, will inherit her¹⁰.

Duke. This discipline shews thou hast been in love.

Thu. And thy advice this night I'll put in practice :
Therefore, sweet Proteus, my direction-giver,
Let us into the city presently
To sort¹¹ some gentlemen well skill'd in music :
I have a sonnet, that will serve the turn,
To give the onset to thy good advice.

Duke. About it, gentlemen.

⁷ "That may *discover* such *integrity*," i. e. *display* such *sincerity* of feeling, as the alleged sacrifice of tears, sighs, and hearts implies. Malone suspected that a line following this had been lost, which, with the temerity of the corrector of Mr. Collier's folio, ventures to supply. But in fact nothing is wanting.

⁸ The old copy has *consort*, which, according to Bullockar and Phillips, signified "a set or company of musicians." If we print *concert*, as Malone would have it, the relative pronoun *their* has no correspondent word. It is true that Shakspeare frequently refers to words not expressed, but implied, in the former part of a sentence. But the reference here is to *consort*, as appears by the subsequent words, "to *their* instruments."

⁹ A *dump* was the ancient term for a melancholy piece of music, and also for a mournful poem.

¹⁰ To *inherit* is sometimes used by Shakspeare for to obtain possession of, without any idea of acquiring by inheritance. Milton in Comus has *disinherit* Chaos, meaning only to *dispossess* it.

¹¹ To *sort*, to choose out, or array for a consort.

Pro. We'll wait upon your grace till after supper.
And afterward determine our proceedings.

Duke. Even now about it; I will pardon you.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT IV.

SCENE I. *A Forest, near Mantua.*

Enter certain Out-laws.

1 *Outlaw.*

ELLOWS, stand fast; I see a passenger.
2 *Out.* If there beten, shrink not, but down
with 'em.

Enter VALENTINE and SPEED.

3 *Out.* Stand, sir, and throw us that you have about
you;
If not, we'll make you sit, and rifle you.

Speed. Sir, we are undone! these are the villains
That all the travellers do fear so much.

Val. My friends,—

1 *Out.* That's not so, sir; we are your enemies.

2 *Out.* Peace; we'll hear him.

3 *Out.* Ay, by my beard, will we; for he is a pro-
per¹ man.

Val. Then know, that I have little wealth to lose;
A man I am, cross'd with adversity:
My riches are these poor habiliments,
Of which if you should here disfurnish me,
You take the sum and substance that I have.

2 *Out.* Whither travel you?

Val. To Verona.

1 *Out.* Whence came you?

Val. From Milan.

¹ A proper man, was a comely, tall, or well proportioned man.

3 Out. Have you long sojourned there?

Val. Some sixteen months; and longer might have staid,

If crooked fortune had not thwarted me.

1 Out. What, were you banish'd thence?

Val. I was.

2 Out. For what offence?

Val. For that which now torments me to rehearse:
I kill'd a man, whose death I much repent;
But yet I slew him manfully in fight,
Without false vantage, or base treachery.

1 Out. Why ne'er repent it, if it were done so;
But were you banish'd for so small a fault?

Val. I was, and held me glad of such a doom.

2 Out. Have you the tongues?

Val. My youthful travel therein made me happy;
Or else I often had been miserable.

3 Out. By the bare scalp of Robin Hood's fat friar²,
This fellow were a king for our wild faction.

1 Out. We'll have him. Sirs, a word.

Speed. Master, be one of them;
It is an honourable kind of thievery.

Val. Peace, villain!

2 Out. Tell us this: Have you any thing to take to?

Val. Nothing but my fortune.

3 Out. Know, then, that some of us are gentlemen,
Such as the fury of ungovern'd youth
Thrust from the company of awful³ men:
Myself was from Verona banished,
For practising to steal away a lady,

² Friar Tuck, one of the associates of Robin Hood.

³ "Awful men," i. e. honest men. This word is here only another form of the O. E. *Aefuld* simplex; it is compounded of *a* one, and *fold*. We have it again in the sense of rightful and lawful, in several other places, as in K. Richard II. Act iii. Sc. 3, 2 K. Henry IV. Act iv. Sc. 1; Pericles, Act ii. Gower's Chorus, &c.

An heir⁴, and near allied unto the duke.

2 Out. And I from Mantua, for a gentleman,
Whom, in my mood⁵, I stabbed unto the heart.

1 Out. And I, for such like petty crimes as these—
But to the purpose; for we cite our faults,
That they may hold excus'd our lawless lives;
And, partly, seeing you are beautify'd
With goodly shape; and by your own report
A linguist; and a man of such perfection,
As we do in our quality⁶ much want;—

2 Out. Indeed, because you are a banish'd man,
Therefore, above the rest, we parley to you:
Are you content to be our general?
To make a virtue of necessity,
And live, as we do, in this wilderness?

3 Out. What say'st thou? wilt thou be of our consort
Say ay, and be the captain of us all;
We'll do thee homage, and be rul'd by thee,
Love thee as our commander and our king.

1 Out. But if thou scorn our courtesy, thou diest.

2 Out. Thou shalt not live to brag what we have
offer'd.

Val. I take your offer, and will live with you;
Provided that you do no outrages
On silly women, or poor passengers.

3 Out. No, we detest such vile base practices.
Come, go with us, we'll bring thee to our caves⁷,
And shew thee all the treasure we have got;
Which, with ourselves, all rest at thy dispose.

[Exeunt.

⁴ The old copy has “*And* heir, and *neece*, *neere* being probably the old orthography; *heir* was formerly of both genders elsewhere we have *neere* misprinted for *neece*.

⁵ *Mood* is anger or resentment.

⁶ *Quality*, i. e. condition, profession, occupation, v. Hamlet,
Act. ii. Sc. 2.

⁷ The folio misprints this *crewes*, Mr. Collier's folio substitute
crewe. The robbers had more than one cave, as appears from
ture scene.

SCENE II. Milan. *Court of the Palace.**Enter PROTEUS.*

Pro. Already have I been false to Valentine,
And now I must be as unjust to Thurio.
Under the colour of commanding him,
I have access my own love to prefer ;
But Silvia is too fair, too true, too holy,
To be corrupted with my worthless gifts.
When I protest true loyalty to her,
She twits me with my falsehood to my friend ;
When to her beauty I commend my vows,
She bids me think, how I have been forsworn
In breaking faith with Julia whom I lov'd :
And, notwithstanding all her sudden quips¹,
The least whereof would quell a lover's hope,
Yet, spaniel-like, the more she spurns my love,
The more it grows and fawneth on her still.
But here comes Thurio ; now must we to her window,
And give some evening music to her ear.

Enter THURIO, and Musicians.

Thu. How now, Sir Proteus ? are you crept before
us ?

Pro. Ay, gentle Thurio ; for, you know, that love
Will creep in service where it cannot go.

Thu. Ay, but I hope, sir, that you love not here.

Pro. Sir, but I do ; or else I would be hence .

Thu. Who ? Silvia ?

Pro. Ay, Silvia,—for your sake.

Thu. I thank you for your own. Now, gentlemen,
Let's tune, and to it lustily a while.

¹ *Sudden quips*, hasty, passionate reproaches.

Enter Host, at a distance; and JULIA in boy's clothes.

Host. Now, my young guest! methinks you're all-y-cholly; I pray you, why is it?

Jul. Marry, mine host, because I cannot be merry.

Host. Come, we'll have you merry: I'll bring you where you shall hear music, and see the gentleman that you ask'd for.

Jul. But shall I hear him speak?

Host. Ay, that you shall.

Jul. That will be music. [*Music plays.*

Host. Hark! hark!

Jul. Is he among these?

Host. Ay: but peace, let's hear 'em.

SONG.

Who is Silvia? What is she?

That all our swains commend her?

Holy, fair, and wise is she;

*The heavens such grace did lend her,
That she might admired be.*

Is she kind, as she is fair?

For beauty lives with kindness:

Love doth to her eyes repair,

*To help him of his blindness;
And, being help'd, inhabits there.*

Then to Silvia let us sing,

That Silvia is excelling;

She excels each mortal thing,

*Upon the dull earth dwelling:
To her let us garlands bring.*

Host. How now? you² are sadder than you were before;

² The old copy transposes the words and prints "are you." The correction is made in my 2nd folio. The punctuation of both the folios shows this to be the true reading.

How do yeu, man ? the music likes you ~~not~~.

Jul. You mistake ; the musician likes me ~~not~~.

Host. Why, my pretty youth ?

Jul. He plays false, father.

Host. How ? out of tune on the strings ?

Jul. Not so ; but yet so false that he grieves my very heart-strings.

Host. You have a quick ear.

Jul. Ay, I would I were deaf ! it makes me have a slow heart.

Host. I perceive, you delight not in music.

Jul. Not a whit, when it jars so.

Host. Hark, what fine change is in the music !

Jul. Ay ; that change is the spite.

Host. You would have them always play but one thing ?

Jul. I would always have one play but one thing. But, host, doth this Sir Proteus, that we talk on, often resort unto this gentlewoman ?

Host. I tell you what Launce, his man, told me, he loved her out of all nick³.

Jul. Where is Launce ?

Host. Gone to seek his dog ; which, to-morrow, by his master's command, he must carry for a present to his lady.

Jul. Peace ! stand aside ! the company parts.

Pro. Sir Thurio, fear not you ! I will so plead, That you shall say, my cunning drift excels.

Thu. Where meet we ?

Pro. At Saint Gregory's well.

Thu. Farewell. [*Exeunt THU. and Musicians.*]

SILVIA appears above, at her window.

Pro. Madam, good even to your ladyship.

³ Out of all nick, i. e. out of all reckoning or count ; reckons were kept upon nicked or notched sticks or tallys.

Sil. I thank you for your music, gentlemen :
Who is that, that spake ?

Pro. One, lady, if you knew his pure heart's truth,
You'd quickly learn to know him by his voice.

Sil. Sir Proteus, as I take it.

Pro. Sir Proteus, gentle lady, and your servant.

Sil. What is your will ?

Pro. That I may compass⁴ yours.

Sil. You have your wish ; my will is even this,—
That presently you hie you home to bed.

Thou subtle, perjur'd, false, disloyal man !

Think'st thou, I am so shallow, so conceitless,

To be seduced by thy flattery,

That hast deceiv'd so many with thy vows ?

Return, return, and make thy love amends.

For me,—by this pale queen of night I swear,

I am so far from granting thy request,

That I despise thee for thy wrongful suit ;

And by and by intend to chide myself,

Even for this time I spend in talking to thee.

Pro. I grant, sweet love, that I did love a lady ;
But she is dead.

Jul. Twere false, if I should speak it ;
For, I am sure, she is not buried. [Aside.]

Sil. Say, that she be ; yet Valentine, thy friend,
Survives ; to whom, thyself art witness,
I am betroth'd : And art thou not ashamed
To wrong him with thy importunity ?

Pro. I likewise hear, that Valentine is dead.

Sil. And so suppose am I ; for in his grave,
Assure thyself, my love is buried.

Pro. Sweet lady, let me rake it from the earth.

⁴ *Compass* is here used in the sense of *comprehend, obtain, achieve*. Thus, in the *Merry Wives of Windsor* : " May be the knave bragged of that he could not *compass*."

Sil. Go to thy lady's grave, and call her's thence ;
Or, at the least, in hers sepulchre thine.

Jul. He heard not that. [*Aside.*

Pro. Madam, if your heart be so obdurate,
Vouchsafe me yet your picture for my love,
The picture that is hanging in your chamber ;
To that I'll speak, to that I'll sigh and weep :
For, since the substance of your perfect self
Is else devoted, I am but a shadow ;
And to your shadow will I make true love.

Jul. If 'twere a substance, you would, sure, de-
ceive it,

And make it but a shadow, as I am. [*Aside.*

Sil. I am very loth to be your idol, sir ;
But, since your falsehood shall become you well
To worship shadows, and adore false shapes,
Send to me in the morning and I'll send it :
And so good rest.

Pro. As wretches have o'ernight,
That wait for execution in the morn.

[*Exeunt PROTEUS; and SILVIA from above.*

Jul. Host, will you go ?

Host. By my halidom⁵, I was fast asleep.

Jul. Pray you, where lies Sir Proteus ?

Host. Marry, at my house : Trust me, I think 'tis
almost day.

Jul. Not so ; but it hath been the longest night
That e'er I watch'd, and the most heaviest⁶. [*Exeunt.*

⁵ *Halidom* properly signifies *holiness, faith, sanctity*, the ter-
mination *dome* is similar to that in *Kingdom, Christendom*, and
like the German *thum*, signified *place or thing*. Minsheu says,
Halidom, an old word, used by old countrywomen by manner of
swearing ; of the Saxon word *haligdome*, ex *halig*, i. e. *sanctum* ;
and *dome*, *dominum* and *judicium*.

⁶ The double superlative is very often used by the writers of
Shakspeare's time. This tends to support the reading *most
busiest* in the first scene of the third act of the *Tempest*.

SCENE III. *The same.*

Enter EGLAMOUR.

Egl. This is the hour that madam Silvia
Entreated me to call and know her mind :
There's some great matter she'd employ me in.
Madam, madam !

SILVIA appears above, at her window.

Sil. Who calls ?

Egl. Your servant, and your friend ;
One that attends your ladyship's command.

Sil. Sir Eglamour, a thousand times good-morro

Egl. As many, worthy lady, to yourself.
According to your ladyship's impose¹,
I am thus early come, to know what service
It is your pleasure to command me in.

Sil. O Eglamour, thou art a gentleman,
(Think not, I flatter, for I swear, I do not),
Valiant, wise, remorseful², well accomplish'd.
Thou art not ignorant, what dear good-will
I bear unto the banish'd Valentine ;
Nor how my father would enforce me marry
Vain Thurio, whom my very soul abhor'd.
Thyself hast lov'd ; and I have heard thee say,
No grief did ever come so near thy heart,
As when thy lady and thy true love died,
Upon whose grave thou vow'dst pure chastity³.
Sir Eglamour, I would to Valentine,

¹ *Impose* is *injunction, command*; a task set at college in consequence of a fault is still called an *imposition*.

² *Remorseful*, i. e. *pitiful, compassionate*.

³ It was common in former ages for widowers and widows to make vows of chastity in honour of their deceased wives or husbands. Besides observing the vow, the widow was, for life, to wear a veil, and a mourning habit. The same distinction

Mantua, where, I hear, he makes abode;
d, for the ways are dangerous to pass,
o desire thy worthy company,
on whose faith and honour I repose.
re not my father's anger, Eglamour,
t think upon my grief, a lady's grief;
d on the justice of my flying hence,
keep me from a most unholy match,
ich heaven and fortune still reward with plagues
o desire thee, even from a heart
full of sorrows as the sea of sands,
bear me company, and go with me:
not, to hide what I have said to thee,
at I may venture to depart alone.

Egl. Madam, I pity much your grievances⁴;
ich since I know they virtuously are placed,
ive consent to go along with you;
cking⁵ as little what betideth me,
much I wish all good beforntune you.
nen will you go?

Sil. This evening coming.

Egl. Where shall I meet you?

Sil. At friar Patrick's cell,
here I intend holy confession.

e been made in respect of male votarists; this circumstance
bt inform the players how Sir Eglamour should be dressed;
. will account for Silvia's having chosen him as a person in
m she could confide without injury to her character.

In Shakspeare's time *griefs* frequently signified *grievances*,
the present instance shows that in return *grievance* was
etimes used in the sense of *grief*.

The annotator of Mr. Collier's folio adds here a line, something
ning required to make the sense consecutive: after "Madam,
ty," &c. he adds, "And the most true affections that you bear."
this would be to make Sir Eglamour *pity* the *true affections*
ilvia! as well as the *griefs*. The passage as it stands may
ntended to characterize the affection of the speaker?
To reck is to care for. So in Hamlet: " And recks not his
ead."

Egl. I will not fail your ladyship: good-morrow,
Gentle lady.

Sil. Good-morrow, kind Sir Eglamour.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *The same.*

Enter LAUNCE, with his Dog.

Laun. When a man's servant shall play the cur with him, look you, it goes hard: one that I brought up of a puppy; one that I saved from drowning, when three or four of his blind brothers and sisters went to it! I have taught him—even as one would say precisely, Thus I would teach a dog. I was sent to deliver him, as a present to mistress Silvia, from my master; and I came no sooner into the dining-chamber, but he steps me to her trencher, and steals her capon's leg. O ! 'tis a foul thing, when a cur cannot keep¹ himself in all companies! I would have, as one should say, one that takes upon him to be a dog indeed, to be, as it were, a dog at all things. If I had not had more wit than he, to take a fault upon me that he did, I think verily he had been hang'd for't: sure as I live, he had suffer'd for't. You shall judge. He thrusts me himself into the company of three or four gentleman-like dogs, under the duke's table: he had not been there (bless the mark) a pissing while; but all the chamber smelt him. *Out with the dog*, says one; *What cur is that?* says another; *Whip him out*, says the third; *Hang him up*, says the duke. I, having been acquainted with the smell before, knew it was Crab; and goes me to the fellow that whips the dogs: *Friend, quoth I, you mean to whip the dog?* *Ay, marry, do I, quoth he.* *You do him the more wrong, quoth I;* *'twas I did the thing you wot of.* He makes me no more

¹ i. e. restrain.

ado, but whips me out of the chamber. How many masters would do this for their servant ? Nay, I'll be sworn, I have sat in the stocks for puddings he hath stolen, otherwise he had been executed : I have stood on the pillory for geese he hath killed, otherwise he had suffered for't : thou think'st not of this now !— Nay, I remember the trick you served me, when I took my leave of madam Silvia : did not I bid thee still mark me, and do as I do ? When didst thou see me heave up my leg, and make water against a gentlewoman's farthingale ? didst thou ever see me do such a trick ?

Enter PROTEUS and JULIA.

Pro. Sebastian is thy name ? I like thee well, And will employ thee in some service presently.

Jul. In what you please ;—I will do what I can.

Pro. I hope, thou wilt.—How now, you whoreson peasant !

[*To LAUNCE.*

Where have you been these two days loitering ?

Laun. Marry, sir, I carried mistress Silvia the dog you bade me.

Pro. And what says she to my little jewel ?

Laun. Marry, she says, your dog was a cur ; and tells you, currish thanks is good enough for such a present.

Pro. But she received my dog ?

Laun. No, indeed, did she not : here have I brought him back again.

Pro. What, didst thou offer her this from me ?

Laun. Ay, sir ; the other squirrel was stolen from me by the hangman² boys in the market-place : and then I offered her mine own ; who is a dog as big as ten of yours, and therefore the gift the greater.

² The first folio has "hangmans boys." The second "hangman's boy." The *s* is struck out from *hangmans* and added to *y* in my copy.

Pro. Go, get thee hence, and find my dog again,
Or ne'er return again into my sight.

Away, I say : Stay'st thou to vex me here ?
A slave, that, still an end³ turns me to shame.

[*Exit LAUNCE.*

Sebastian, I have entertained thee,
Partly, that I have need of such a youth,
That can with some discretion do my business,
For 'tis no trusting to yond foolish lowt ;
But, chiefly for thy face and thy behaviour :
Which (if my augury deceive me not)
Witness good bringing up, fortune,⁴ and truth :
Therefore know thou, for this I entertain thee.
Go presently and take this ring with thee,
Deliver it to madam Silvia :
She loved me well deliver'd it to me⁵.

Jul. It seems you loved her not, to leave her token :
She's dead, belike.

Pro. Not so ; I think she lives.

Jul. Alas !

Pro. Why dost thou cry, Alas ?

Jul. I cannot choose but pity her.

Pro. Wherefore should'st thou pity her ?

Jul. Because, methinks, that she lov'd you as well
As you do love your lady Silvia :
She dreams on him that has forgot her love ;
You dote on her that cares not for your love.
'Tis pity, love should be so contrary :
And thinking on it makes me cry, Alas !

Pro. Well, give her that ring, and therewithal

³ Still an end, and most an end, are old colloquial expressions, and mean perpetually, generally. See *Gifford's Massinger*, iv. 282.

⁴ " Witness good bringing up, fortune, and truth." The word *fortune* here can hardly be right. I have no doubt that it is misspelt for *nourture*, i. e. goodmanners. In *As You Like It*, Act ii. Sc. 7, Orlando says, "I am inland bred, and know, some nurture." See the note on that passage.

⁵ i. e. who delivered it to me.

This letter ;—that's her chamber.—Tell my lady,
I claim the promise for her heavenly picture.
Your message done, hie home unto my chamber,
Where thou shalt find me sad and solitary.

[*Exit Proteus.*

Jul. How many women would do such a message?
Alas, poor Proteus ! thou hast entertained
A fox, to be the shepherd of thy lambs :
Alas, poor fool ! why do I pity him
That with his very heart despiseth me ?
Because he loves her, he despiseth me ;
Because I love him, I must pity him.
This ring I gave him, when he parted from me,
To bind him to remember my good-will :
And now am I (unhappy messenger !)
To plead for that, which I would not obtain ;
To carry that which I would have refus'd ;
To praise his faith which I would have disprais'd.
I am my master's true confirmed love,
But cannot be true servant to my master,
Unless I prove false traitor to myself.
Yet I will woo for him : but yet so coldly,
As, heaven it knows, I would not have him speed.

Enter Silvia, attended.

Gentlewoman, good day ! I pray you be my mean
To bring me where to speak with madam Silvia.

Sil. What would you with her, if that I be she ?

Jul. If you be she, I do entreat your patience
To hear me speak the message I am sent on.

Sil. From whom ?

Jul. From my master, Sir Proteus, madam.

Sil. O !—he sends you for a picture ?

Jul. Ay, madam.

Sil. Ursula, bring my picture there.

[Picture brought.

Go, give your master this : tell him from me,

One Julia, that his changing thoughts forget,
Would better fit his chamber than this shadow.

Jul. Madam, please you peruse this letter.—
Pardon me, madam ; I have unadvis'd
Deliver'd you a paper that I should not ;
This is the letter to your ladyship.

Sil. I pray thee let me look on that again.

Jul. It may not be ; good madam, pardon me.

Sil. There, hold.

I will not look upon your master's lines :
I know they are stuff'd with protestations,
And full of new-found oaths ; which he will break
As easily as I do tear his paper.

Jul. Madam, he sends your ladyship this ring.

Sil. The more shame for him that he sends it me ;
For, I have heard him say a thousand times,
His Julia gave it him at his departure :
Though his false finger hath profan'd the ring,
Mine shall not do his Julia so much wrong.

Jul. She thanks you.

Sil. What say'st thou ?

Jul. I thank you, madam, that you tender her :
Poor gentlewoman ! my master wrongs her much.

Sil. Dost thou know her ?

Jul. Almost as well as I do know myself :
To think upon her woes, I do protest,
That I have wept a hundred several times.

Sil. Belike, she thinks that Proteus hath forsook her.

Jul. I think she doth, and that's her cause of sorrow.

Sil. Is she not passing fair ?

Jul. She hath been fairer, madam, than she is :
When she did think my master lov'd her well,
She, in my judgment, was as fair as you ;
But since she did neglect her looking-glass,
And threw her sun-expelling mask away⁶,

"And threw her sun-expelling mask away." Stubbæ, in his
Tomie of Abuses, thus mentions this fashion of masks. "When

The air hath starv'd the roses in her cheeks,
And pinch'd the lily-tincture of her face,
That now she is become as black as I.

Sil. How tall was she?

Jul. About my stature: for, at Pentecost,
When all our pageants of delight were play'd,
Our youth got me to play the woman's part,
And I was trimm'd in madam Julia's gown,
Which served me as fit, by all men's judgments.
As if the garment had been made for me;
Therefore, I know she is about my height.
And, at that time, I made her weep a good⁷,
For I did play a lamentable part:
Madam, 'twas Ariadne, passioning⁸
For Theseus' perjury, and unjust flight;
Which I so lively acted with my tears,
That my poor mistress, moved therewithal,
Wept bitterly; and, would I might be dead,
If I in thought felt not her very sorrow!

Sil. She is beholden to thee, gentle youth!—
Alas, poor lady! desolate and left!—
I weep myself, to think upon thy words.
Here, youth, there is my purse; I give thee this
For thy sweet mistress' sake, because thou lov'st her.
Farewell.

Jul. And she shall thank you for't, if e'er you know
her.— [Exit SILVIA.]
A virtuous gentlewoman, mild, and beautiful.
I hope my master's suit will be but cold,
Since she respects my mistress' love so much.
Alas, how love can trifle with itself!
Here is her picture: Let me see; I think,

they use to ride abroad, they have *masks* or visors made of velvet,
wherewith they cover their faces, having holes made in them
against their eyes, whereout they look."

⁷ *A good*, i. e. *in good earnest*, tout de bon.

⁸ *To passion* was used as a verb formerly.

If I had such a tire, this face of mine
 Were full as lovely as is this of hers :
 And yet the painter flatter'd her a little,
 Unless I flatter with myself too much.
 Her hair is auburn, mine is perfect yellow :
 If that be all the difference in his love,
 I'll get me such a colour'd periwig⁹.
 Her eyes are grey as glass¹⁰; and so are mine :
 Ay, but her forehead's low, and mine's as high¹¹.
 What should it be, that he respects in her,
 But I can make respective¹² in myself,
 If this fond love were not a blinded god ?
 Come, shadow, come, and take this shadow up,
 For 'tis thy rival. O thou senseless form !
 Thou shalt be worship'd, kiss'd, lov'd, and ador'd ;
 And, were there sense in his idolatry,
 My substance should be statue¹³ in thy stead.
 I'll use thee kindly for thy mistress' sake,

⁹ False hair was worn by the ladies long before *wigs* were in fashion. So, in Northward Hoe, 1607, "There is a new trade come up for cast gentlewomen of periwig making :" and in Lylie's Euphues, 1584, Sig. M 3, "Take from them their *periwiggis*, their paintings, &c. and thou shalt soone perceive that a woman is the least part of herselfe." *Perwickes* are mentioned by Churchyard in one of his earliest poems. And Barnabe Rich, in The Honestie of this Age, 1615, has a philippic against this folly.

¹⁰ By *gray* eyes were meant what we now call *blue* eyes. Gray, when applied to the eyes is rendered by Coles, in his Dictionary, 1679, *Ceruleus, glaucus*. The old glass was of a blue tint.

¹¹ A high forehead was then accounted a feature eminently beautiful. Our author, in The Tempest, shows that low foreheads were in disesteem :

"with foreheads *villainous low*."

¹² *Respective*, i. e. *considerative, regardful*, v. Merchant of Venice, Act v. Sc. 1.

¹³ The words *statue* and *picture* were formerly used indiscriminately, and sometimes a *statue* was called a *picture*. Stowe says (speaking of Elizabeth's funeral), that when the people beheld "her *statue* or *picture* lying upon the coffin, there was a general sighing." Thus in the City Madam, by Massinger, Sir John Frugal desires that his daughters may take leave of their lover

That us'd me so ; or else by Jove I vow,
I should have scratch'd out your unseeing eyes,
To make my master out of love with thee. [Exit]

ACT V.

SCENE I. *The same. An Abbey.**Enter EGLAMOUR.**Eglamour.*

HE sun begins to gild the western sky ;
And now it is about the very hour
That Silvia at friar Patrick's cell should
meet me.
She will not fail ; for lovers break not hours,
Unless it be to come before their time ;
So much they spur their expedition.

Enter SILVIA.

See, where she comes ! Lady, a happy evening.
Sil. Amen, amen ! go on, good Eglamour !
Out at the postern by the abbey wall ;
I fear I am attended by some spies.
Egl. Fear not : the forest is not three leagues off ;
If we recover that, we are sure enough. [Exit].

SCENE II. *The same. A Room in the Duke's Palace.**Enter THURIO, PROTEUS, and JULIA.**Thu.* Sir Proteus, what says Silvia to my suit ?*Pro.* O, sir, I find her milder than she was ;
And yet she takes exceptions at your person.*Thu.* What, that my leg is too long ?*Pro.* No ; that it is too little.

statues, though he had previously described them as pictures,
which they evidently were.

Thu. I'll wear a boot, to make it somewhat rounder.

Jul. But love will not be spurr'd to what it loathes¹.

[*Aside.*]

Thu. What says she to my face ?

Pro. She says it is a fair one.

Thu. Nay, then the wanton lies ; my face is black.

Pro. But pearls are fair ; and the old saying is,
Black men are pearls in beauteous ladies' eyes.

Jul. 'Tis true ; such pearls as put out ladies' eyes ;
For I had rather wink than look on them. [*Aside.*]

Thu. How likes she my discourse ?

Pro. Ill, when you talk of war.

Thu. But well, when I discourse of love and peace ?

Jul. But better, indeed, when you hold your peace.
[*Aside.*]

Thu. What says she to my valour ?

Pro. O, sir, she makes no doubt of that.

Jul. She needs not, when she knows it cowardice.
[*Aside.*]

Thu. What says she to my birth ?

Pro. That you are well deriv'd.

Jul. True, from a gentleman to a fool. [*Aside.*]

Thu. Considers she my possessions ?

Pro. O, ay ; and pities them.

Thu. Wherefore ?

Jul. That such an ass should owe² them. [*Aside.*]

Pro. That they are out by lease³.

Jul. Here comes the duke.

¹ This line, which is given to Proteus in the old copies, Mr. Boswell thought should be given to Julia, as well as a subsequent one, and that they were meant to be spoken aside. They are exactly in the style of her other sarcastic speeches ; and Proteus, who is playing on Thurio's credulity, would hardly represent him as an object of *loathing* to Silvia. Another speech just afterward is given to Thurio instead of Julia in the folios.

² *Owe them*, i. e. possess them, own them.

³ "By Thurio's possessions" he himself understands his lands. But Proteus chooses to take the word likewise in a figurative

Enter Duke.

Duke. How now, Sir Proteus ! how now, Thurio !
Which of you saw Sir Eglamour of late ?

Thu. Not I.

Pro. Nor I.

Duke. Saw you my daughter ?

Pro. Neither.

Duke. Why, then she's fled unto that peasant Va-
lentine ;

And Eglamour is in her company.

'Tis true ; for friar Laurence met them both,

As he in penance wander'd through the forest :

Him he knew well, and guess'd that it was she ;

But, being mask'd, he was not sure of it :

Besides, she did intend confession

At Patrick's cell this even : and there she was not :

These likelihoods confirm her flight from hence.

Therefore, I pray you, stand not to discourse,

But mount you presently ; and meet with me

Upon the rising of the mountain foot

That leads towards Mantua, whither they are fled.

Dispatch, sweet gentlemen, and follow me. [*Exit.*

Thu. Why, this it is to be a peevish⁴ girl,

That flies her fortune when it follows her.

I'll after ; more to be reveng'd on Eglamour,

Than for the love of reckless Silvia. [*Exit.*

Pro. And I will follow, more for Silvia's love,

Than hate of Eglamour that goes with her. [*Exit.*

Jul. And I will follow more to cross that love,

Than hate for Silvia, that is gone for love. [*Exit.*

sense, as signifying his *mental endowments* : and when he says
they are *out by lease*, he means, that they are no longer enjoyed
by their master (*who is a fool*), but are leased out to another."

Lord Hailes.

⁴ *Peevish* in ancient language signified foolish. See page 205.

SCENE III. *Frontiers of Mantua. The Forest.*

Enter SILVIA, and Out-laws.

Out. Come, come ; be patient, we must bring you to our captain.

Sil. A thousand more mischances than this one Have learn'd me how to brook this patiently.

2 Out. Come, bring her away.

1 Out. Where is the gentleman that was with her ?

3 Out. Being nimble-footed, he hath outrun us, But Moyses and Valerius follow him.

Go thou with her to the west end of the wood, There is our captain : we'll follow him that's fled ; The thicket is beset, he cannot 'scape.

1 Out. Come, I must bring you to our captain's cave : Fear not ; he bears an honourable mind, And will not use a woman lawlessly.

Sil. O Valentine, this I endure for thee ! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *Another part of the Forest.*

Enter VALENTINE.

Val. How use doth breed a habit in a man ! These shadowy, desert, unfrequented woods, I better brook than flourishing peopled towns : Here can I sit alone, unseen of any, And, to the nightingale's complaining notes, Tune my distresses, and record¹ my woes. O thou that dost inhabit in my breast, Leave not the mansion so long tenantless ;

¹ To *record*, anciently signified to *sing*. It is still used by bird fanciers to express the first essays of a bird to sing ; and is evidently derived from the *recorder* or pipe with which they were formerly taught. The second line of this speech reads thus in the folio :

“ *This shadowy desert, unfrequented woods.*”

The correction is from Mr. Collier's folio.

Lest, growing ruinous, the building fall,
And leave no memory of what it was²!
Repair me with thy presence, Silvia!
Thou gentle nymph, cherish thy forlorn swain!—
What halloing, and what stir, is this to-day?
'Tis sure³ my mates, that make their wills their law,
Have some unhappy passenger in chase?
They love me well; yet I have much to do
To keep them from uncivil outrages.
Withdraw thee, Valentine: who's this comes here?

[*Steps aside.*

Enter Proteus, Silvia, and Julia.

Pro. Madam, this service I have done for you,
(Though you respect not aught your servant doth)
To hazard life, and rescue you from him
That would have forced your honour and your love,
Vouchsafe me, for my meed, but one fair look;
A smaller boon than this I cannot beg,
And less than this, I'm sure, you cannot give.

Val. How like a dream is this I see and hear!
Love, lend me patience to forbear a while. [*Aside.*

Sil. O miserable! unhappy that I am!

Pro. Unhappy were you, madam, ere I came;
But, by my coming, I have made you happy.

Sil. By thy approach thou mak'st me most unhappy.

Jul. And me, when he approacheth to your presence. [*Aside.*

² *O thou that dost inhabit in my breast, &c.*

It is hardly possible (says Steevens) to point out four lines in Shakspeare more remarkable for ease and elegance than these.

³ The old copy has "These are my mates," which does not connect itself with what follows. The correctors of Mr. Collier's folio would substitute "These *my rude* mates," but Valentine would not apply the word *rude* to men that he afterwards affirms are "*civil* (i. e. cultivated) and fit for great employments!" It is evident that he answers his own question, "What halloing and what stir is this?" doubtfully, by "Tis sure my mates," &c.

Sil. Had I been seized by a hungry lion,
I would have been a breakfast to the beast,
Rather than have false Proteus rescue me.
O, heaven ! be judge, how I love Valentine,
Whose life's as tender to me as my soul ;
And full as much (for more there cannot be)
I do detest false perjur'd Proteus :
Therefore be gone ! solicit me no more.

Pro. What dangerous action, stood it next to death,
Would I not undergo for one calm look ?
O ! 'tis the curse in love, and still approv'd⁴,
When women cannot love where they're belov'd.

Sil. When Proteus cannot love where he's belov'd.
Read over Julia's heart, thy first best love,
For whose dear sake thou didst then rend thy faith
Into a thousand oaths ; and all those oaths
Descended into perjury to love me.
Thou hast no faith left now⁵, unless thou'dst two,
And that's far worse than none ; better have none
Than plural faith, which is too much by one.
Thou counterfeit to thy true friend !

Pro. In love,
Who respects friend ?

Sil. All men but Proteus.
Pro. Nay, if the gentle spirit of moving words
Can no way change you to a milder form,
I'll woo you like a soldier, at arms' end ;
And love you 'gainst the nature of love : force you.

Sil. O heaven !

Pro. I'll force thee yield to my desire

Enter VALENTINE.

Val. Ruffian, let go that rude uncivil touch ;
Thou friend of an ill fashion.

⁴ *Approv'd*, i. e. *proved, experienced.*
The word *now* was supplied in the folio of 1632.

Pro.

Valentine!

Val. Thou common friend, that's without faith or
love;

(For such is a friend now), treacherous man!
Thou hast beguil'd my hopes; nought but mine eye
Could have persuaded me: Now I dare not say
I have one friend alive; thou would'st disprove me,
Who should be trusted now, when one's right hand^{is}
Is perjur'd to the bosom? Proteus,
I am sorry I must never trust thee more,
But count the world a stranger for thy sake.
The private wound is deep'st: O time most curst!
Young all faces, that a friend should be the worst!

Fri. My shame and guilt confound me.—
Forgive me, Valentine: if hearty sorrow
Be a sufficient ransom for offence,
I tender it here; I do as truly suffer,
As ever I did commit.

Val. Then I am paid;
But were again I do receive thee honest:—
This w'ry recompence is not satisfied,
I ne'er of heaven, nor earth; for these are pleas'd;
By consequence th' Eternal's wrath's appear'd:—
But that my love may appear plain and free,
All that was mine in Silvia, I give thee!.

This is the reading of the folio 1623.

It is observed that it was "very wil for Valentine to give up
thee to me, without any reason alleg'd," and various
reasons have been suggested to obviate the objection, but
unsuccessfu. It has been conjectured that the last lines
were a protest to Thunio to Silvia, and even to Proteus: and
that Valentine means to give up his sword and not his
woman: it is obvious by Silvia's emotion that the w'ry was
expressed w' her. We are induced, therefore, to conclude
it so, w' that "Valentine may have had his woman
and intended, it may be, to rescue Silvia away from
her master from herself." Mr. Collier suggests that
Valentine did not to have overheard all the passed between

Jul. O me, unhappy!

[*Faints.*]

Pro. Look to the boy.

Val. Why, boy ! why, wag ! how now ? what is the matter ? Look up ; speak.

Jul. O good sir, my master charg'd me to deliver a ring to Madam Silvia ; which, out of my neglect, was never done.

Pro. Where is that ring, boy

Jul. Here 'tis : this is it. [*Gives a ring.*]

Pro. How ! let me see : why this is the ring I gave to Julia.

Jul. O, cry you mercy, sir, I have mistook ; this is the ring you sent to Silvia. [*Showes another ring.*]

Pro. But, how cam'st thou by this ring ? at my depart, I gave this unto Julia.

Jul. And Julia herself did give it me ;
And Julia herself hath brought it hither.

Pro. How ! Julia !

Jul. Behold her that gave aim⁸ to all thy oaths,
And entertain'd them deeply in her heart :
How oft hast thou with perjury cleft the root⁹ !
O Proteus ! let this habit make thee blush :
Be thou ashamed, that I have took upon me
Such an immodest raiment ; if shame live
In a disguise of love :

Silvia and Proteus, he may have drawn conclusions against her from finding them together in the forest.

⁸ Steevens confounded the phrases of *to cry aim* (*Merry Wives of Windsor*, Act iii. Sc. 2) and to *give aim*, both terms in archery. He who gave aim appears to have been called the *mark*, and was stationed near the butts, to inform the archers how near their arrows fell to the butt. We are indebted to Mr. Gifford for distinguishing the terms.—Vide *Massinger*, vol. ii. p. 27. Julia means to say that she was the *mark* that gave direction to his *vows*.

⁹ *The root*, i. e. of her heart, the allusion to archery is continued, and to *cleaving the pin* in shooting at the butts.

It is the lesser blot modesty finds,
Women to change their shapes, than men their minds.

Pro. Than men their minds ? 'tis true : O heaven !
 were man

But constant, he were perfect : that one error
Fills him with faults ; makes him run through all the
 sins :

Inconstancy falls off, ere it begins.

What is in Silvia's face, but I may spy
More fresh in Julia's, with a constant eye ?

Val. Come, come, a hand from either :

Let me be blest to make this happy close :

'Twere pity two such friends should be long foes.

Pro. Bear witness, heaven, I have my wish for ever.

Jul. And I mine.

Enter Out-laws, with DUKE and THURIO.

Out. A prize, a prize, a prize !

Val. Forbear: forbear, I say; it is my lord the duke.—
Your grace is welcome to a man disgrac'd,
Banished Valentine.

Duke. Sir Valentine !

Thu. Yonder is Silvia ; and Silvia's mine.

Val. Thurio, give back, or else embrace thy death ;
Come not within the measure of my wrath :
Do not name Silvia thine : if once again,
Milan shall not behold thee¹⁰. Here she stands,

¹⁰ "Milan shall not behold thee." The folio reads, *Verona* shall not hold thee," which Theobald altered to "Milan shall not hold thee," observing that "Thurio is a Milanese, and has no concern, as it appears, with Verona. The scene, too, is between the confines of Milan and Mantua, to which Silvia follows Valentine, having heard that he had retreated thither. This, like the similar mistake in Act iii. Sc. 1, was most probably a lapse from forgetfulness of the poet; and as the former error has been corrected by all the commentators, upon the authority of Pope, it is only consistent to follow Theobald's reading here. There is quite as good ground for the alteration of the text.

Take but possession of her with a touch ;—
I dare thee but to breathe upon my love.

Thu. Sir Valentine, I care not for her, I ;
I hold him but a fool, that will endanger
His body for a girl that loves him not :
I claim her not, and therefore she is thine.

Duke. The more degenerate and base art thou,
To make such means¹¹ for her as thou hast done,
And leave her on such slight conditions.—
Now, by the honour of my ancestry,
I do applaud thy spirit, Valentine,
And think thee worthy of an empress' love.
Know then, I here forget all former griefs,
Cancel all grudge, repeal thee home again ;
Plead a new state in thy unrivall'd merit¹²,
To which I thus subscribe,—Sir Valentine,
Thou art a gentleman, and well deriv'd ;
Take thou thy Silvia, for thou hast deserv'd her.

Val. I thank your grace ; the gift hath made me
happy.

I now beseech you, for your daughter's sake,
To grant one boon that I shall ask of you.

Duke. I grant it for thine own, whate'er it be.

Val. These banish'd men, that I have kept withal
Are men endued with worthy qualities ;
Forgive them what they have committed here,
And let them be recall'd from their exile :
They are reformed, civil, full of good,
And fit for great employment, worthy lord.

Duke. Thou hast prevail'd : I pardon them, and thee.

¹¹ “*To make such means* for her,” to make such *interest* for, take such disingenuous pains about her.

¹² This passage is somewhat obscure. The Duke probably meant to say: Do thou put in a plea for reinstatement in forfeited honours, or claim an enhancement of dignity, and I set my hand to it, in these terms: “ Sir Valentine thou art a gentleman.”

pose of them, as thou know'st their deserts.

ne, let us go ; we will include¹³ all jars

th triumphs¹⁴, mirth, and rare solemnity.

'al. And, as we walk along, I dare be bold
th our discourse to make your grace to smile :
lat think you of this page, my lord ?

Duke. I think the boy hath grace in him ; he blushes.

'al. I warrant you, my lord ; more grace than boy.

Duke. What mean you by that saying ?

'al. Please you, I'll tell you as we pass along,

at you will wonder what hath fortuned.—

ne, Proteus ; 'tis your penance, but to hear

e story of your loves discovered :

at done, our day of marriage shall be yours ;

e feast, one house, one mutual happiness. [*Exeunt.*

¹ *Include* is here used for *conclude*. This is another of Shak-

ire's Latinisms: " *includo*, to *include*, to shut in, to close in."

^{per.}

¹ *Triumphs* are pageants, such as masks and shows.



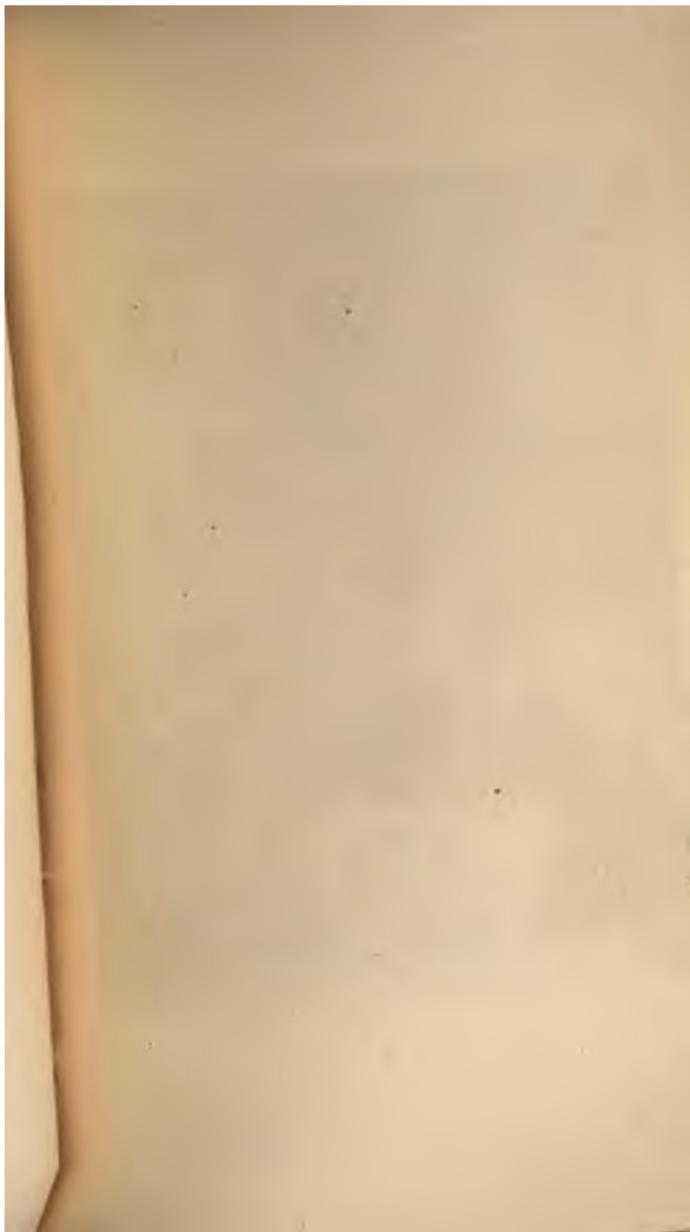




MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR









MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR







MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

PRELIMINARY REMARKS.

FEW of the incidents of this Comedy might have been taken from an old translation of *Il Pecorone di Giovanni Fiorentino*. The same story is to be met with in *The Fortunate, the Deceived, and the Unfortunate Lovers*, 1632. A somewhat similar one occurs in the *Piacenzi Notti di Straparola*. *Notte iv. Favola iv.*

The adventures of Falstaff seem to have been taken from the story of the lovers of Pisa in Tarleton's *Newes out of Purgatorio, b. l. no date*, but entered on the Stationers' books in 1590. The fishwife's tale, in *Westward for Smelta*, a book from which Shakespeare borrowed part of the fable of *Cymbeline*, probably led him to lay the Scene at Windsor.

Mr. Malone suggests that the following line in the earliest edition of this Comedy, "Sail like my pinnace to those golden shores," shows that it was written after Sir Walter Raleigh's return from Guiana in 1596.

The first edition of the *Merry Wives of Windsor* was printed in 1602, and a reprint of it was made by Mr. Halliwell for the Shakespeare Society in 1842. In the appendix to it will be found the materials from which some of the incidents have been supposed to be derived, but it seems doubtful whether these may not have been the poet's own invention. It was probably written in 1601, after the two parts of *King Henry IV.* being, as it is said, composed at the desire of Queen Elizabeth,¹ in order to

¹ This was first mentioned by Dennis in the Dedication to his alteration of this play, under the title of *The Comical Gallant*. "This Comedy," says he, "was written at Queen Elizabeth's command, and by her direction, and she was so eager to see it acted that she commanded it to be finished in fourteen days; and was afterwards, as tradition tells us, very well pleased at the representation." The information, it has been supposed, came originally from Dryden, who, from his intimacy with Sir W.

exhibit Falstaff in love, when all the pleasantry which he could afford in any other situation was exhausted. We learn from the account of the Revels at Court that it was acted before James I on the Sunday following the 1st November, 1604. The earliest notice of any of the characters in the play is in Dekker's *Satiromaster*, printed in 1602, where one of the personages observes, "We must have false fires to amaze these spangle-babies, these true heirs of master Justice Shallow."

It may not be thought so clear that it was written after King Henry V. Nym and Bardolph are both hanged in that play, yet appear in the *Merry Wives of Windsor*. Falstaff is disgraced in King Henry IV. Part ii. and dies in King Henry V. Yet in the *Merry Wives of Windsor* he talks as if he were still in favour at Court. "If it should come to the ear of the Court how I have been transformed, &c." and Page discountenances Fenton's addresses to his daughter, *because he kept company with the wild Prince and with Poins*. These circumstances seem to favour the supposition that this play was written between the first and second parts of King Henry IV. Dr. Johnson was of opinion that it was written after King Henry V. in which Shakspeare had killed Falstaff; and that in obedience to the royal commands, having revived him, he found it necessary at the same time to revive all those persons with whom he was wont to be exhibited; Nym, Bardolph, Pistol, and the Page: and disposed of them as he found it convenient without a strict regard to their situations or catastrophes in former plays.

Mr. Malone thought that *The Merry Wives of Windsor* was revised and enlarged by the author after its first production. The old edition in 1602, like that of *Romeo and Juliet*, he says, is apparently a rough draught and not a mutilated or imperfect copy.² The precise time when the alterations and additions were made has not been ascertained: some passages in the enlarged copy may assist conjecture on the subject, but nothing decisive can be concluded from such evidence.

This Comedy was not printed in its present form till 1623, when it was published with the rest of Shakspeare's plays in folio. The imperfect copy of 1602 was again printed in 1619.

The bustle and variety of the incidents, the rich assemblage of characters, and the skilful conduct of the plot of this delightful Comedy, are unrivalled in any drama ancient or modern.

Davenant, had opportunities of learning many particulars concerning Shakspeare. This story has been repeated by Gildon, Pope, and Theobald.

² Mr. Boaden thinks that the chasms which occur in the story of the drama in this old copy afford evidence that it was imperfectly taken down during the representation, like that of *Hamlet*, printed in 1603.

Falstaff, the inimitable Falstaff, here again ‘lards the lean earth’—‘a butt and a wit, a humorist, and a man of humour, a touchstone and a laughing-stock, a jester and a jest—the most perfect comic character that ever was exhibited.’ The jealous Ford, the uxorious Page, and their two joyous wives are admirably drawn.—Sir Hugh Evans and Doctor Caius no less so, and the dual scenes between them irresistibly comic. The swaggering jolly Boniface mine host of the Garter; and last, though not least, Master Slender and his cousin Shallow, are such a group as were never yet equalled by the pen or pencil of genius.

S. W. S.



PERSONS REPRESENTED.

SIR JOHN FALSTAFF.

FENTON.

SHALLOW, *a country Justice.*

SLENDER, *Cousin to Shallow.*

MR. FORD, } *two Gentlemen dwelling at Windsor.*

MR. PAGE, }

WILLIAM PAGE, *a Boy, Son to Mr. Page.*

SIR HUGH EVANS, *a Welsh Parson.*

DR. CAIUS, *a French Physician.*

Host of the Garter Inn.

BARDOLPH, }

PISTOL, } *Followers of Falstaff.*

NYM, }

ROBIN, *Page to Falstaff.*

SIMPLE, *Servant to Slender.*

RUGBY, *Servant to Dr. Caius.*

MRS. FORD.

MRS. PAGE.

MRS. ANNE PAGE, *her Daughter, in love with Fenton.*

MRS. QUICKLY, *Servant to Dr. Caius.*

Servants to Page, Ford, &c.

SCENE, Windsor, and the Parts adjacent.



MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

ACT I.

SCENE I. Windsor. *Before Page's House.*

*Enter JUSTICE SHALLOW, SLENDER, and SIR¹
HUGH EVANS.*

Shallow.

SIR Hugh, persuade me not; I will make a Star-chamber matter of it: if he were twenty Sir John Falstaffs, he shall not abuse Robert Shallow, esquire.

Slen. In the county of Gloster, justice of peace, and *coram*.

Shal. Ay, cousin Slender, and *Cust-alorum*².

Slen. Ay, and *ratolorum* too; and a gentleman born,

¹ *Sir* was a title formerly applied to priests and curates generally. *Dominus* being the academical title of a Bachelor (bas chevalier) of Arts, was usually rendered by *Sir* in English, and as most clerical persons had taken that degree, it became usual to style them *Sir*.

² A corruption of *Custos Rotulorum*. It seems doubtful whether Shakspeare designed Shallow to make this mistake, for though he gives him folly enough, he makes him rather pedantic than illiterate, unless we suppose, with Mr. Malone, that it might have been intended to ridicule the abbreviations used in writs, &c.; thus *coram* and *armigero* are portions of the phrase used in *testations—coram me Roberto Shallow armigero, &c.*

master parson ; who writes himself *armigero* ; in any bill, warrant, quittance, or obligation, *armigero*.

Shal. Ay, that I do ; and have done any time these three hundred years.

Slen. All his successors, gone before him, hath done't ; and all his ancestors, that come after him, may : they may give the dozen white luces in their coat.

Shal. It is an old coat.

Eva. The dozen white louses do become an old coat well ; it agrees well, passant : it is a familiar beast to man, and signifies—love.

Shal. The luce is the fresh fish ; the salt fish is an old coat³.

Slen. I may quarter, coz ?

Shal. You may, by marrying.

Eva. It is marring indeed, if he quarter it.

Shal. Not a whit.

Eva. Yes, pe'r-lady ; if he has a quarter of your coat, there is but three skirts for yourself, in my simple conjectures : but that is all one : If Sir John Falstaff have committed disparagements unto you, I am of the church, and will be glad to do my benevolence, to make atonements and compromises between you.

Shal. The Council⁴ shall hear it ; it is a riot.

Eva. It is not meet the Council hear a riot ; there is no fear of Got in a riot : the Council, look you,

³ It seems that the latter part of this speech should be given to Sir Hugh. Shallow has just before said the coat is an old one ; and now, that it is, "the luce, the fresh fish." No, replies the parson, it cannot be old and fresh too—"the salt-fish is an old coat." Shakspere is supposed to allude to the arms of Sir Thomas Lucy, who is said to have prosecuted him for a misdemeanor in his youth, and whom he now ridiculed under the character of Justice Shallow.

⁴ *The Council.* The Court of Star-chamber is meant.

hall desire to hear the fear of Got, and not to hear a
ot; take your vizaments in that.

Shal. Ha ! o' my life, if I were young again, the
word should end it.

Eva. It is better that friends is the sword, and end
: and there is also another device in my brain, which,
radventure, brings goot discretions with it : There
Anne Page, which is daughter to master George
age, which is pretty virginity.

Slen. Mistress Anne Page ? She has brown hair,
d speaks small like a woman.

Eva. It is that fery person for all the 'orld, as just
you will desire ; and seven hundred pounds of
onies, and gold, and silver, is her gransire, upon
s death's bed (Got deliver to a joyful resurrections !)
ve, when she is able to overtake seventeen years old :
were a goot motion, if we leave our pribbles and
abbles, and desire a marriage between master Abra-
m and mistress Anne Page.

*Shal.*⁵ Did her gransire leave her seven hundred
und ?

Eva. Ay, and her father is make her a better penny.

Shal. I know the young gentlewoman ; she has
od gifts.

Eva. Seven hundred pounds, and possibilities, is
ot gifts.

Shal. Well, let us see honest master Page : Is
alstaff there ?

Eva. Shall I tell you a lie ? I do despise a liar, as
do despise one that is false ; or, as I despise one
at is not true. The knight, Sir John, is there ; and,
beseech you, be ruled by your well-willers. I will

⁴ In the folios *this speech* and a succeeding one are given to
Shal. They are much more characteristic of Shallow than of
Under.

peat the door [knocks] for master Page. What, hoa! Got pless your house here!

Enter PAGE.

Page. Who's there?

Eva. Here is Got's plessing, and your friend, and justice Shallow: and here young master Slender; that, peradventures, shall tell you another tale, if matters grow to your likings.

Page. I am glad to see your worships well; I thank you for my venison, master Shallow.

Shal. Master Page, I am glad to see you; Much good do it your good heart! I wished your venison better; it was ill kill'd:—How doth good mistress Page?—and I love⁶ you always with my heart, la; with my heart.

Page. Sir, I thank you.

Shal. Sir, I thank you; by yea and no, I do.

Page. I am glad to see you, good master Slender.

Slen. How does your fallow greyhound, sir? heard say, he was out-run on Cotsall⁷.

Page. It could not be judg'd, sir.

Slen. You'll not confess, you'll not confess.

Shal. That he will not;—'tis your fault⁸, 'tis your fault:—'Tis a good dog.

Page. A cur, sir.

Shal. Sir, he's a good dog, and a fair dog; Ca there be more said? he is good, and fair.—Is S John Falstaff here?

Page. Sir, he is within; and I would I could do a good office between you.

Eva. It is spoke as a christians ought to speak.

⁶ First folio, *I thank.* The reading in the text is from the 4to. 1619.

⁷ The Cotswold Hills in Gloucestershire, famous for their fine turf, and therefore excellent for coursing.

⁸ Shallow means, 'tis your misfortune. See Gifford's Mariner, vol. ii. p. 98.

Shal. He hath wrong'd me, master Page.

Page. Sir, he doth in some sort confess it.

Shal. If it be confess'd, it is not redress'd; is not that so, master Page? He hath wrong'd me; indeed he hath;—at a word, he hath;—believe me;—Robert Shallow, Esquire, saith he is wrong'd.

Page. Here comes Sir John.

*Enter SIR JOHN FALSTAFF, BARDOLPH, NYM,
and PISTOL.*

Fal. Now, master Shallow; you'll complain of me to the king?

Shal. Knight, you have beaten my men, killed my deer, and broke open my lodge.

Fal. But not kiss'd your keeper's daughter?

Shal. Tut, a pin! this shall be answer'd.

Fal. I will answer it straight;—I have done all this:—That is now answer'd.

Shal. The Council shall know this.

Fal. 'Twere better for you, if it were known in counsel⁹: you'll be laugh'd at.

Eva. *Pauca verba*, Sir John; good worts.

Fal. Good worts¹⁰! good cabbage.—Slender, I broke your head; What matter have you against me?

Slen. Marry, sir, I have matter in my head against you; and against your coney-catching¹¹ rascals, Bardolph, Nym, and Pistol. [They carried me to the tavern, and made me drunk, and afterwards picked my pocket¹².]

Bar. You Banbury cheese¹³!

⁹ Falstaff quibbles between *Council* and *counsel*, in the sense of secrecy or *private advisers*; i. e. if you kept your counsel.

¹⁰ *Worts* was the ancient term for all the cabbage kind.

¹¹ *Coney-catching rascals*, a common name for cheats and sharpers in the time of Elizabeth. "By a metaphor taken from those that rob warrens and conie grounds."—*Minsheu's Dict.*

¹² The last paragraph is from the quarto 1602.

¹³ *You Banbury cheese.* Said in allusion to the thin carcass.

Slen. Ay, it is no matter.

Pist. How now, Mephophilus¹⁴?

Slen. Ay, it is no matter.

Nym. Slice, I say! *pauca, pauca*; slice! that's my humour.

Slen. Where's Simple, my man?—can you tell, cousin?

Eva. Peace! I pray you. Now let us understand: There is three umpires in this matter, as I understand: that is—master Page, *fidelicet*, master Page; and there is myself, *fidelicet*, myself; and the three party is, lastly and finally, mine host of the Garter.

Page. We three, to hear it, and end it between them.

Eva. Fery goot: I will make a prief of it in my note-book; and we will afterwards 'ork upon the cause with as great discreetly as we can.

Fal. Pistol!—

Pist. He hears with ears.

Eva. The tevil and his tam! what phrase is this, *He hears with ear*? Why, it is affectations.

Fal. Pistol, did you pick master Slender's purse?

Slen. Ay, by these gloves, did he (or I would I might never come in mine own great chamber again else), of seven groats in mill-sixpences, and two Edward shovel-boards¹⁵, that cost me two shilling and twopence a-piece of Yead Miller, by these gloves.

Fal. Is this true, Pistol?

of Slender. So, in Jack Drum's Entertainment, 1601; "Put off your clothes, and you are like a *Banbury cheese*, nothing but paring."

¹⁴ *Mephophilus*. The name of a *spirit*, or *familiar*, in the old story book of Faustus, (now world-renowned from Goethe's drama,) to whom there is another allusion, Act ii. Sc. 2. It was then a cant phrase, probably for an ugly fellow.

¹⁵ *Mill sixpences* were used as counters; and King Edward's *shillings* used in the game of *shuffle-board*. See Selden's Table Talk, article, Book and Authors. Falstaff afterward says, "Quo' un down, Bardolph, like a shovergroat shilling."

Eva. No ; it is false, if it is a pick-purse.

Pist. Ha, thou mountain-foreigner ! — Sir John,
and master mine,

I combat challenge of this latten bilbo¹⁶ :

Word of denial in thy labras¹⁷ here ;

Word of denial ; froth and scum, thou liest.

Slen. By these gloves, then 'twas he.

Nym. Be avised, sir, and pass good humours. I will say, *marry, trap*, with you, if you run the nut-hook's¹⁸ humour on me ; that is the very note of it.

Slen. By this hat, then he in the red face had it : for though I cannot remember what I did when you made me drunk, yet I am not altogether an ass.

Fal. What say you, Scarlet and John ?¹⁹

Bard. Why, sir, for my part, I say, the gentleman had drunk himself out of his five sentences.

Eva. It is his five senses : fie, what the ignorance is !

Bard. And being fap²⁰, sir, was, as they say, cashier'd ; and so conclusions pass'd the careires²¹.

Slen. Ay, you spake in Latin then too ; but 'tis no matter. I'll ne'er be drunk whilst I live again, but in honest, civil, godly company, for this trick : If I

¹⁶ *Latten*, from the Fr. *Laiton*, Brass. *Bilbo*, from *Bilboa* in Spain, where fine sword blades were made. Pistol therefore calls

Slender a weak blade of base metal, as one of brass or tin would be.

¹⁷ Thy *labras*; *lipes*. The quarto, 1602, "in thy gorge."

¹⁸ Metaphorically a *bailiff* or *constable*, who *hooks* or seizes debtors or malefactors with a staff or otherwise. The meaning apparently is, "if you try to bring me to justice."

¹⁹ Alluding to Robin Hood's men, as well as the red face of Bardolph.

²⁰ *Fap* was evidently a cant term for *foolish* or *fuddled*. It may have been derived from the Italian *Vappa*, which Florio explains "any wine that hath lost his force : used also for a man or woman without wit or reason." In Hutton's Dict. 1583, one of the meanings of the Latin *Vappa* is a *Dissard* or foolish man, &c.

²¹ To *pass the careires*, was a term of the Manége, often metaphorically applied, as it is by Pistol here, for to "set one's wits a running, one's conceits a gadding or one's thoughts on a gallop." See Cotgrave. The *career* was running at full speed.

be drunk, I'll be drunk with those that have the fear of God, and not with drunken knaves.

Eva. So Got 'udge me, that is a virtuous mind.

Fal. You hear all these matters denied, gentlemen; you hear it.

Enter MISTRESS ANNE PAGE, with wine; MISTRESS FORD and MISTRESS PAGE following.

Page. Nay, daughter, carry the wine in; we'll drink within. [*Exit ANNE PAGE.*]

Slen. O heaven! this is mistress Anne Page,

Page. How now, mistress Ford?

Fal. Mistress Ford, by my troth, you are very well met: by your leave, good mistress.

[*Kissing her.*]

Page. Wife, bid these gentlemen welcome:—Come, we have a hot venison pasty to dinner; come, gentlemen, I hope we shall drink down all unkindness. [*Exeunt all but SHAL. SLENDER, and EVANS.*]

Slen. I had rather than forty shillings I had my book of Songs and Sonnets²² here:—

Enter SIMPLE.

How now, Simple! where have you been? I must wait on myself, must I? You have not *The Book of Riddles* about you, have you?

Sim. *Book of Riddles!* why, did you not lend it to Alice Shortcake upon Allhallowmas last, a fortnight afore Michaelmas²³?

Shal. Come, coz; come, coz; we stay for you. A word with you, coz: marry this, coz: There is, as

²² Slender probably means a popular book of Shakespeare's time, "Songs and Sonnettes, written by the Earle of Surrey and others," and published by Tottel in 1557, and often reprinted.

²³ This is doubtless an intended blunder. Theobald would have corrected it to Martlemas.

'twere, a tender, a kind of tender, made afar off by Sir Hugh here ;—Do you understand me ?

Slen. Ay, sir, you shall find me reasonable ; if it be so, I shall do that that is reason.

Shal. Nay, but understand me.

Slen. So I do, sir.

Eva. Give ear to his motions, master Slender : I will description the matter to you, if you be capacity of it.

Slen. Nay, I will do as my cousin Shallow says : I pray you, pardon me ; he's a justice of peace in his country, simple though I stand here.

Eva. But that is not the question ; the question is concerning your marriage.

Shal. Ay, there's the point, sir.

Eva. Marry, is it ; the very point of it ; to mistress Anne Page.

Slen. Why, if it be so, I will marry her upon any reasonable demands.

Eva. But can you affection the 'oman ? Let us command to know that of your mouth, or of your lips ; for divers philosophers hold that the lips is parcel of the mouth ;—Therefore, precisely, can you carry your good will to the maid ?

Shal. Cousin Abraham Slender, can you love her ?

Slen. I hope, sir,—I will do as it shall become one that would do reason.

Eva. Nay, Got's lords and his ladies, you must speak possitable, if you can carry her your desires towards her.

Shal. That you must : Will you, upon good dowry, marry her ?

Slen. I will do a greater thing than that, upon your request, *cousin*, in any reason.

Shal. Nay, conceive me, conceive me, sweet coz ; what I do is to pleasure you, coz : Can you love the said ?

Slen. I will marry her, sir, at your request; but if there be no great love in the beginning, yet heaven may decrease it upon better acquaintance, when we are married, and have more occasion to know one another: I hope upon familiarity will grow more contempt:²⁴ but if you say, *marry her*, I will marry her, that I am freely dissolved, and dissolutely.

Eva. It is a fery discretion answer; save the fall' is in the 'ort dissolutely: the 'ort is, according to our meaning, resolutely;—his meaning is good.

Shal. Ay, I think my cousin meant well.

Slen. Ay, or else I would I might be hanged, la.

Re-enter ANNE PAGE.

Shal. Here comes fair mistress Anne.—Would I were young for your sake, mistress Anne!

Anne. The dinner is on the table; my father desires your worships' company.

Shal. I will wait on him, fair mistress Anne.

Eva. Od's plessed will! I will not be absence at the grace. [*Exeunt SHALLOW and SIR H. EVANS.*]

Anne. Will't please your worship to come in, sir?

Slen. No, I thank you, forsooth, heartily; I am very well.

Anne. The dinner attends you, sir.

Slen. I am not a-hungry, I thank you, forsooth.—Go, sirrah, for all you are my man, go, wait upon my cousin Shallow [*Exit SIMPLE*]. A justice of peace sometime may be beholding to his friend for a man.—I keep but three men and a boy yet, till my mother be dead: But what though? yet I live like a poor gentleman born.

Anne. I may not go in without your worship: they will not sit till you come.

²⁴ The folio reads *content*, but the humour of the passage depends upon Slender's use of the proverbial phrase.

Slen. I'faith, I'll eat nothing; I thank you as much as though I did.

Anne. I pray you, sir, walk in.

Slen. I had rather walk here, I thank you. I bruised my shin the other day with playing at sword and dagger with a master of fence²⁵, (three veneys²⁶ for a dish of stewed prunes) and, by my troth, I cannot abide the smell of hot meat since. Why do your dogs bark so? be there bears i' the town?

Anne. I think there are, sir; I heard them talked of.

Slen. I love the sport well; but I shall as soon quarrel at it as any man in England:—You are afraid if you see the bear loose, are you not?

Anne. Ay, indeed, sir.

Slen. That's meat and drink to me now: I have seen Sackerson²⁷ loose twenty times; and have taken him by the chain: but, I warrant you, the women have so cried and shriek'd at it, that it pass'd²⁸:—but women, indeed, cannot abide 'em; they are very ill-favour'd rough things.

Re-enter PAGE.

Page. Come, gentle master Slender, come; we stay for you.

Slen. I'll eat nothing; I thank you, sir.

²⁵ *Master of fence* here signifies not merely a fencing-master, but a person who had taken his master's degree in the science. There were three degrees, a master's, a provost's, and a scholar's. For each of these a prize was played with various weapons, in some open place or square. Tarlton the player "was allowed a master" on the 23rd of October, 1587, "he being ordinary grome of her majesty's chamber." The unfortunate Robert Greene played his master's prize at Leadenhall with three weapons, &c. The MS. from which this information is derived is a Register belonging to some of the Schools of the noble Science of Defence, among the Sloane MSS.—*Brit. Mus. No. 2530, xxvi. D.*

²⁶ *Veney, or Venue, Fr. a touch or hit in the body at fencing, &c.*

²⁷ The name of a bear exhibited at Paris Garden, in Southwark.

²⁸ i. e. passed all expression.

Page. By cock and pye²⁹, you shall not choose, sir: come, come,

Slen. Nay, pray you, lead the way.

Page. Come on, sir.

Slen. Mistress Anne, yourself shall go first.

Anne. Not I, sir; pray you, keep on.

Slen. Truly, I will not go first, truly, la: I will not do you that wrong.

Anne. I pray you, sir.

Slen. I'll rather be unmannerly than troublesome: you do yourself wrong, indeed, la. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. *The same.*

Enter SIR HUGH EVANS and SIMPLE.

Eva. Go your ways, and ask of Doctor Caius' house, which is the way: and there dwells one mistress Quickly, which is in the manner of his nurse, or his dry nurse, or his cook, or his laundry, his washer, and his wringer.

Simp. Well, sir.

Eva. Nay, it is better yet:—give her this letter; for it is a 'oman that altogether's acquaintance with mistress Anne Page; and the letter is, to desire and require her to solicit your master's desires to mistress Anne Page: I pray you, be gone. I will make an end of my dinner; there's pippins and cheese to come.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III. *A Room in the Garter Inn.*

Enter FALSTAFF, Host, BARDOLPH, NYM, PISTOL, and ROBIN.

Fal. Mine host^{*} of the Garter,—

Host. What says my bully-rook? Speak scholarly, and wisely.

²⁹ By cock and pye was a popular adjuration. See Note on Henry IV. P. 2, Act v. Sc. 1.

Fal. Truly, mine host, I must turn away some of my followers.

Host. Discard, bully Hercules; cashier; let them wag; trot, trot.

Fal. I sit at ten pounds a week.

Host. Thou'rt an emperor, Cæsar, Keisar¹, and Pheezar, I will entertain Bardolph; he shall draw, he shall tap: said I well, bully Hector?

Fal. Do so, good mine host.

Host. I have spoke; let him follow: Let me see thee froth, and lime²: I am at a word; follow.

[*Exit Host.*

Fal. Bardolph, follow him; a tapster is a good trade: an old cloak makes a new jerkin; a withered servingman, a fresh tapster: Go; adieu.

Bard. It is a life that I have desired; I will thrive.

[*Exit BARD.*

Pist. O base Gongarian wight! wilt thou the spigot wield?

Nym. He was gotten in drink: Is not the humour conceited? [His mind is not heroic, and there's the humour of it³.]

Fal. I am glad I am so acquit of this tinderbox; his thefts were too open: his filching was like an unskilful singer, he kept not time.

Nym. The good humour is, to steal at a minim's⁴ rest.

¹ *Keisar*, old spelling for *Cæsar*, the general word for an *emperor*. Kings and Keysars was an old phrase in very common use. *Pheezar*, a made word from *Pheeze*, in the Induction to *Taming of a Shrew*.

² To *froth* beer and to *lime* sack were tapster's tricks. The first is still one of the mysteries of the trade; and the *limed sack* of Falstaff, for whatever purpose, shows that the other was a practice of Vintners.

³ These words are from the quartoes.

⁴ The old copy has "at a minute's rest." The correction was suggested by Mr. Bennet Langton.

Pist. Convey, the wise it call : Steal ! foh ; a fico⁵
for the phrase !

Fal. Well, sirs, I am almost out at heels.

Pist. Why then let kibes ensue.

Fal. There is no remedy ; I must coney-catch ; I
must shift.

Pist. Young ravens must have food.

Fal. Which of you know Ford of this town ?

Pist. I ken the wight ; he is of substance good.

Fal. My honest lads, I will tell you what I am
about.

Pist. Two yards, and more.

Fal. No quips now, Pistol ; indeed I am in the
waist two yards about ; but I am now about no waste ;
I am about thrift. Briefly, I do mean to make love
to Ford's wife ; I spy entertainment in her ; she dis-
courses, she carves⁶, she gives the leer of invitation :
I can construe the action of her familiar style, and
the hardest voice of her behaviour, to be Englished
rightly, is, *I am Sir John Falstaff's*.

Pist. He hath studied her well⁷, and translated
her well ; out of honesty into English.

Nym. The anchor is deep : will that humour pass ?

Fal. Now, the report goes, she has all the rule of
her husband's purse ; he hath a legion of angels⁸.

Pist. As many devils entertain ; and, *To her, boy,*
say I.

⁵ "A fico for the phrase." See K. Henry IV. Part 2.

⁶ The meaning Falstaff purposed to give to "she carves" may be gathered from Torriano's explanation of it in his *Proverbial Phrases*. "Trinciarla, alla grande, to carve it magnificently, viz. to spend like a prince ; to lay it on, take it off who will." The annotator of Mr. Collier's folio changes it unnecessarily to she carves, which had been also proposed by Jackson.

⁷ The folios read *will*, the quartoes *well*, but without the repetition of the word.

⁸ Angels, gold coin of that name. The 4to. reads "she hath legions of angels." The folio misprints *legend* for *legions*.

Nym. The humour rises ; it is good ; humour me the angels.

Fal. I have writ me here a letter to her : and here another to Page's wife ; who even now gave me good eyes too, examined my parts with most judicious œiliads⁹ : sometimes the beam of her view gilded my foot, sometimes my portly belly.

Pist. Then did the sun on dunghill shine.

Nym. I thank thee for that humour.

Fal. O, she did so course o'er my exteriors with such a greedy intention, that the appetite of her eye did seem to scorch me up like a burning glass. Here's another letter to her : she bears the purse too : she is a region in Guiana, all gold and bounty. I will be cheater¹⁰ to them both, and they shall be exchequers to me ; they shall be my East and West Indies, and I will trade to them both. Go, bear thou this letter to mistress Page ; and thou this to mistress Ford : we will thrive, lads, we will thrive.

Pist. Shall I Sir Pandarus of Troy become, And by my side wear steel ? then, Lucifer take all !

Nym. I will run no base humour ; here, take the humour-letter ; I will keep the 'aviour of reputation.

Fal. Hold, sirrah [to Rob.], bear you these letters tightly¹¹ ;

Sail like my pinnace¹² to these golden shores.— Rogues, hence, avaunt ! vanish like hailstones, go ;

⁹ *Eliads, Oœilliades.* French. *Ogles*, wanton looks of the eyes. Cotgrave translates it, “to cast a sheep's eye.”

¹⁰ *Escheatour*, an officer in the Exchequer.

¹¹ *Cleverly, adroitly.*

¹² A *pinnace* was a light vessel built for speed, and was also called a *Brigantine*. Under the words *Catascopium* and *Celox* in Hutton's Dictionary, 1583, we have “a Brigantine or *Pinnace*, a light ship that goeth to espie.” Hence the word is used for a go-between. In Ben Jonson's Bartholomew Fair, Justice Overdo says of the pig-woman, “She has been before me, punk, *pinnace*, and bawd, any time these two and twenty years.”

Trudge, plod, away, o'the hoof; seek shelter, pack!
Falstaff will learn the humour¹³ of this age,
French thrift, you rogues; myself, and skirted page.

[*Exeunt FALSTAFF and ROBIN.*

Pist. Let vultures gripe thy guts¹⁴! for gourd and
fullam¹⁵ holds,

And high and low beguile the rich and poor:
Tester I'll have in pouch, when thou shalt lack,
Base Phrygian Turk!

Nym. I have operations in my head, which be
humours of revenge.

Pist. Wilt thou revenge?

Nym. By welkin, and her star¹⁶!

Pist. With wit, or steel?

Nym. With both the humours, I:

I will discuss the humour of this love to Page.

Pist. And I to Ford shall eke unfold,
How Falstaff, varlet vile,
His dove will prove, his gold will hold,
And his soft couch defile.

Nym. My humour shall not cool: I will incense
Page to deal with poison; I will possess him with

¹³ The folio reads *honour*, evidently a misprint.

¹⁴ A burlesque on a passage in *Tamburlaine, or the Scythian Shepherd*:

"and now doth ghastly death
With greedy talents [talon] gripe my bleeding heart,
And like a harper [harpy] tyers on my life."

Again, *ibid.*

"Griping our bowels with retorted thoughts."

¹⁵ In Decker's *Bellman of London*, 1640, among the false dice are enumerated "a bale of fullams"—"a bale of gordes, with as many high men as low men for passage." The false dice were chiefly made at Fulham, hence the name. The manner in which they were made is described in *The Complete Gamester*, 1676, 12mo.

¹⁶ The old imperfect copy of 1602 misprints "By welkin and er Fairies" probably instead of starres. "These lines above," in *y head*, is not in the folio.

ownness ; for the revolt of mien¹⁷ is dangerous :
is my true humour.

'st. Thou art the Mars of malcontents : I second
'; troop on. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV. *A Room in Dr. Caius's House.*

Enter Mrs. QUICKLY, SIMPLE, and RUGBY.

wick. What ; John Rugby !—I pray thee, go to
casement, and see if you can see my master,
or Doctor Caius, coming : if he do, i'faith, and
any body in the house, here will be an old abusing
od's patience, and the king's English.

ug. I'll go watch. [Exit RUGBY.

wick. Go ; and we'll have a posset for't soon at
t, in faith, at the latter end of a sea-coal fire. An
st, willing, kind fellow, as ever servant shall come
use withal ; and, I warrant you, no tell-tale, nor
reed-bate¹ : his worst fault is, that he is given
rayer ; he is something peevish² that way : but
dy but has his fault ;—but let that pass. Peter
ple, you say, your name is ?

m. Ay, for fault of a better.

wick. And master Slender's your master ?

m. Ay, forsooth.

wick. Does he not wear a great round beard³, like
ver's paring knife ?

The folio has, “*For the revolt of mine is dangerous,*” which
ens changed to “revolt of mien,” supposing the reference to
Page's *change of countenance* when instigated to jealousy.
y “the revolt of mine,” Nym may mean the revolt or change
humour is dangerous. He was in a towering passion, and
Pistol, “My humour shall not cool.”

. e. *breeder of debate*, maker of contention. By Mrs. Quickly
ring this term to addiction to prayer, Shakspere may mean
irize the illiberal application of it to the nonconformists,
vere sticklers for serious points of conscience.

peevish, i. e. foolish.

¹⁸ A Note on K. Henry V. Act iii. Sc. 6 :

“And what a beard of the general's cut.”

Sim. No, forsooth : he hath but a little wee face, with a little yellow beard ; a Cain-coloured beard⁴.

Quick. A softly-sprighted man, is he not ?

Sim. Ay, forsooth : but he is as tall a man of his hands⁵, as any is between this and his head ; he hath fought with a warrener.

Quick. How say you ?—O, I should remember him ; Does he not hold up his head, as it were ? and strut in his gait ?

Sim. Yes, indeed, does he.

Quick. Well, heaven send Anne Page no worse fortune ! Tell master parson Evans, I will do what I can for your master : Anne is a good girl, and I wish—

Re-enter RUGBY.

Rug. Out, alas ! here comes my master.

Quick. We shall all be shent⁶ : Run in here, good young man ; go into this closet. [Shuts Simple in the closet.] He will not stay long.—What, John

⁴ Cain and Judas in old pictures and tapestry were constantly represented with yellow beards. [See *As You Like It*, Act iii. Sc. 2.] In an age when but a small part of the nation could read, ideas were frequently borrowed from these representations. The quartoes of 1602 read *a kane-coloured beard*, i. e. of the colour of cane ; and make Quickly say, "*a whay-coloured beard*," which favours this reading.

⁵ This phrase has been very imperfectly explained. Malone's quotation from Cotgrave was near the mark, but missed it : " *Haut à la main, Homme à la main, Homme de main.* A MAN OF HIS HANDS ; a man of execution or valour ; a striker, like enough to lay about him ; proud, surlie, sullen, stubborn." So says this truly valuable old dictionary : from which it is evident that a TALL man of his hands was only a free version of the French *Homme HAUT à la main*. This equivocal use of the words *Haut* and *tall* will also explain the expression a *tall* fellow, or a *tall* man, wherever it occurs. Mercutio ridicules it as one of the affected phrases of the fantasticoes of his age, "a very good blade," "a very tall man!"—*Romeo and Juliet*, Act ii. Sc. 4.

⁶ *Shent*, i. e. scolded, reprimanded.

Rugby ! John, what, John, I say !—Go, John, go inquire for my master ; I doubt, he be not well, that he comes not home :—*and down, down, adown-a, &c.*

[*Sings.*

Enter Doctor Caius?

Caius. Vat is you sing ? I do not like dese toys ;
Pray you, go and vetch me in my closet *un boitier verd* ; a box, a green-a box ; Do intend vat I speak ?
a green-a box.

Quick. Ay, forsooth, I'll fetch it you. [*Aside.*] I am glad he went not in himself ; if he had found the young man, he would have been horn-mad.

Caius. *Fe, fe, fe, fe ! ma foi, il fait fort chaud. Je m'en vais à la cour,—la grande affaire.*

Quick. Is it this, sir ?

Caius. *Ouy ; mette le au mon pocket ; Dépêche,* quickly :—Vere is dat knave Rugby ?

Quick. What, John Rugby ! John !

Rug. Here, sir.

Caius. You are John Rugby, and you are Jack Rugby ; Come, take-a your rapier, and come after my heel to de court.

⁷ It has been thought strange that Shakspeare should take the name of Caius for his Frenchman, as an eminent physician of that name, founder of Caius College, Oxford, flourished in Elizabeth's reign. The character might however be drawn from the life, for in Jack Dover's Quest of Enquiry, 1604, a story called The Foole of Windsor, turns upon a simple outlandish Doctor of Physicke. Steevens says, " In The Three Ladies of London, 1584, is the character of an Italian Merchant very strongly marked by foreign pronunciation. Dr. Dodypoll, in the comedy of that name, is, like Caius, a French physician. This piece appeared at least a year before the Merry Wives of Windsor. The hero of it speaks such another jargon as the antagonist of Sir Hugh, and like him is cheated of his mistress. In several other pieces, more ancient than the earliest of Shakspeare's, provincial characters are introduced. In the old play of Henry V. French soldiers are introduced speaking broken English.

Rug. 'Tis ready, sir, here in the porch.

Caius. By my trot, I tarry too long :—Od's me !
Qu'ay-j'oublié ? dere is some simples in my closet, dat
 I vill not for the varld I shall leave behind.

Quick. Ah me ! he'll find the young man there, and
 be mad.

Caius. *O diable, diable !* vat is in my closet?—
 Villany? larron ! [pulling SIMPLE out]. Rugby, my
 rapier.

Quick. Good master, be content.

Caius. Verefore shall I be content-a ?

Quick. The young man is an honest man.

Caius. Vat shall de honest man do in my closet?
 dere is no honest man dat shall come in my closet.

Quick. I beseech you, be not so flegmatick ; hear the
 truth of it : He came of an errand to me from parson
 Hugh.

Caius. Vell.

Sim. Ay, forsooth, to desire her to——

Quick. Peace, I pray you.

Caius. Peace-a your tongue :—Speak-a your tale.

Sim. To desire this honest gentlewoman, your
 maid, to speak a good word to mistress Anne Page for
 my master, in the way of marriage.

Quick. This is all, indeed, la ; but I'll ne'er put my
 finger in the fire, and need not.

Caius. Sir Hugh send-a you ?—Rugby, *baillez* me
 some paper :—Tarry you a little-awhile. [Writes.

Quick. I am glad he is so quiet : if he had been
 -hly moved, you should have heard him so loud,
 -elancholy ;—But notwithstanding, man, I'll
 naster what good I can : and the very yea
 o is, the French Doctor, my master,—I may
 my master, look you, for I keep his house ;
 ash, wring, brew, bake, scour, dress meat
 , make the beds, and do all myself ;—

Sim. 'Tis a great charge, to come under one body's hand.

Quick. Are you avis'd o' that? you shall find it a great charge: and to be up early, and down late;—but notwithstanding (to tell you in your ear; I would have no words of it); my master himself is in love with mistress Anne Page: but notwithstanding that,—I know Anne's mind,—that's neither here nor there.

Caius. You jack'nape; give-a dis letter to Sir Hugh; by gar, it is a shallege: I vill cut his troat in de park; and I vill teach a scurvy jack-a-nape priest to meddle or make.—You may be gone; it is not good you tarry here:—by gar, I vill cut all his two stones; by gar, he shall not have a stone to trow at his dog.

[*Exit SIMPLE.*]

Quick. Alas, he speaks but for his friend.

Caius. It is no matter-a for dat:—do not you tell-a me dat I shall have Anne Page for myself?—by gar, I vill kill de Jack priest; and I have appointed mine host of *de Jarterre* to measure our weapon:—by gar, I vill myself have Anne Page.

Quick. Sir, the maid loves you, and all shall be well: we must give folks leave to prate: What, the good-jer⁸!

Caius. Rugby, come to the court vit me;—By gar, if I have not Anne Page, I shall turn your head out of my door:—Follow my heels, Rugby.

[*Exeunt CAIUS and RUGBY.*]

Quick. You shall have An fools-head of your own. No, I know Anne's mind for that: never a woman in Windsor knows more of Anne's mind than I do; nor can do more than I do with her, I thank heaven.

Fent. [*within.*] Who's within there, ho?

⁸ The good-jer and good yeare were common exclamations of e time. See Note on K. Lear, Act v. Sc. 3.

Quick. Who's there, I trow? Come near the house,
I pray you.

Enter FENTON.

Fent. How now, good woman: how dost thou?

Quick. The better, that it pleases your good worship to ask.

Fent. What news? how does pretty mistress Anne?

Quick. In truth, sir, and she is pretty, and honest, and gentle; and one that is your friend, I can tell you that by the way; I praise heaven for it.

Fent. Shall I do any good, thinkest thou? Shall I not lose my suit?

Quick. Troth, sir, all is in his hands above: but notwithstanding, master Fenton, I'll be sworn on a book, she loves you:—Have not your worship a wart above your eye?

Fent. Yes, marry, have I; what of that?

Quick. Well, thereby hangs a tale:—good faith, it is such another Nan:—but, I detest, an honest maid as ever broke bread:—We had an hour's talk of that wart:—I shall never laugh but in that maid's company!—But, indeed, she is given too much to allicholly and musing: But for you—Well, go to.

Fent. Well, I shall see her to-day: Hold, there's money for thee; let me have thy voice in my behalf: if thou seest her before me, commend me—

Quick. Will I? i'faith, that we will: and I will tell your worship more of the wart, the next time we have confidence; and of other wooers.

Fent. Well, farewell; I am in great haste now.

Quick. Farewell to your worship.—Truly, an honest gentleman; but Anne loves him not; for I know Anne's mind as well as another does: Out upon't hat have I forgot?

[Exit.]

[Exit.]

ACT II.

SCENE I. *Before PAGE's 1**Enter Mistress PAGE, with a letter.**Mrs. Page.*

MHAT! have I 'scaped love-letters in the holy-day time of my beauty, and am I now a subject for them? Let me see: [Reads.]
Ask me no reason why I love you; for though love
use reason for his precision¹, he admits him not for his
counsellor. You are not young, no more am I; go to
then, there's sympathy: you are merry, so am I; Ha!
ha! then there's more sympathy: you love sack, and so
do I; would you desire better sympathy? Let it suffice
thee, mistress Page (at the least, if the love of soldier
can suffice), that I love thee. I will not say, pity me,
'tis not a soldier-like phrase; but I say, love me. By me,

*Thine own true knight,
By day or night,
Or any kind of light,
With all his might
For thee to fight,*

John Falstaff.

What a Herod of Jewry is this!—O wicked, wicked world!—one that is well nigh worn to pieces with

¹ It has been conjectured that *physician* is the word here, as Shakespeare has given Reason the same office in his 147th Sonnet:

“ My reason, the *physician* to my love,
Angry that his prescriptions are not kept,
Hath left me.”

But a *precision*, is “ one who limits or restrains,” and in this sense opposed to the adviser of the matter written, the counsellor

e, to show himself a young gallant ! What an unweighed behaviour hath this Flemish drunkard picked (with the devil's name) out of my conversation, that he dares in this manner assay me ? Why, he hath not been thrice in my company !—What should I say to him ?—I was then frugal of my mirth :—heaven forgive me !—Why, I'll exhibit a bill in the parliament for the putting down of fat men. How shall I be revenged on him ? for revenged I will be, as sure as his guts are made of puddings.

Enter Mistress FORD.

Mrs. Ford. Mistress Page ! trust me, I was going to your house.

Mrs. Page. And, trust me, I was coming to you. You look very ill.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, I'll ne'er believe that ; I have to show to the contrary.

Mrs. Page. 'Faith, but you do, in my mind.

Mrs. Ford. Well, I do then ; yet, I say, I could show to the contrary : O, mistress Page, give me some counsel !

Mrs. Page. What's the matter, woman ?

Mrs. Ford. O woman, if it were not for one trifling respect, I could come to such honour !

Mrs. Page. Hang the trifle, woman ; take the honour : What is it ?—dispense with trifles ;—what is it ?

Mrs. Ford. If I would but go to hell for an eternal moment, or so, I could be knighted.

Mrs. Page. What?—thou liest !—Sir Alice Ford ! —These knights will hack²; and so thou shouldst not alter the article of thy gentry.

² To *hack* was the appropriate term for chopping off the spurs of a knight when he was to be degraded. The meaning therefore appears to be :—“these knights will degrade you for an unquali-

Mrs. Ford. We burn day-light³: here, read, read;—perceive how I might be knighted.—I shall think the worse of fat men, as long as I have an eye to make difference of men's liking: And yet he would not swear; praised women's modesty: and gave such orderly and well behaved reproof to all uncomeliness, that I would have sworn his disposition would have gone to the truth of his words: but they do no more adhere and keep place together, than the hundredth psalm to the tune of *Green sleeves*⁴. What tempest, I trow, threw this whale, with so many tuns of oil in his belly, ashore at Windsor? How shall I be revenged on him? I think, the best way were to entertain him with hope, till the wicked fire of lust have melted him in his own grease.—Did you ever hear the like?

Mrs. Page. Letter for letter; but that the name of Page and Ford differs!—To thy great comfort in this mystery of ill opinions, here's the twin-brother of thy letter: but let thine inherit first; for, I protest, mine never shall. I warrant he hath a thousand of these letters, writ with blank space for different names. (sure more), and these are of the second edition: He will print them out of doubt: for he cares not what he puts into the press⁵, when he would put us two. I had rather be a giantess, and lie under mount Pe-

fied pretender." Another explanation has been offered; supposing this to be a covert reflection upon the prodigal distribution of the honour of knighthood by King James. "These knights will soon become so *hackneyed* that your honour will not be increased by becoming one."

³ "We burn day-light." A proverb applicable to superfluous actions in general.

⁴ *Green sleeves.* This was a popular ballad of the time, the air of which was extensively adopted. See Chappel's National Airs, vol. ii. p. 38.

⁵ *Mrs. Page*, who does not seem to have been intended in any degree for a learned lady, is here made to talk a little like an author about the press and printing.

lion. Well, I will find you twenty lascivious turtles, ere one chaste man.

Mrs. Ford. Why, this is the very same; the very hand, the very words: What doth he think of us?

Mrs. Page. Nay, I know not: It makes me almost ready to wrangle with mine own honesty. I'll entertain myself like one that I am not acquainted withal; for, sure, unless he know some strain in me, that I know not myself, he would never have boarded me in this fury.

Mrs. Ford. Boarding, call you it? I'll be sure to keep him above deck.

Mrs. Page. So will I; if he come under my hatches, I'll never to sea again. Let's be revenged on him: let's appoint him a meeting; give him a show of comfort in his suit; and lead him on with a fine-baited delay, till he hath pawn'd his horses to mine Host of the Garter.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, I will consent to act any villany against him, that may not sully the chariness⁶ of our honesty. O, that my husband saw this letter! it would give eternal food to his jealousy.

Mrs. Page. Why, look, where he comes; and my good man too: he's as far from jealousy, as I am from giving him cause; and that, I hope, is an unmeasurable distance.

Mrs. Ford. You are the happier woman.

Mrs. Page. Let's consult together against this greasy knight: Come hither. [They retire.]

Enter FORD, PISTOL, PAGE, and NYM.

Ford. Well, I hope it be not so.

teevens explains this "the caution which ought to attend

But surely to "sully caution" is a strange idea? If it be
gross error for clearness or cleanliness, we must take chariness
an modest reserve; which would hardly be applicable to these
y wives.

Pist. Hope is a curtail⁷ dog in some affairs :
Sir John affects thy wife.

Ford. Why, sir, my wife is not young.

Pist. He woos both high and low, both rich and poor,

Both young and old, one with another, Ford :
He loves the gally-mawfry⁸; Ford, perpend.

Ford. Love my wife ?

Pist. With liver burning hot⁹: Prevent, or go thou,
Like Sir Actæon he, with Ring-wood at thy heels :
O, odious is the name !

Ford. What name, sir ?

Pist. The horn, I say : Farewell.

Take heed ; have open eye ; for thieves do foot by
night :

Take heed, ere summer comes, or cuckoo-birds do
sing.—

Away, Sir corporal Nym.—

[Exit PISTOL.]

Nym. Believe it, Page ; he speaks sense¹⁰.

Ford. I will be patient ; I will find out this.

Nym. And this is true. [To PAGE.] I like not
the humour of lying. He hath wronged me in some
humours ; I should have borne the humoured letter
to her : but I have a sword, and it shall bite upon my
necessity. He loves your wife ; there's the short and

⁷ A curtail dog was a common dog not meant for sport, part
of the tails of such dogs being commonly cut off while they are
puppies ; it was a prevalent notion that the tail of a dog was ne-
cessary to him in running, hence a dog that missed his game was
called a curtail, from which cur is probably derived.

⁸ Gally-mawfry, a medley. Perpend, i. e. consider.

⁹ The liver was anciently supposed to be the inspirer of amo-
rous passions. Thus in an old Latin distich :

“Cor sapit, pulmo loquitur, fel commovet iras
Splen ridens facit, cogit amare jecur.”

See EPOTOMANIA, or Love Melancholy, by Dr. Jas. Ferrand.
Oxford, 1640. 12mo. p. 70.

¹⁰ This line forms part of Pistol's speech in the folio.

the long. My name is corporal Nym ; I speak, and I avouch 'tis true :—my name is Nym, and Falstaff loves your wife.—Adieu ! I love not the humour of bread and cheese. Adieu. [Exit Nym.]

Page. The humour of it, quoth'a ! here's a fellow frights humour¹¹ out of his wits.

Ford. I will seek out Falstaff.

Page. I never heard such a drawling-affecting rogue.

Ford. If I do find it, well¹².

Page. I will not believe such a Cataian¹³, though the priest of the town commended him for a true man.

Ford. 'Twas a good sensible fellow : Well.

Page. How now, Meg ?

Mrs. Page. Whither go you, George ?—Hark you.

Mrs. Ford. How now, sweet Frank ? why art thou melancholy ?

Ford. I melancholy ! I am not melancholy.—Get you home, go.

¹¹ The first folio reads—*English*. The abuse of this word *humour* by the coxcombs of the age had been admirably satirized by Ben Jonson. After a very pertinent disquisition on the real meaning and true application of the word, he concludes thus:

Asp. But that a rook by wearing a pied feather,
The cable hatband, or the three-piled ruff,
A yard of shoe-tie, or the Switzers knot
On his French garters, should affect a humour
O 'tis worse than most ridiculous.

Cor. He speaks pure truth ; now if an idiot
Have but an apish or fantastic strain,
It is his *humour*.—

Induction to Every Man Out of his Humour.

's quotes an Epigram from *Humours Ordinarie*, 1607, to effect.

s and the two preceding speeches are soliloquies of Ford, no connexion with what Page says, who is also making s on what had passed, without attending to Ford.

taian, i. e. a *Sharper*. *Cataia*, or *Cathay*, being the name to China by the old travellers, some of whom have mentioned the dexterous thieving of the people there ; hence a short-
in familiar language called a *Cataian*. Page afterwards ym and Pistof are “*very rogues*.” Sir Toby ludicrously Olivia, in *Twelfth Night*, Act ii. Sc. 3.

Mrs. Ford. 'Faith thou hast some crotchets in thy head now.—Will you go, mistress Page?

Mrs. Page. Have with you.—You'll come to dinner, George?—Look, who comes yonder: she shall be our messenger to this paltry knight.

[*Aside to MRS. FORD.*

Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY.

Mrs. Ford. Trust me, I thought on her: she'll fit it.

Mrs. Page. You are come to see my daughter Anne?

Quick. Ay, forsooth; And, I pray, how does good mistress Anne?

Mrs. Page. Go in with us, and see; we have an hour's talk with you.

[*Exeunt MRS. PAGE, MRS. FORD, and MRS. QUICKLY.*

Page. How now, master Ford?

Ford. You heard what this knave told me; did you not?

Page. Yes; and you heard what the other told me?

Ford. Do you think there is truth in them?

Page. Hang 'em, slaves! I do not think the knight would offer it: but these that accuse him in his intent towards our wives, are a yoke of his discarded men; very rogues: now they be out of service.

Ford. Were they his men?

Page. Marry, were they.

Ford. I like it never the better for that.—Does he lie at the Garter?

Page. Ay, marry, does he. If he should intend this voyage towards my wife, I would turn her loose to him; and what he gets more of her than sharp words, let it lie on my head.

Ford. I do not misdoubt my wife; but I would be loath to turn them together: A man may be too confident: I would have nothing lie on my head; I cannot be thus satisfied.

Page. Look, where my ranting host of the Garter comes : there is either liquor in his pate, or money in his purse, when he looks so merrily.—How now, mine host ?

Enter Host and Shallow.

Host. How now, bully-rook ? thou'rt a gentleman : cavaliero-justice, I say.

Shal. I follow mine host, I follow.—Good even, and twenty, good master Page ! Master Page, will you go with us ? we have sport in hand.

Host. Tell him, cavaliero-justice ; tell him, bully-rook.

Shal. Sir, there is a fray to be fought, between Sir Hugh the Welsh priest, and Caius the French doctor.

Ford. Good mine host o' the Garter, a word with you.

Host. What say'st thou, my bully-rook ?

[*They go aside.*]

Shal. Will you [to PAGE] go with us to behold it ? my merry host hath had the measuring of their weapons ; and, I think he hath appointed them contrary places : for, believe me, I hear the parson is no jester. Hark, I will tell you what our sport shall be.

Host. Hast thou no suit against my knight, my guest-cavalier ?

Ford. None, I protest¹⁴ : but I'll give you a pottle
nt sack to give me recourse to him, and tell him,
me is Brook ; only for a jest.

Shal. My hand, bully : thou shalt have egress and
ss ; said I well ? and thy name shall be Brook :
a merry knight.—Will you go, Cavaliers¹⁵?

Shal. Have with you, mine host.

Page. I have heard, the Frenchman hath good skill
rapier.

speech is erroneously given to Shallow in the folio.
folio of 1623 reads *An-heires*, which is unintelligible.

Shal. Tut, sir, I could have told you more : In these times you stand on distance, your passes, stoccadoes, and I know not what : 'tis the heart, master Page : 'tis here, 'tis here. I have seen the time, with my long sword¹⁶, I would have made you four tall fellows skip like rats.

Host. Here, boys, here, here ! shall we wag ?

Page. Have with you :—I had rather hear them scold than [see them] fight.

[*Exeunt Host, SHAL. and PAGE.*

Ford. Though Page be a secure fool, and stands so firmly on his wife's frailty, yet I cannot put off my opinion so easily ; She was in his company at Page's house ; and, what they made¹⁷ there, I know not. Well, I will look further into't : and I have a disguise to sound Falstaff : If I find her honest, I lose not my labour ; if she be otherwise, 'tis labour well bestowed.

[*Exit.*

II

SCENE II. *A Room in the Garter Inn.*

Enter FALSTAFF and PISTOL.

Fal. I will not lend thee a penny.

the word in the text, the conjecture of Mr. Boaden, Malone considered the best that had been offered. *Cavalieres* would have been the orthography of the old copy, and the host has the term frequently in his mouth. Mr. Steevens substituted *on hearts*. “Will you go *on here* ;” a reading long since suggested, is also found in Mr. Collier's 2nd folio ; and in Page's speech below, the words I have included in brackets are added.

¹⁶ Before the introduction of rapiers the swords in use were of an enormous length, and sometimes used with both hands. Shallow, with an old man's vanity, censured the innovation, and ridicules the terms and use of the rapier. See Note on K. Henry IV. P. 1, Act ii. Sc. 4. There are some additions here in the 4to. 1602, but the substance is found in a future scene.

¹⁷ An obsolete phrase, signifying—“what they did there.” In *Act iv. Sc. 2, of this play* we have again, *what make you here*, or *what do you here*.

Pist. Why, then the world's mine oyster,
Which I with sword will open. [I will retort the
sum in Equipage.]¹

Fal. Not a penny. I have been content, sir, you
should lay my countenance to pawn : I have grated
upon my good friends for three reprieves for you and
your coach-fellow² Nym ; or else you had looked
through the grate like a gemini of baboons. I am
damned in hell, for swearing to gentlemen my friends,
you were good soldiers, and tall fellows : and when
mistress Bridget lost the handle of her fan³, I took't
upon mine honour, thou hadst it not.

Pist. Didst thou not share ? hadst thou not fifteen
pence ?

Fal. Reason, you rogue, reason : Think'st thou,
I'll endanger my soul *gratis*? At a word, hang no
more about me, I am no gibbet for you :—go.—A
short knife and a throng⁴;—to your manor of Pickt-

¹ These words are from the quartoes ; “equipage” Warton thought a cant term for *stolen goods*. Steevens imagined *attendance* was meant.

² *Coach-fellow*, i. e. he who *draws* along with you, who is joined with you in all your knavery.

³ Fans were costly appendages of female dress in Shakspere's time. They consisted of ostrich and other feathers, fixed into handles, some of which were made of gold, silver, or ivory of curious workmanship. The fashion was most probably imported from Italy, for in the *HABITI ANTICHI ET MODERNI di tutto il Mondo*, published at Veniee in 1580, from drawings by Titiano and Cesare Vecellio, are several represented of various forms, of which these are two.



Thus in the second Sestiad of Marlowe's Hero and Leander:
“ Her painted fan of curled plumes let fall.”

⁴ *A short knife and a throng*, i. e. go and *cut purses in a crowd*. Purses being then worn hanging at the girdle. Lodge, in his “Wits Misery,” 1596, describes one of his “Incarnate Devils” thus : “The fourth is Rapine, and he gets about the streets to steale for him, he is a passing good hooker and picklock ; and for a *short knife* and a horn thimble, turne him loose to all the fraternitie : his stock is false keies, engines, and sword and buckler.”

hatch⁵, go.—You'll not bear a letter for me, you rogue ! you stand upon your honour !—Why, thou unconfinable baseness, it is as much as I can do to keep the terms of my honour precise. I, I, I myself sometimes, leaving the fear of heaven on the left hand, and hiding mine honour in my necessity, am fain to shuffle, to hedge, and to lurch ; and yet, you, rogue, will ensconce⁶ your brags⁷, your cat-a-mountain looks, your red-lattice⁸ phrases, and your bull-baiting oaths, under the shelter of your honour ! You will not do it, you ?

Pist. I do relent ; what would'st thou more of man ?

Enter ROBIN.

Rob. Sir, here's a woman would speak with you.

Fal. Let her approach.

Enter MISTRESS QUICKLY.

Quick. Give your worship good-morrow.

Fal. Good-morrow, good wife.

Quick. Not so, an't please your worship.

Fal. Good maid, then.

⁵ *Pick't-hatch* was in Turnbull Street, Cow Cross, Clerkenwell, a haunt of the worst part of both sexes. The unseasonable and obstreperous irruptions of the swash-bucklers of that age rendered a *hatch* or half door with spikes upon it a necessary defence to a brothel, and hence the term became a cant phrase to denote a part of the town noted for brothels.

⁶ *A sconce* is a fortification ; to *ensconce* is therefore to hide, to conceal one's self as within a fort.

⁷ *Braggs.* The old copy has *rags*. *Pistol* was an ensign, and is now a follower of Falstaff, although a *braggadocio*, and *rags* is therefore inappropriate ; the mere addition of the letter b furnishes the word most likely to be applied to him by Falstaff. I also admit Hammer's happy emendation of *bull-baiting*, instead of the unmeaning *bold-beating* oaths of the old copy.

⁸ *Alehouse language.* Red-lattice windows formerly denoted an alehouse, as the chequers have done since.

Quick. I'll be sworn ; as my mother was, the first hour I was born.

Fal. I do believe the swearer : What with me ?

Quick. Shall I vouchsafe your worship a word or two ?

Fal. Two thousand, fair woman ; and I'll vouchsafe thee the hearing.

Quick. There is one mistress Ford, sir ;—I pray, come a little nearer this ways :—I myself dwell with master doctor Caius.

Fal. Well, on : mistress Ford, you say,—

Quick. Your worship says very true : I pray your worship, come a little nearer this ways.

Fal. I warrant thee, nobody hears ;—mine own people, mine own people.

Quick. Are they so ? Heaven bless them, and make them his servants !

Fal. Well : mistress Ford :—what of her ?

Quick. Why, sir, she's a good creature. Lord, lord ! your worship's a wanton : Well, heaven forgive you, and all of us, I pray !

Fal. Mistress Ford :—come, mistress Ford,—

Quick. Marry, this is the short and the long of it : you have brought her into such a canaries⁹ as 'tis wonderful. The best courtier of them all, when the court lay at Windsor, could never have brought her to such a canary. Yet there has been knights, and lords, and gentlemen, with their coaches ; I warrant you, coach after coach, letter after letter, gift after gift ; smelling so sweetly (all musk), and so rushling, I warrant you, in silk and gold ; and in such alligant terms ; and in such wine and sugar of the best, and the fairest, that would have won any woman's heart ; and, I warrant you, they could never get an eye-wink of her.—I had

⁹ A mistake of Mrs. Quickly's for *quandaries*. *Canary* was, however, a quick and lively dance mentioned in *All's Well that Ends Well*, Act. ii. Sc. 1.

myself twenty angels given me this morning : but I defy all angels (in any such sort, as they say), but in the way of honesty :—and, I warrant you, they could never get her so much as sip on a cup with the proudest of them all : and yet there has been earls, nay, which is more, pensioners¹⁰ ; but I warrant you, all is one with her.

Fal. But what says she to me ? be brief, my good she Mercury.

Quick. Marry, she hath received your letter ; for the which she thanks you a thousand times : and she gives you to notify, that her husband will be absence from his house between ten and eleven.

Fal. Ten and eleven ?

Quick. Ay, forsooth ; and then you may come and see the picture, she says, that you wot of ;—master Ford, her husband, will be from home. Alas ! the sweet woman leads an ill life with him ; he's a very jealousy man ; she leads a very frampold¹¹ life with him, good heart.

Fal. Ten and eleven : Woman, commend me to her ; I will not fail her.

Quick. Why, you say well : But I have another messenger to your worship : Mrs. Page hath her hearty commendations to you too ;—and let me tell you in your ear, she's as fartuous a civil modest wife, and one (I tell you) that will not miss you morning nor evening prayer, as any is in Windsor, whoe'er be the other : and she bade me tell your worship, that her husband is seldom from home ; but she hopes, there will come

¹⁰ *Pensioners*, i. e. Gentlemen of the band of Pensioners. Their dress was remarkably splendid, and therefore likely to attract the notice of Mrs. Quickly. Hence Shakspeare, in *A Midsummer Night's Dream*, has selected the golden-coated cowslips to be *pensioners* to the Fairy Queen.

¹¹ *Frampold* here means *fretful*, *peevish*, or *veraxious*. This obsolete word is of uncertain etymology.

a time. I never knew a woman so dote upon a man; surely, I think you have charms, la ; yes, in truth.

Fal. Not I, I assure thee ; setting the attraction of my good parts aside, I have no other charms.

Quick. Blessing on your heart for't !

Fal. But, I pray thee, tell me this : has Ford's wife, and Page's wife, acquainted each other how they love me ?

Quick. That were a jest, indeed !—they have not so little grace, I hope :—that were a trick, indeed ! But mistress Page would desire you to send her your little page of all loves¹² ; her husband has a marvellous inflection to the little page ; and, truly, master Page is an honest man. Never a wife in Windsor leads a better life than she does ; do what she will, say what she will, take all, pay all, go to bed when she list, rise when she list, all is as she will ; and, truly, she deserves it, for if there be a kind woman in Windsor, she is one. You must send her your page ; no remedy.

Fal. Why, I will.

Quick. Nay, but do so then : and, look you, he may come and go between you both ; and, in any case, have a nay-word, that you may know one another's mind, and the boy never need to understand any thing ; for 'tis not good that children should know any wickedness ; old folks, you know, have discretion, as they say, and know the world.

Fal. Fare thee well : commend me to them both : there's my purse ; I am yet thy debtor.—Boy, go along with this woman.—This news distracts me !

[*Exeunt* QUICKLY and ROBIN.
This punk¹³ is one of Cupid's carriers :—

all loves, is an adjuration only, and signifies no more than *this*, for the sake of all love. It is again used in Othello,

A Midsummer Night's Dream.

é note on Measure for Measure, Act v. Sc. 1, and the note
ace, Act i. Sc. 3, p. 203, ante.

Clap on more sails ; pursue, up with your fights¹⁴ ;
Give fire ; she is my prize, or ocean whelm them all !

[*Exit PISTOL.*

Fal. Say'st thou so, old Jack ? go thy ways ; I'll make more of thy old body than I have done. Will they yet look after thee ? Wilt thou, after the expense of so much money, be now a gainer ? Good body, I thank thee : Let them say, 'tis grossly done ; so it be fairly done, no matter.

Enter BARDOLPH.

Bard. Sir John, there's one master Brook below would fain speak with you, and be acquainted with you : and hath sent your worship a morning's draught of sack¹⁵.

Fal. Brook is his name ?

Bard. Ay, sir.

Fal. Call him in : [*Exit BARDOLPH.*] Such Brooks are welcome to me, that o'erflow such liquor. Ah ! ha ! mistress Ford and mistress Page, have I compass'd you ? go to ; *via*¹⁶ !

¹⁴ *Fights* are the waist cloths which hang round about the ship to hinder men from being seen in fight ; or any place wherein men may cover themselves, and yet use their arms.—*Phillips's World of Words.*

¹⁵ It seems to have been a common custom in taverns in Shakespeare's time, to send presents of wine from one room to another either as a memorial of friendship, or (as in the present instance), by way of introduction to acquaintance. The practice was continued as late as the Restoration. In the Parliamentary History, vol. xxii. p. 114, we have the following passage from The Life of General Monk, by Dr. Price. "I came to the Three Tuns, before Guildhall, where the general had quartered two nights before. I entered the tavern with a servant and portmanteau, and asked for a room, which I had scarce got into but *wine followed me as a present* from some citizens desiring leave to drink their morning's draught with me."

¹⁶ *Via*, an Italian word, which Florio explains :—"an adverb of encouragement, on away, go to, away forward, go on, despatch." It appears to have been a common exclamation in Shakespeare's time. *Antonini* renders it in Latin *eja, age.*

Re-enter BARDOLPH, with FORD disguised.

Ford. Bless you, sir.

Fal. And you, sir: Would you speak with me?

Ford. I make bold to press with so little preparation upon you.

Fal. You're welcome; What's your will? Give us leave, drawer. [*Exit BARDOLPH.*]

Ford. Sir, I am a gentleman that have spent much; my name is Brook.

Fal. Good master Brook, I desire more acquaintance of you.

Ford. Good Sir John, I sue for yours: not to charge you; for I must let you understand, I think myself in better plight for a lender than you are: the which hath something embolden'd me to this unseason'd intrusion; for they say, if money go before, all ways do lie open.

Fal. Money is a good soldier, sir, and will on.

Ford. Troth, and I have a bag of money here troubles me: if you will help me to bear it, Sir John, take all, or half, for easing me of the carriage.

Fal. Sir, I know not how I may deserve to be your porter.

Ford. I will tell you, sir, if you will give me the hearing.

Fal. Speak, good master Brook; I shall be glad to be your servant.

Ford. Sir, I hear you are a scholar,—I will be brief with you;—and you have been a man long known to me, though I had never so good means, as desire, to make myself acquainted with you. I shall discover a thing to you, wherein I must very much lay open mine own imperfection: but, good Sir John, as you have one eye upon my follies, as you hear them unfolded, turn another into the register of your own;

that I may pass with a reproof the easier, sith you yourself know, how easy it is to be such an offender.

Fal. Very well, sir; proceed.

Ford. There is a gentlewoman in this town, her husband's name is Ford.

Fal. Well, sir.

Ford. I have long loved her, and, I protest to you, bestowed much on her; followed her with a doting observance; engrossed opportunities to meet her; fe'd every slight occasion, that could but niggardly give me sight of her; not only bought many presents to give her, but have given largely to many, to know what she would have given: briefly, I have pursued her, as love hath pursued me; which hath been on the wing of all occasions. But whatsoever I have merited, either in my mind or in my means, meed, I am sure, I have received none; unless experience be a jewel: that I have purchased at an infinite rate; and that hath taught me to say this:

*Love like a shadow flies, when substance love pursues;
Pursuing that that flies, and flying what pursues*¹⁷.

Fal. Have you received no promise of satisfaction at her hands?

Ford. Never.

Fal. Have you importuned her to such a purpose?

Ford. Never.

Fal. Of what quality was your love then?

Ford. Like a fair house, built upon another man's ground, so that I have lost my edifice, by mistaking the place where I erected it.

Fal. To what purpose have you unfolded this to me?

Ford. When I have told you that, I have told you all. Some say, that though she appear honest to me,

¹⁷ This couplet is printed as a quotation in the folio 1623.

yet, in other places, she enlargeth her mirth so far, that there is shrewd construction made of her. Now, Sir John, here is the heart of my purpose : You are a gentleman of excellent breeding, admirable discourse, of great admittance¹⁸, authentic in your place and person, generally allowed¹⁹ for your many warlike, courtlike, and learned preparations.

Fal. O, sir !

Ford. Believe it, for you know it :—There is money ; spend it, spend it, spend more ; spend all I have ; only give me so much of your time in exchange of it, as to lay an amiable siege to the honesty of this Ford's wife : use your art of wooing, win her to consent to you ; if any man may, you may as soon as any.

Fal. Would it apply well to the vehemency of your affection, that I should win what you would enjoy ? Methinks you prescribe to yourself very preposterously.

Ford. O, understand my drift ! she dwells so securely on the excellency of her honour, that the folly of my soul²⁰ dares not present itself ; she is too bright to be looked against. Now, could I come to her with any detection in my hand, my desires had instance and argument to commend themselves ; I could drive her then from the ward²¹ of her purity, her reputation, her marriage-vow, and a thousand other her defences, which now are too strongly embattled against me : What say you to't, Sir John ?

Fal. Master Brook, I will first make bold with

¹⁸ Of great admittance, i. e. admitted into all, or the greatest companies.

¹⁹ Allowed is approved. So in King Lear :

“ if your sweet sway
Allow obedience,” &c.

²⁰ Mr. Collier's corrected folio substitutes *suit* for *soul*.

²¹ Ward, i. e. defence. A metaphor from the fencing school. So Falstaff “ Thou know'st my old ward, here I lay, and thus I 'are my point.”

your money ; next give me your hand ; and last, as I am a gentleman, you shall, if you will, enjoy Ford's wife.

Ford. O good sir !

Fal. I say you shall.

Ford. Want no money, Sir John, you shall want none.

Fal. Want no mistress Ford, master Brook, you shall want none. I shall be with her (I may tell you), by her own appointment ; even as you came in to me, her assistant, or go-between, parted from me : I say, I shall be with her between ten and eleven ; for at that time the jealous rascally knave, her husband, will be forth. Come you to me at night ; you shall know how I speed.

Ford. I am blest in your acquaintance. Do you know Ford, sir ?

Fal. Hang him, poor cuckoldly knave ! I know him not :—yet I wrong him to call him poor ; they say, the jealous wittolly knave hath masses of money ; for the which his wife seems to me well-favoured, I will use her as the key of the cuckoldly rogue's coffer ; and there's my harvest-home.

Ford. I would you knew Ford, sir ; that you might avoid him, if you saw him.

Fal. Hang him, mechanical salt-butter rogue ! I will stare him out of his wits ; I will awe him with my cudgel ; it shall hang like a meteor o'er the cuckold's horns : master Brook, thou shalt know, I will predominate o'er the peasant, and thou shalt lie with his wife.—Come to me soon at night :—Ford's a knave, and I will aggravate his style²² ; thou, master Brook, shalt know him for a knave and cuckold :—come to me soon at night. [Exit.]

²² This is a phrase from the Herald's Office. Falstaff means that he will add more titles to those Ford is already distinguished by.

Ford. What a damned Epicurean rascal is this!—My heart is ready to crack with impatience.—Who says this is improvident jealousy?—My wife hath sent to him, the hour is fixed, the match is made. Would any man have thought this?—See the hell of having a false woman! my bed shall be abused, my coffers ransacked, my reputation gnawn at; and I shall not only receive this villainous wrong, but stand under the adoption of abominable terms, and by him that does me this wrong. Terms! names!—*Amaimon* sounds well; Lucifer, well; *Barbason*²³, well; yet they are devils' additions, the names of fiends: but cuckold! *wittol*²⁴ cuckold! the devil himself hath not such a name. Page is an ass, a secure ass; he will trust his wife, he will not be jealous: I will rather trust a Fleming with my butter, parson Hugh the Welshman with my cheese, an Irishman with my aqua-vitæ bottle, or a thief to walk my ambling gelding, than my wife with herself: then she plots, then she ruminates, then she devises: and what they think in their hearts they may effect, they will break their hearts but they will effect. Heaven be praised for my jealousy!—Eleven o'clock the hour—I will prevent this, detect my wife, be revenged on Falstaff, and laugh at Page. I will about it; better three hours too soon, than a minute too late. Fie, fie, fie! cuckold! cuckold! cuckold!

[Exit.]

²³ Reginald Scot, in his *Discovery of Witchcraft*, may be consulted concerning these demons. “*Amaimon*,” he says, “was King of the East, and *Barbatos* a great countie or earle.” But Randle Holme, in his *Academy of Armory*, informs us that “*Amaymon* is the chief whose dominion is on the north part of the infernal gulf; and that *Barbatos* is like a Sagittarius, and has thirty legions under him.”

²⁴ Chief Justice Holt said, “To call a man a cuckold was not an ecclesiastical slander, but *wittol* was, for it imports his knowledge of and consent to his wife's adultery.”—*Salkeld's Rep.* 692

SCENE III. *Windsor Park.*

Enter CAIUS and RUGBY.

Caius. Jack Rugby !

Rug. Sir.

Caius. Vat is de clock, Jack ?

Rug. 'Tis past the hour, sir, that Sir Hugh promised to meet.

Caius. By gar, he has save his soul, dat he is no come : he has pray his Pible vell, dat he is no come : by gar, Jack Rugby, he is dead already, if he be come.

Rug. He is wise, sir ; he knew your worship would kill him, if he came.

Caius. By gar, de herring is no dead, so as I vill kill him. Take your rapier, Jack ; I vill tell you how I vill kill him.

Rug. Alas, sir, I cannot fence.

Caius. Villany, take your rapier.

Rug. Forbear ; here's company.

Enter Host, SHALLOW, SLENDER, and PAGE.

Host. 'Bless thee, bully doctor.

Shal. Save you, master doctor Caius.

Page. Now, good master doctor !

Slen. Give you good-morrow, sir.

Caius. Vat be all you, one, two, tree, four, come for ?

Host. To see thee fight, to see thee foin¹, to see thee traverse, to see thee here, to see thee there ; to see thee pass thy punto, thy stock, thy reverse², thy distance, thy montant. Is he dead, my Ethiopian ?

¹ The ancient term for making a *thrust*.

² The *stoccardo*, the *reverso*, in Italian, are also terms in fencing anglicised.

is he dead, my Francisco ? ha, bully ! What says my Æsculapius ? my Galen ? my heart of elder³ ? ha ! is he dead, bully-stale⁴ ? is he dead ?

Caius. By gar, he is de coward Jack priest of the world ; he is not show his face.

Host. Thou art a Castilian-king-urinal ! Hector of Greece, my boy !

Caius. I pray you, bear vitness that me have stay six or seven, two, tree hours for him, and he is no come.

Shal. He is the wiser man, master doctor : he is a curer of souls, and you a curer of bodies ; if you should fight, you go against the hair of your professions : is it not true, master Page ?

Page. Master Shallow, you have yourself been a great fighter, though now a man of peace.

Shal. Bodykins, master Page, though I now be old, and of the peace, if I see a sword out, my finger itches to make one : though we are justices, and doctors, and churchmen, master Page, we have some salt of our youth in us ; we are the sons of women, master Page.

Page. "Tis true, master Shallow.

Shal. It will be found so, master Page. Master doctor Caius, I am come to fetch you home. I am sworn of the peace ; you have showed yourself a wise physician, and Sir Hugh hath shown himself a wise and patient churchman. You must go with me, master doctor.

³ *Heart of elder.* The joke is that elder has a heart of *pith*.

⁴ *Bully-stale* and *king-urinal* ; these epithets will be sufficiently obvious to those who recollect the prevalence of empirical water-doctors. *Castilian*, a cant word (like Cataian and Ethiopian), appears to have been generally used as a term of reproach after the defeat of the Spanish Armada. The Host avails himself of the poor doctor's ignorance of English phraseology in applying to these high-sounding opprobrious epithets ; he here means to I him *coward*.

Host. Pardon, guest justice:—A word, monsieur Mock-water⁵.

Caius. Mock-vater; vat is dat?

Host. Mock-water, in our English tongue, is valour, bully.

Caius. By gar, then I have as much mock-vater as de Englishman:—Scurvy jack-dog priest; by gar, me vil cut his ears.

Host. He will clapper-claw thee tightly, bully.

Caius. Clapper-de-claw! vat is dat?

Host. That is, he will make thee amends.

Caius. By gar, me do look, he shall clapper-de-claw me; for, by gar, me vill have it.

Host. And I will provoke him to't, or let him wag.

Caius. Me tank you for dat.

Host. And moreover, bully,—But first, master guest, and master Page, and eke cavaliero Slender, go you through the town to Frogmore.

[*Aside to them.*

Page. Sir Hugh is there, is he?

Host. He is there: see what humour he is in; and I will bring the doctor about by the fields: will it do well?

Shal. We will do it.

Page, Shal. and Slen. Adieu, good master doctor.

[*Exeunt PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER.*

Caius. By gar, me vill kill de priest; for he speak for a jack-an-ape to Anne Page.

Host. Let him die: sheath thy impatience; throw cold water on thy choler: go about the fields with me through Frogmore; I will bring thee where Mrs. Anne Page is, at a farmhouse a feasting; and thou shalt woo her: Cried I aim⁶? said I well?

⁵ Thus all the old copies: Malone, at Dr. Farmer's instance, substitutes *muck-water*.

⁶ The old copy has *Cride game*. Warburton conjectured that

Caius. By gar, me tank you for dat: by gar, I love you; and I shall procure-a you de good guest, de earl, de knight, de lords, de gentlemen, my patients.

Host. For the which, I will be thy adversary towards Anne Page; said I well?

Caius. By gar, 'tis good; vell said.

Host. Let us wag then.

Caius. Come at my heels, Jack Rugby. [Exit.]

II - 3 -

ACT III.

SCENE I. A Field near Frogmore.

Enter SIR HUGH EVANS and SIMPLE.

Evans.

 PRAY you now, good master Slender's serving-man, and friend Simple by your name, which way have you looked for master Caius, that calls himself *Doctor of Physic*?

Sim. Marry, sir, the pittie-ward¹, the park-ward, every way; old Windsor way, and every way but the town way.

Eva. I most fehemently desire you, you will also look that way.

Sim. I will, sir.

Eva. 'Pless my soul! how full of cholers I am, and trembling of mind!—I shall be glad, if he have deceived me:—how melancholies I am!—I will knog

we should read *Cry Aim*; see the second scene of the third act of this play, where the phrase again occurs; but I prefer to read, as Mr. Dyce suggests, *Cried I aim*, i. e. have I given you the direction, put you upon the right track? Mr. Collier's corrector of the second folio substituted *Curds and cream!* I cannot conceive a more absurd reading.

¹ What place the *pittie-ward* signified we know not. It had probably the same import as *petty-ward*.

his urinals about his knave's costard², when I have good opportunities for the 'ork :—'pless my soul !

[*Sings.*

*To shallow rivers, to whose falls³
Melodious birds sing madrigals ;
There will we make our beds of roses,
And a thousand fragrant posies.*

To shallow——

Mercy on me ! I have a great dispositions to cry.

*Melodious birds sing madrigals ;—
When as I sat in Pabylon⁴,—
And a thousand vagram posies.
To shallow——*

Sim. [coming forward.] Yonder he is coming this way, Sir Hugh.

Eva. He's welcome :

To shallow rivers, to whose falls——

² Costard, i. e. head.

³ This is part of a beautiful little pastoral, printed imperfectly in The Passionate Pilgrim in 1599, and there given to Shakespeare: but in England's Helicon, 1600, it is attributed to Christopher Marlowe, and to it is subjoined an answer, called "The Nymph's Reply," signed Ignota, which is thought to be the signature of Sir Walter Raleigh. Walton has inserted them both in his Complete Angler, under the character of that smooth song which was made by Kit Marlowe, now at least fifty years ago; and an answer to it, which was made by Sir Walter Raleigh in his younger days.—"Old fashioned poetry but choicely good." Sir Hugh misrecites the lines in his panic. The reader will be pleased to find them at the end of the play.

⁴ This line is from the old version of the 137th Psalm:

"When we did sit in Babylon,
The rivers round about,
Then the remembrance of Sion,
The tears for grief burst out."

The word *rivers* in the second line was probably brought to Sir Hugh's thoughts by the line of the madrigal he had just repeated; and in his fright he blends the sacred and profane song together. The old quarto has—"There lived a man in Babylon," which was the first line of an old song mentioned in Twelfth Night; and printed in Percy's Reliques, but the other line is more in character.

Heaven prosper the right!—What weapons is he?

Sim. No weapons, sir: There comes my master, master Shallow, and another gentleman from Frogmore, over the stile, this way.

Eva. Pray you, give me my gown; or else keep it in your arms.

Enter PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER.

Shal. How now, master parson? Good morrow, good Sir Hugh. Keep a gamester from the dice, and a good student from his book, and it is wonderful.

Slen. Ah, sweet Anne Page!

Page. Save you, good Sir Hugh!

Eva. 'Pless you from his mercy sake, all of you!

Shal. What! the sword and the word! do you study them both, master parson?

Page. And youthful still, in your doublet and hose, this raw rheumatic day?

Eva. There is reasons and causes for it.

Page. We are come to you, to do a good office, master parson.

Eva. Fery well: What is it?

Page. Yonder is a most reverend gentleman, who be like, having received wrong by some person, is at most odds with his own gravity and patience, that ever you saw.

Shal. I have lived fourscore years and upward; I never heard a man of his place, gravity, and learning, so wide of his own respect.

Eva. What is he?

Page. I think you know him; master doctor Caius, the renowned French physician.

Eva. Got's will, and his passion of my heart! I s lief you would tell me of a mess of porridge.

Page. Why?

a. He has no more knowledge in Hibbocrates

[Galen,—and he is a knave besides ; a cowardly
we, as you would desires to be acquainted withal.
Page. I warrant you, he's the man should fight
h him.

Sen. O, sweet Anne Page !

Shal. It appears so, by his weapons :—Keep them
nder ;—here comes doctor Caius.

Enter Host, CAIUS, and RUGBY.

Page. Nay, good master parson, keep in your wea-

Shal. So do you, good master doctor.

Host. Disarm them, and let them question ; let
m keep their limbs whole, and hack our English.

Caius. I pray you, let-a me speak a word vit your
: Verefore vill you not meet-a me ?

Eva. Pray you, use your patience : In good time.

Caius. By gar, you are de coward, de Jack dog,

in ape.

Eva. Pray you, let us not be laughing-stogs to
er men's humours ; I desire you in friendship, and
till one way or other make you amends :—I will
ng your urinals about your knave's cogscomb, [for
sing your meetings and appointments.⁵]

Caius. Diable !—Jack Rugby,—mine *Host de Jar-*
e, have I not stay for him, to kill him ? have I not,
de place I did appoint ?

Eva. As I am a Christians soul, now, look you, this
he place appointed ; I'll be judgment by mine host
the Garter.

Host. Peace, I say, Gallia and Gaul⁶, French and
elsh ; soul-curer and body-curer.

¹ These words are from the quartoes, and are necessary to in-
duce the reply of Caius.

² In the folios it is "Gallia and Gaule." In the 4to. of 1602,
s *Gawle* and *Gawlia*. By *Gallia*, mine Host has in mind the
tophony of *Gaul* and *nays de Cullrs*.

Caius. Ay, dat is very good ! excellent !

Host. Peace, I say ; hear mine host of the Garter.
Am I politic ? am I subtle ? am I a Machiavel ?
Shall I lose my doctor ? no ; he gives me the potions,
and the motions. Shall I lose my parson ? my priest,
my Sir Hugh ? no ; he gives me the proverbs and the
no-verbs.—[Give me thy hand, terrestrial ; so⁷:]—
Give me thy hand, celestial ; so.—Boys of art, I
have deceived you both ; I have directed you to wrong
places : your hearts are mighty, your skins are whole,
and let burnt sack be the issue.—Come, lay their
swords to pawn :—Follow me, lad of peace ; follow,
follow, follow.

Shal. Trust me, a mad host :—Follow, gentlemen,
follow.

Slen. O, sweet Anne Page !

[*Exeunt SHAL. SLEN. PAGE, and Host.*

Caius. Ha ! do I perceive dat ? have you make-a
de set of us ? ha, ha !

Eva. This is well ; he has made us his vlotting-
stog.—I desire you, that we may be friends ; and let
us knog our prains together, to be revenge on this
same scall⁸, scury, cogging companion, the Host of
the Garter.

Caius. By gar, vit all my heart ; he promise to
bring me vere is Anne Page : by gar, he deceive me
too.

Eva. Well, I will smite his noddles :—Pray you,
follow.

[*Exeunt.*

⁷ These words are also wanting in the folios.

⁸ *Scall,* i. e. *scall'd-head*, a term of reproach. Chaucer impre-
cates on the scrivener who miswrits his verse—

" Under thy long locks mayest thou have the *scalle*."

SCENE II. *A Street in Windsor.*

Enter MISTRESS PAGE and ROBIN.

Mrs. Page. Nay, keep your way, little gallant ; you're wont to be a follower, but now you are a leader : whether had you rather lead mine eyes, or eye your aster's heels ?

Rob. I had rather, forsooth, go before you like a man, than follow him like a dwarf.

Mrs. Page. O ! you are a flattering boy ; now, I see you'll be a courtier.

Enter FORD.

Ford. Well met, mistress Page : Whither go you ?

Mrs. Page. Truly, sir, to see your wife ; Is she at home ?

Ford. Ay ; and as idle as she may hang together, I want of company : I think, if your husbands were dead, you two would marry.

Mrs. Page. Be sure of that,—two other husbands.

Ford. Where had you this pretty weather-cock ?

Mrs. Page. I cannot tell what the dickens his name my husband had him of :—What do you call your night's name, sirrah ?

Rob. Sir John Falstaff.

Ford. Sir John Falstaff !

Mrs. Page. He, he ; I can never hit on's name. There is such a league between my good man and he !—Is your wife at home, indeed ?

Ford. Indeed she is.

Mrs. Page. By your leave, sir ;—I am sick, till I see her.

[*Exeunt MRS. PAGE and ROBIN.*]

Ford. Has Page any brains ? hath he any eyes ? hath he any thinking ? Sure, they sleep ; he hath no use of them. Why, this boy will carry a letter twenty

miles, as easy as a cannon will shoot point blank twelve score. He pieces-out his wife's inclination ; he gives her folly motion and advantage : and now she's going to my wife, and Falstaff's boy with her. A man may hear this shower sing in the wind !—and Falstaff's boy with her !—Good plots !—they are laid ; and our revolted wives share damnation together. Well ; I will take him ; then torture my wife, pluck the borrowed veil of modesty from the so-seeming mistress Page, divulge Page himself for a secure and wilful Actæon ; and to these violent proceedings all my neighbours shall cry aim¹. [Clock strikes.] The clock gives me my cue, and my assurance bids me search where² I shall find Falstaff : I shall be rather praised for this, than mocked ; for it is as positive as the earth is firm, that Falstaff is there : I will go.

Enter PAGE, SHALLOW, SLENDER, Host, SIR HUGH EVANS, CAIUS, and RUGBY.

Shal. Page, &c. Well met, master Ford.

Ford. Trust me a good knot : I have good cheer at home ; and, I pray you all, go with me.

Shal. I must excuse myself, master Ford.

Slen. And so must I, sir ; we have appointed to dine with mistress Anne, and I would not break with her for more money than I'll speak of.

Shal. We have lingered about a match between Anne Page and my cousin Slender, and this day we shall have our answer.

Slen. I hope, I have your good will, father Page.

¹ To cry aim, in archery was to encourage the archers by crying out Aim when they were about to shoot. Hence it came to be used for to applaud or encourage, in a general sense. It seems that the spectators in general cried aim occasionally, as a mere word of encouragement or applause. Thus, in K. John, Act ii. Sc. 1 :

"It ill beseems this presence to cry aim
To these ill tuned repetitions."
The old copy has there.

Page. You have, master Slender ; I stand wholly you :—but my wife, master doctor, is for you altogether.

Caius. Ay, by gar ; and de maid is love-a me ; my sh-a Quickly tell me so mush.

Host. What say you to young master Fenton ? he jers, he dances, he has eyes of youth, he writes ses, he speaks holyday³, he smells April and May : will carry't, he will carry't ; 'tis in his buttons⁴ ; will carry't.

Page. Not by my consent, I promise you. The ntleman is of no having⁵ : he kept company with wild Prince and Poins ; he is of too high a ren, he knows too much. No, he shall not knit a ot in his fortunes with the finger of my substance : ie take her, let him take her simply ; the wealth I re waits on my consent, and my consent goes not it way.

Ford. I beseech you, heartily, some of you go home h me to dinner : besides your cheer, you shall have rt ; I will show you a monster.—Master doctor, shall go ;—so shall you, master Page ;—And you, Hugh.

He speaks holyday. To speak out of the common style, su- or to the vulgar, in allusion to the better dress worn on holis. So in K. Henry IV. P. 1.

With many *holiday* and lady terms.

'Tis in his buttons. It is said that this alludes to an ancient om among rustics, of trying whether they should succeed with r mistresses by carrying the flower called *bachelor's buttons* heir pockets. They judged of their good or bad success by r growing or not growing there. Hence, *to wear bachelor's ons*, seems to have grown into a phrase for being unmarried. s may be doubtful as applied to mine Host's phrase, but no er explanation has been offered.

Of no having, i. e. *fortune or possessions*. So, in Twelf ht:

“ My having is not much ;
I'll make division of my present with you :
Hold, there is half my coffer.”

Shal. Well, fare you well:—we shall have the freer wooing at master Page's.

[*Exeunt SHALLOW and SLENDER.*

Caius. Go home, John Rugby; I come anon.

[*Exit RUGBY.*

Host. Farewell, my hearts: I will to my honest knight Falstaff, and drink canary with him.

[*Exit Host.*

Ford. [*Aside.*] I think, I shall drink in pipe-wine⁶ first with him; I'll make him dance. Will you go, gentle?

All. Have with you, to see this monster. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *A Room in Ford's House.*

Enter MRS. FORD and MRS. PAGE.

Mrs. Ford. What, John! what, Robert!

Mrs. Page. Quickly, quickly: Is the buck-basket—

Mrs. Ford. I warrant:—What, Robin, I say!

Enter Servants with a Basket.

Mrs. Page. Come, come, come.

Mrs. Ford. Here, set it down.

Mrs. Page. Give your men the charge; we must be brief.

Mrs. Ford. Marry, as I told you before, John and Robert, be ready here hard by in the brewhouse; and when I suddenly call you, come forth, and (without any pause, or staggering) take this basket on your

⁶ *Canary* is the name of a *dance* as well as of a wine. *Pipe-wine* wine, not from the bottle but the pipe or cask. The jest consists in the ambiguity of the word, which signifies both a cask of wine and a musical instrument,—“I'll give him *pipe* wine, which make him *dance*.”

oulders: that done, trudge with it in all haste, and try it among the whitsters¹ in Datchet mead, and ere empty it in the muddy ditch, close by the names' side.

Mrs. Page. You will do it?

Mrs. Ford. I have told them over and over; they ask no direction. Be gone, and come when you are killed.

[*Exeunt Servants.*]

Mrs. Page. Here comes little Robin.

Enter ROBIN.

Mrs. Ford. How now, my eyas-musket²? what was with you?

Rob. My master Sir John is come in at your back door, mistress Ford; and requests your company.

Mrs. Page. You little Jack-a-lent³, have you been ue to us?

Rob. Ay, I'll be sworn: My master knows not of our being here; and hath threatened to put me into everlasting liberty, if I tell you of it; for, he swears, ell turn me away.

Mrs. Page. Thou art a good boy; this secrecy of mine shall be a tailor to thee, and shall make thee a new doublet and hose.—I'll go hide me.

Mrs. Ford. Do so.—Go tell thy master, I am alone. Missress Page, remember you your cue.

[*Exit ROBIN.*]

Mrs. Page. I warrant thee; if I do not act it, hiss me.

[*Exit MRS. PAGE.*]

Mrs. Ford. Go to then: we'll use this unwhole-

¹ *Whitsters, bleachers* of linen.

² *Eyas-musket, young sparrow-hawk*, from the Italian *muschetto*; here used as a jocular term for a small child.

³ *A stuffed puppet thrown at throughout lent, as cocks were at hrovetide.* So, in *The Weakest goes to the Wall*. 1600:

"A mere anatomy, a Jack of Lent."

some humidity, this gross watery pumpion;—we'll teach him to know turtles from jays⁴.

Enter Falstaff

Fal. *Have I caught thee, my heavenly jewel⁵?* Why, now let me die, for I have lived long enough; this is the period of my ambition: O this blessed hour!

Mrs. Ford. O sweet Sir John!

Fal. Mistress Ford, I cannot cog, I cannot prate, mistress Ford. Now shall I sin in my wish: I would thy husband were dead: I'll speak it before the best lord, I would make thee my lady.

Mrs. Ford. I your lady, sir John! alas, I should be a pitiful lady.

Fal. Let the court of France show me such another: I see how thine eye would emulate the diamond: Thou hast the right arched bent⁶ of the brow, that becomes the ship-tire, the tire-valiant, or any tire of Venetian admittance⁷.

Mrs. Ford. A plain kerchief, Sir John: my brows become nothing else; nor that well neither.

Fal. By the lord, thou art a traitor⁸ to say so: thou would'st make an absolute courtier; and the firm fixture of thy foot would give an excellent motion to

⁴ *Turtles from jays*, i. e. honest women from loose ones. The word *Putta* in Italian signifies both a *jay* and a loose woman. So, in Cymbeline:

“some *jay* of Italy
Whose mother was her painting,” &c.

⁵ This is the first line in the second song of Sidney's Astrophel and Stella.

⁶ First folio, *beauty*.

⁷ That is, any fanciful head-dress worn by the celebrated beauties of Venice, or approved by them. In how much request the

^{Venetian} *tire* or head-dress was formerly held, appears from Bur-

Anatomy of Melancholy, 1624. “Let her have the Spanish

: *Venetian tire*, Italian compliments and endowments.”
folio has “thou art a tyrant.”

thy gait, in a semi-circled farthingale. I see what thou wert, if Fortune thy foe were not, Nature thy friend : Come, thou canst not hide it.

Mrs. Ford. Believe me, there's no such thing in me.

Fal. What made me love thee ? let that persuade thee, there's something extraordinary in thee. Come, I cannot cog, and say thou art this and that, like a many of these lisping hawthorn buds, that come like women in men's apparel, and smell like Bucklersbury⁹ in simple-time ; I cannot : but I love thee ; none but thee ; and thou deservest it.

Mrs. Ford. Do not betray me, sir ; I fear you love mistress Page.

Fal. Thou might'st as well say, I love to walk by the Counter¹⁰-gate ; which is as hateful to me as the reek of a lime-kiln¹¹.

Mrs. Ford. Well, heaven knows how I love you ; and you shall one day find it.

Fal. Keep in that mind ; I'll deserve it.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, I must tell you, so you do ; or else I could not be in that mind.

Rob. [within.] Mistress Ford, mistress Ford ! here's mistress Page at the door, sweating and blowing, and looking wildly, and would needs speak with you presently.

⁹ *Bucklersbury.* Formerly chiefly inhabited by druggists, who sold all kinds of herbs, green as well as dry.

¹⁰ The *Counter* as a prison was odious to Falstaff. The name of this prison was a frequent subject of jocularity with our ancestors. Shakspeare has availed himself of it in the Comedy of Errors. My old acquaintance Baret records one pleasantly enough in his Alvearie, 1573.—“We saie merrily of him who hath been in the *Counter* or such like places of prison : He can sing his *counter-tenor* very well. And in anger we say, I will make you sing a *counter-tenor* for this geare : meaning imprisonment.”

¹¹ So, in Coriolanus :

“ Whose breath *I hate*
As reek o' the rotten fens.”

Fal. She shall not see me ; I will ensconce me behind the arras¹².

Mrs. Ford. Pray you, do so ; she's a very tattling woman.— [FALSTAFF hides himself.]

Enter MISTRESS PAGE and ROBIN.

What's the matter ? how now ?

Mrs. Page. O mistress Ford, what have you done ? You're shamed, you are overthrown, you are undone for ever.

Mrs. Ford. What's the matter, good mistress Page ?

Mrs. Page. O well-a-day, mistress Ford ! having an honest man to your husband, to give him such cause of suspicion !

Mrs. Ford. What cause of suspicion ?

Mrs. Page. What cause of suspicion ?—Out upon you ! how am I mistook in you !

Mrs. Ford. Why, alas ! what's the matter ?

Mrs. Page. Your husband's coming hither, woman, with all the officers in Windsor, to search for a gentleman, that, he says, is here now in the house, by your consent, to take an ill advantage of his absence : You are undone.

Mrs. Ford. 'Tis not so, I hope.

Mrs. Page. Pray heaven it be not so, that you have such a man here ; but 'tis most certain your husband's coming with half Windsor at his heels, to search for such a one. I come before to tell you : If you know yourself clear, why I am glad of it ; but if you have a friend here, convey, convey him out. Be not amazed : call all your senses to you : defend your reputation, or bid farewell to your good life for ever.

¹² *Behind the arras.* The spaces left between the walls and wooden frames on which the tapestry was hung, were not more unmodious to our ancestors, than to the authors of ancient dramatic pieces.

Mrs. Ford. What shall I do?—There is a gentleman, my dear friend; and I fear not mine own shame, so much as his peril: I had rather than a thousand pound, he were out of the house.

Mrs. Page. For shame, never stand, *you had rather*, and *you had rather*; your husband's here at hand, bethink you of some conveyance: in the house you cannot hide him.—O, how have you deceived me!—Look, here is a basket; if he be of any reasonable stature, he may creep in here; and throw foul linen upon him, as if it were going to bucking: Or, it is whiting-time, send him by your two men to Datchet mead.

Mrs. Ford. He's too big to go in there: What shall I do?

Re-enter FALSTAFF.

Fal. Let me see't; let me see't! O let me see't! I'll in, I'll in;—follow your friend's counsel:—I'll in.

Mrs. Page. What! Sir John Falstaff! Are these your letters, knight?

Fal. I love thee, [and none but thee]¹³; help me away: let me creep in here; I'll never——

[*He goes into the basket; they cover him with foul linen.*]

Mrs. Page. Help to cover your master, boy. Call your men, mistress Ford.—You dissembling knight!

Mrs. Ford. What, John! Robert! John! [*Exit Robin; Re-enter Servants.*] Go take up these clothes here, quickly; where's the cowl-staff¹⁴? look, how you

¹³ *And none but thee.* These words, which are characteristic and spoken to Mrs. Page aside, deserve to be restored from the old quarto. He had used the same words before to Mrs. Ford.

¹⁴ *Cowl-staff.* A staff used for carrying a *cowl* or tub with two handles to fetch water in. “*Bicollo, a cowle-staffe to carie behind and before with, as they use in Italy to carie two buckets at once.*”—*Florio's Dictionary*, 1598.

drumble¹⁵: carry them to the laundress in Datchet mead; quickly, come.

Enter FORD, PAGE, CAIUS, and SIR HUGH EVANS.

Ford. Pray you, come near: if I suspect without cause, why then make sport at me, then let me be your jest; I deserve it.—How now? whither bear you this?

Serv. To the laundress, forsooth.

Mrs. Ford. Why, what have you to do whither they bear it? You were best meddle with buck-washing.

Ford. Buck! I would I could wash myself of the buck! Buck! buck! buck? Ay, buck; I warrant you, buck; and of the season too, it shall appear. [Exeunt Servants with the basket.] Gentlemen, I have dreamed to-night; I'll tell you my dream. Here, here, here be my keys: ascend my chambers, search, seek, find out: I'll warrant we'll unkennel the fox:—Let me stop this way first;—So, now uncape¹⁶.

Page. Good master Ford, be contented: you wrong yourself too much.

Ford. True, master Page.—Up, gentlemen; you shall see sport anon: follow me, gentlemen. [Exit.

Eva. This is fery fantastical humours, and jealousies.

Caius. By gar, 'tis no de fashion of France: it is not jealous in France.

¹⁵ To *drumble* and *drone* meant to move sluggishly. A *drumble* in the western dialect signifies a drone or humble-bee. Ster genius of modern times, who knew so skilfully how his language to the characters and manners of the age his fable was laid, has adopted this word in The Fox-Nigel, vol. ii. p. 298:—"Why how she *drumbles*—I he stops to take a sip on the road."

uncape a fox was to *unearth* him, or to begin the hunt, when the holes for escape had been stopped.

Page. Nay, follow him, gentlemen, see the issue of his search. [Exeunt EVANS, PAGE, and CAIUS.

Mrs. Page. Is there not a double excellency in this?

Mrs. Ford. I know not which pleases me better, that my husband is deceived, or Sir John.

Mrs. Page. What a taking was he in, when your husband asked who¹⁷ was in the basket!

Mrs. Ford. I am half afraid he will have need of washing; so throwing him into the water will do him a benefit.

Mrs. Page. Hang him, dishonest rascal! I would all of the same strain were in the same distress.

Mrs. Ford. I think my husband hath some special suspicion of Falstaff's being here; for I never saw him so gross in his jealousy till now.

Mrs. Page. I will lay a plot to try that: And we will yet have more tricks with Falstaff: his dissolute disease will scarce obey this medicine.

Mrs. Ford. Shall we send that foolish carrion, mistress Quickly, to him, and excuse his throwing into the water; and give him another hope, to betray him to another punishment?

Mrs. Page. We'll do it; let him be sent for to-morrow eight o'clock to have amends.

Re-enter FORD, PAGE, CAIUS and SIR HUGH EVANS.

Ford. I cannot find him: may be the knave bragged of that he could not compass.

Mrs. Page. Heard you that?

Mrs. Ford. You use me well, master Ford, do you?

Ford. Ay, I do so.

¹⁷ Ritson thinks we should read *what*. This emendation is supported by a subsequent passage, where Falstaff says: "the jealous knave asked them once or twice *what* was in the basket." It is remarkable that Ford asked no such question.

Mrs. Ford. Heaven make you better than your thoughts!

Ford. Amen.

Mrs. Page. You do yourself mighty wrong, master Ford.

Ford. Ay, ay; I must bear it.

Eva. If there be any pody in the house, and in the chambers, and in the coffers, and in the presses, heaven forgive my sins at the day of judgment.

Caius. By gar, nor I too; dere is no bodies.

Page. Fie, fie, master Ford! are you not ashamed? What spirit, what devil suggests this imagination? I would not have your distemper in this kind for the wealth of Windsor Castle.

Ford. 'Tis my fault, master Page: I suffer for it.

Eva. You suffer for a pad conscience: your wife is as honest a 'omans as I will desires among five thousand, and five hundred too.

Caius. By gar, I see 'tis an honest woman.

Ford. Well;—I promised you a dinner:—Come, come, walk in the park: I pray you, pardon me; I will hereafter make known to you, why I have done this.—Come, wife;—Come, mistress Page; I pray you pardon me; pray heartily, pardon me.

Page. Let's go in, gentlemen; but, trust me, we'll mock him. I do invite you to-morrow morning to my house to breakfast; after, we'll a birding together; I have a fine hawk for the bush: Shall it be so?

Ford. Any thing.

Eva. If there is one, I shall make two in the company.

Caius. If there be one or two, I shall make-a de turd.

Ford. Pray you go, master Page.

Eva. I pray you now remembrance to-morrow, on he lousy knave, mine Host.

Caius. Dat is good ; by gar, vit all my heart.

Eva. A lousy knave ; to have his gibes, and his
mockeries.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *A Room in Page's House.*

Enter FENTON and MISTRESS ANNE PAGE.

Fent. I see, I cannot get thy father's love ;
Therefore, no more turn me to him, sweet Nan.

Anne. Alas ! how then ?

Fent. Why, thou must be thyself.
He doth object, I am too great of birth ;
And that, my state being gall'd with my expense,
I seek to heal it only by his wealth :
Besides these, other bars he lays before me, —
My riots past, my wild societies ;
And tells me, 'tis a thing impossible
I should love thee, but as a property.

Anne. May be, he tells you true.

Fent. No, heaven so speed me in my time to come !
Albeit, I will confess, thy father's wealth¹
Was the first motive that I wo'd thee, Anne ;
Yet, wooing thee, I found thee of more value
Than stamps in gold, or sums in sealed bags ;
And 'tis the very riches of thyself
That now I aim at.

Anne. Gentle master Fenton,
Yet seek my father's love : still seek it, sir :

¹ Some light may be given to those who shall endeavour to calculate the increase of English wealth, by observing that Latymer, in the time of Edward VI. mentions it as a proof of his father's prosperity, "that though but a yeoman, he gave his daughters five pounds each for their portion." At the latter end of Elizabeth, seven hundred pounds were such a temptation to courtship, as made all other motives suspected. Congreve makes twelve thousand pounds more than a counterbalance to the affection of Belinda. Below we have :

" O, what a world of vile ill favour'd faults
Looks handsome in three hundred pounds a year."

If opportunity and humblest suit
Cannot attain it, why then,—Hark you hither.

[They converse apart.]

Enter SHALLOW, SLENDER, and MRS. QUICKLY.

Shal. Break their talk, mistress Quickly; my kinsman shall speak for himself.

Slen. I'll make a shaft or a bolt on't². 'Slid, 'tis but venturing.

Shal. Be not dismay'd.

Slen. No, she shall not dismay me: I care not for that,—but that I am afraid.

Quick. Hark ye; master Slender would speak a word with you.

Anne. I come to him.—This is my father's choice. O, what a world of vile ill-favour'd faults Looks handsome in three hundred pounds a year!

[Aside.]

Quick. And how does good master Fenton? Pray you, a word with you.

Shal. She's coming; to her, coz. O boy, thou hadst a father!

Slen. I had a father, mistress Anne;—my uncle can tell you good jests of him:—Pray you, uncle, tell mistress Anne the jest, how my father stole two geese out of a pen, good uncle.

Shal. Mistress Anne, my cousin loves you.

Slen. Ay, that I do; as well as I love any woman in Gloucestershire.

Shal. He will maintain you like a gentlewoman.

Slen. Ay, that I will, come cut and long tail³, under the degree of a 'squire.

² A *shaft* was a *long arrow*, and a *bolt* a *thick short one*. The proverb probably means "I'll make something or other of it.—I will do it by some means or other."

³ *Come cut and long tail*, i. e. "come who will to contend with me." It is a phrase of frequent occurrence in writers of the pe-

Shal. He will make you a hundred and fifty pounds jointure.

Anne. Good master Shallow, let him woo for himself.

Shal. Marry, I thank you for it; I thank you for that good comfort. She calls you, coz: I'll leave you.

Anne. Now, master Slender.

Slen. Now, good mistress Anne.

Anne. What is your will?

Slen. My will? od's heartlings! that's a pretty jest, indeed! I ne'er made my will yet, I thank heaven; I am not such a sickly creature, I give heaven praise.

Anne. I mean, master Slender, what would you with me?

Slen. Truly, for mine own part, I would little or nothing with you: Your father, and my uncle, have made motions; if it be my luck, so: if not, happy man be his dole⁴! They can tell you how things go, better than I can: You may ask your father; here he comes.

Enter PAGE and MISTRESS PAGE.

Page. Now, master Slender!—Love him, daughter Anne.—

Why, how now! what does master Fenton here? You wrong me, sir, thus still to haunt my house: I told you, sir, my daughter is dispos'd of.

Fent. Nay, master Page, be not impatient.

riod, signifying *all persons or things of whatever kind*; but, of course, the allusion is to any kind of horse, cut or long tail. It is amply illustrated by Mr. Nares in his Glossary.

⁴ *Happy man be his dole.* This is a proverbial expression of frequent occurrence. The general meaning of which is “Let his Portion, or lot, be happy.” *Dole* is the past participle and past tense of the A. S. verb *Dealan*, to deal, divide, distribute. Slender’s ungallant expression of indifference means probably “If it be my luck to get you, so; if not, I shall not be so disappointed as to prevent me from wishing my rival joy.” A pretty compliment to the lady!

Mrs. Page. Good master Fenton, come not to my child.

Page. She is no match for you.

Fent. Sir, will you hear me?

Page. No, good master Fenton.—Come, master Shallow; come, son Slender; in.—Knowing my mind, you wrong me, master Fenton.

[*Exeunt PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER.*

Quick. Speak to mistress Page.

Fent. Good mistress Page, for that I love your daughter

In such a righteous fashion as I do,
Perforce, against all checks, rebukes, and manners,
I must advance the colours of my love,
And not retire: Let me have your good will.

Anne. Good mother, do not marry me to yond' fool

Mrs. Page. I mean it not; I seek you a better husband.

Quick. That's my master, master doctor.

Anne. Alas, I had rather be set quick i' the earth,
And bowl'd to death with turnips.

Mrs. Page. Come, trouble not yourself: Good master Fenton,

I will not be your friend, nor enemy.

My daughter will I question how she loves you,
And as I find her, so am I affected;

'Till then, farewell, sir:—she must needs go in;
Her father will be angry.

[*Exeunt MRS. PAGE and ANNE.*

Fent. Farewell, gentle mistress.—Farewell, Nan.

Quick. This is my doing, now:—Nay, said I, will you cast away your child on a fool, and a physician? Look on master Fenton:—this is my doing.

Fent. I thank thee; and I pray thee, once⁵ to-night

⁵ Once, i. e. one time, sometime.

Give my sweet Nan this ring : There's for thy pains.

[Exit.]

Quick. Now heaven send thee good fortune ! A kind heart he hath : a woman would run through fire and water for such a kind heart. But yet, I would my master had mistress Anne ; or I would master Slender had her ; or, in sooth, I would master Fenton had her : I will do what I can for them all three ; for so I have promised, and I'll be as good as my word ; but speciously for master Fenton. Well, I must of another errand to Sir John Falstaff from my two mistresses : What a beast am I to slack it ? [Exit.]

SCENE V. *A Room in the Garter Inn.*

Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.

Fal. Bardolph, I say !

Bard. Here, sir.

Fal. Go fetch me a quart of sack ; put a toast in't.

[Exit BARD.] Have I lived to be carried in a basket, like a barrow of butcher's offal ; and to be thrown into the Thames ? Well ; if I be served such another trick, I'll have my brains ta'en out, and butter'd, and give them to a dog for a new year's gift. The rogues slighted me into the river with as little remorse as they would have drowned a bitch's blind puppies¹, fifteen i' the litter : and you may know by my size, that I have a kind of alacrity in sinking ; if the bottom were as deep as hell, I should down. I had been drowned, but that the shore was shelly and shallow ; a death that I abhor ; for the water swells a man ; and what a thing should I have been, when I had been swelled ! I should have been a mountain of mummy.

¹ *The old copies have a blind bitch's puppies.*

John James Jameson Jameson Jameson Jameson

THE JOURNAL OF

Home. By the river... I saw you many: Give
THESE WORDS ONE-THREE.

To take over their business: Get new men
make of your money.

Fa. Simone of *model II* as smaller species in my
collection. — *Fig. B* — *Fig. C* — *Fig. D*

June 18th 1852. I send to your worship from

Fu Kuei-fu: I have had food enough; I will return now. The fact: I have my belly full of food.

she has as much as make up with her men; they may fight erection.

P.S. Did I write to build upon a foolish
man's privilege.

*Quick. Well, she laments, sir, for it, that it would
yearn your heart to see it. Her husband goes this
morning a birding; she desires you once more to come
to her between eight and nine: I must carry her word
quickly: she'll make you amends, I warrant you.*

Fal. Well, I will visit her: Tell her so; and bid her think what a man is: let her consider his frailty, and then judge of my merit.

Quick. I will tell her.

Nut. Do so. Between nine and ten, say' st thou?

Quick. Eight and nine, sir.

Fal. Well, be gone : I will not miss her.

Quick. Peace be with you, sir ! [Exit.]

Fal. I marvel, I hear not of master Brook ; he sent me word to stay within ; I like his money well. O here he comes.

Enter FORD.

Ford. Bless you, sir !

Fal. Now, master Brook ? you come to know what hath passed between me and Ford's wife ?

Ford. That, indeed, Sir John, is my business.

Fal. Master Brook, I will not lie to you ; I was at her house the hour she appointed me.

Ford. And sped you, sir ?

Fal. Very ill-favouredly, master Brook.

Ford. How so, sir ? Did she change her determination ?

Fal. No, master Brook ; but the peaking cornuto, her husband, master Brook, dwelling in a continual larum of jealousy, comes me in the instant of our encounter, after we had embraced, kissed, protested, and, as it were, spoke the prologue of our comedy ; and at his heels a rabble of his companions, thither provoked and instigated by his distemper, and, forsooth, to search his house for his wife's love.

Ford. What, while you were there ?

Fal. While I was there.

Ford. And did he search for you, and could not find you ?

Fal. You shall hear. As good luck would have it, comes in one mistress Page ; gives intelligence of Ford's approach ; and, by her invention, and Ford's wife's distraction², they conveyed me into a buck-basket.

¹ M. Mason proposes to read *direction*, but perhaps the change is not necessary.

Ford. A buck-basket!

Fal. By the Lord, a buck-basket: rammed me in with foul shirts and smocks, socks, foul stockings, and greasy napkins; that, master Brook, there was the rankest compound of villainous smell, that ever offended nostril.

Ford. And how long lay you there?

Fal. Nay, you shall hear, master Brook, what I have suffered to bring this woman to evil for your good. Being thus crammed in the basket, a couple of Ford's knaves, his hinds, were called forth by their mistress, to carry me in the name of foul clothes to Datchet-lane: they took me on their shoulders; met the jealous knave their master in the door; who asked them once or twice what they had in their basket: I quaked for fear, lest the lunatic knave would have searched it; but Fate, ordaining he should be a cuckold, held his hand. Well; on went he for a search, and away went I for foul clothes. But mark the sequel, master Brook: I suffered the pangs of three several deaths; first, an intolerable fright, to be detected with³ a jealous rotten bellwether: next, to be compassed like a good bilbo⁴, in the circumference of a peck, hilt to point, heel to head: and then, to be

³ *With, by, and of* were used indiscriminately with much license by our ancestors. Thus in a subsequent passage of this play we have:—

"I sooner would suspect the sun *with* cold."

Detected appears to have been used in the sense of *suspected, impeached*. Cavendish, in his Metrical Visions, has this very phrase—*detected with*, for *impeached WITH*, or *held in suspicion*

"What is he of our blode that wold not be sory
To heare our names *WITH vile fame so detected.*"

I must have the same meaning here, for Falstaff was not *detected*, but *suspected BY* the jealous Ford. Some modern have unwarrantably substituted *by* for *with*.

Bilbo is a *Spanish blade* remarkable for its temper anduity. The best were made at Bilboa, a town in Biscay.

stopped in, like a strong distillation, with stinking clothes that fretted in their own grease : think of that,—a man of my kidney,—think of that ; that am as subject to heat as butter ; a man of continual dissolution and thaw ; it was a miracle to 'scape suffocation. And in the height of this bath, when I was more than half stewed in grease, like a Dutch dish, to be thrown into the Thames, and cooled, glowing hot, in that surge, like a horse-shoe ; think of that ;—hissing hot,—think of that, master Brook.

Ford. In good sadness, sir, I am sorry that for my sake you have suffered all this. My suit then is desperate ; you'll undertake her no more.

Fal. Master Brook, I will be thrown into Ætna, as I have been into Thames, ere I will leave her thus. Her husband is this morning gone a birding : I have received from her another embassy of meeting ; 'twixt eight and nine is the hour, master Brook.

Ford. 'Tis past eight already, sir.

Fal. Is it ? I will then address me to my appointment. Come to me at your convenient leisure, and you shall know how I speed ; and the conclusion shall be crowned with your enjoying her : Adieu ! You shall have her, master Brook ; master Brook, you shall cuckold Ford. [Exit.

Ford. Hum ! ha ! is this a vision ? is this a dream ? do I sleep ? Master Ford, awake ! awake, master Ford ! there's a hole made in your best coat, master Ford. This 'tis to be married ! this 'tis to have linen, and buck-baskets !—Well, I will proclaim myself what I am : I will now take the lecher ; he is at my house : he cannot 'scape me ; 'tis impossible he should ; he cannot creep into a halfpenny purse, nor into a pepper-box : but, lest the devil that guides him should aid him, I will search impossible places. Though what I am I cannot avoid, yet to be what I would not,

shall not make me tame : if I have horns to make one mad, let the proverb go with me, I'll be horn mad.

[Exit.]

III - 4

lousy Sights -

ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The Street.*

Enter MRS. PAGE, MRS. QUICKLY, and WILLIAM.

Mrs. Page.

The at master Ford's already, think'st thou ?
Quick. Sure, he is by this ; or will be presently : but truly, he is very courageous mad, about his throwing into the water. Mistress Ford desires you to come suddenly.

Mrs. Page. I'll be with her by and by ; I'll but bring my young man here to school : Look, where his master comes ; 'tis a playing-day, I see.

Enter SIR HUGH EVANS.

How now, Sir Hugh ? no school to-day ?

Eva. No ; master Slender is let the boys leave to play.

Quick. Blessing of his heart !

Mrs. Page. Sir Hugh, my husband says, my son profits nothing in the world at his book ; I pray you, ask him some questions in his accidence.

Eva. Come hither, William ; hold up your head ; come.

Mrs. Page. Come on, sirrah ; hold up your head ; answer your master, be not afraid.

Eva. William, how many numbers is in nouns ?

Will. Two.

Quick. Truly, I thought there had been one number more ; because they say, od's nouns.

Eva. Peace your tattlings. What is fair, William ?

Will. Pulcher.

Quick. Poulcats ! there are fairer things than poulcats, sure.

Eva. You are a very simplicity 'oman ; I pray you peace. What is *lapis*, William ?

Will. A stone.

Eva. And what is a stone, William ?

Will. A pebble.

Eva. No, it is *lapis* ; I pray you remember in your brain.

Will. Lapis.

Eva. That is good, William. What is he, William, that does lend articles ?

Will. Articles are borrowed of the pronoun ; and be thus declined, *Singulariter, nominativo, hic, hæc, hoc.*

Eva. Nominativo, hig, hag, hog ; pray you, mark : *genitivo, hujus* : Well, what is your *accusative case* ?

Will. Accusativo, hinc.

Eva. I pray you, have your remembrance, child ; *Accusativo, hing, hang, hog.*

Quick. Hang hog is Latin for bacon, I warrant you.

Eva. Leave your prabbles, 'oman. What is the *focative case*, William ?

Will. O—vocativo, O.

Eva. Remember, William ; *focative* is *caret*.

Quick. And that's a good root.

Eva. 'Oman, forbear.

Mrs. Page. Peace.

Eva. What is your *genitive case plural*, William ?

Will. *Genitive case* ?

Eva. Ay.

Will. *Genitivo,—horum, harum, horum.*

Quick. 'Vengeance of Jenny's case ! fie on her !— never name her, child, if she be a whore.

Eva. For shame, 'oman.

Quick. You do ill to teach the child such words :

he teaches him to hick and to hack, which they'll do fast enough of themselves ; and to call horum :— fie upon you !

Eva. 'Oman, art thou lunatics ? hast thou no understandings for thy cases, and the numbers of the genders ? Thou art as foolish christian creatures as I would desires.

Mrs. Page. Pr'ythee hold thy peace.

Eva. Shew me now, William, some declensions of your pronouns.

Will. Forsooth, I have forgot.

Eva. It is *ki, kæ, cod* ; if you forget your *kies*, your *kæs*, and your *cods*, you must be preeches³. Go your ways, and play, go.

Mrs. Page. He is a better scholar than I thought he was.

Eva. He is a good sprag⁴ memory. Farewell, mistress Page.

Mrs. Page. Adieu, good Sir Hugh. [Exit SIR HUGH.] Get you home, boy.—Come, we stay too long. [Exeunt.

SCENE II. *A Room in Ford's House.*

Enter FALSTAFF and MRS. FORD.

Fal. Mistress Ford, your sorrow hath eaten up my sufferance : I see, you are obsequious¹ in your love, and I profess requital to a hair's breadth ; not only, mistress Ford, in the simple office of love, but

³ *Preeches, breeched*, i. e. flogged.

⁴ *Quick, alert.* The word is *sprack*.

* You are obsequious in your love. Falstaff uses obsequious in its Latin sense “diligent to do pleasure, compliant, indulgent.” This was no unusual acceptation of the word in Shakspeare’s time, and even later. Phillips explains it “diligent to please.”

in all the accoutrement, complement, and ceremony of it. But are you sure of your husband now?

Mrs. Ford. He's a birding, sweet Sir John.

Mrs. Page. [within.] What hoa! gossip Ford! what hoa!

Mrs. Ford. Step into the chamber, Sir John.

[*Exit Falstaff.*]

Enter Mrs. Page.

Mrs. Page. How now, sweetheart! who's at home besides yourself?

Mrs. Ford. Why, none but mine own people.

Mrs. Page. Indeed?

Mrs. Ford. No, certainly;—speak louder. [*Aside.*]

Mrs. Page. Truly, I am so glad you have nobody here.

Mrs. Ford. Why?

Mrs. Page. Why, woman, your husband is in his old lunes² again: he so takes on yonder with my husband; so rails against all married mankind; so curses all Eve's daughters, of what complexion soever; and so buffets himself on the forehead, crying, *Peer out, peer out*³! that any madness, I ever yet beheld, seemed but tameness, civility, and patience, to this his distemper he is in now: I am glad the fat knight is not here.

Mrs. Ford. Why, does he talk of him?

Mrs. Page. Of none but him; and swears, he was carried out, the last time he searched for him, in a basket: protests to my husband he is now here; and hath drawn him and the rest of their company from

² *Lunes*, i. e. *lunacy, frenzy*. The quartoes have *vein*. The folio has *lines*. The correction is by Theobald. The same error occurs in *Troilus and Cressida*, Act iii. Sc. 3 in the folio.

³ Shakspeare refers to a sport of children, who thus call on a snail to push forth his horns:

“Peer out, peer out, peer out of your hole,
Or else I'll beat you as black as a coal.”

their sport, to make another experiment of his suspicion : but I am glad the knight is not here ; now he shall see his own foolery.

Mrs. Ford. How near is he, mistress Page ?

Mrs. Page. Hard by ; at street end ; he will be here anon.

Mrs. Ford. I am undone !—the knight is here.

Mrs. Page. Why, then you are utterly shamed, and he's but a dead man. What a woman are you !— Away with him, away with him : better shame than murder.

Mrs. Ford. Which way should he go ? how should I bestow him ? Shall I put him into the basket again ?

Re-enter FALSTAFF.

Fal. No, I'll come no more i' the basket : May I not go out, ere he come ?

Mrs. Page. Alas, three of master Ford's brothers watch the door with pistols, that none shall issue out ; otherwise you might slip away ere he came. But what make⁴ you here ?

Fal. What shall I do ? — I'll creep up into the chimney.

Mrs. Ford. There they always used to discharge their birding-pieces : Creep into the kiln-hole.

Fal. Where is it ?

Mrs. Ford. He will seek there on my word. Neither press, coffer, chest, trunk, well, vault, but he hath an abstract⁵ for the remembrance of such places, and goes to them by his note : There is no hiding you in the house.

Fal. I'll go out then.

⁴ This phrase has been already noticed. It occurs again in *As You Like It*, in the sense of *do* :

“ Now, sir, what *make* you here ? ”

occurs in *Hamlet*, *Othello*, and *Love's Labour's Lost*.
: *abstract*, i. e. a list, an inventory, or short note of.

Mrs. Page. If you go out in your own semblance, you die, Sir John. Unless you go out disguised,—

Mrs. Ford. How might we disguise him?

Mrs. Page. Alas the day, I know not. There is no woman's gown big enough for him; otherwise, he might put on a hat, a muffler, and a kerchief, and so escape.

Fal. Good hearts, devise something: any extremity, rather than a mischief.

Mrs. Ford. My maid's aunt, the fat woman of Brentford⁶, has a gown above.

Mrs. Page. On my word, it will serve him; she's as big as he is: and there's her thrum'd hat⁷, and her muffler too: Run up, Sir John.

Mrs. Ford. Go, go, sweet Sir John: mistress Page and I will look some linen for your head.

Mrs. Page. Quick, quick; we'll come dress you straight: put on the gown the while.

[Exit FALSTAFF.]

Mrs. Ford. I would my husband would meet him in this shape: he cannot abide the old woman of Brentford; he swears, she's a witch; forbade her my house, and hath threatened to beat her.

Mrs. Page. Heaven guide him to thy husband's cudgel; and the devil guide his cudgel afterwards!

Mrs. Ford. But is my husband coming.

⁶ In the early 4to it is: "My maid's aunt *Gillian* of Brentford."

⁷ A Hat composed of the weaver's tufts or *thrumms*, or of very coarse cloth. A *muffler* was a part of female attire which only covered the lower part of the face.



Mrs. Page. Ay, in good sadness, is he ; and talks of the basket too, howsoever he hath had intelligence.

Mrs. Ford. We'll try that ; for I'll appoint my men to carry the basket again, to meet him at the door with it, as they did last time.

Mrs. Page. Nay, but he'll be here presently : let's go dress him like the witch of Brentford^a.

Mrs. Ford. I'll first direct my men, what they shall do with the basket. Go up, I'll bring linen for him straight. [Exit.

Mrs. Page. Hang him, dishonest varlet ! we cannot misuse him enough.

We'll leave a proof, by that which we will do,
Wives may be merry, and yet honest too :
We do not act that often jest and laugh ;
'Tis old but true, *Still swine eat all the draf*. [Exit.

Re-enter MRS. FORD, with two Servants.

Mrs. Ford. Go, sirs, take the basket again on your shoulders ; your master is hard at door ; if he bid you set it down, obey him, quickly despatch.

1 Serv. Come, come, take it up. [Exit.

2 Serv. Pray heaven, it be not full of knight again.

1 Serv. I hope not ; I had as lief bear so much lead.

Enter FORD, PAGE, SHALLOW, CAIUS, and SIR HUGH EVANS.

Ford. Ay, but if it prove true, master Page, have you any way then to unfool me again ?—Set down the basket, villain.—Somebody call my wife :—Yonoth

^a This old witch Jyl or Gillian of Brentford seems to have been a character well known in popular story at the time. "Jyl of Brentford's Testament" was printed by Copland long before, and Neham enumerates it as in the collection of Capt. Cox, the 11, now well known to all, from the mention of him in the 1ce of Kenilworth. See Mr. Collier's edition of Dodsley's Plays, vol. ix. p. 16.

in a basket, [come out here⁹!]—O, you panderly rascals! there's a knot, a ging, a pack, a conspiracy against me: Now, shall the devil be shamed. What! wife, I say! come, come forth; behold what honest clothes you send forth to bleaching.

Page. Why, this passes¹⁰! master Ford, you are not to go loose any longer; you must be pinioned.

Eva. Why, this is lunatics! this is mad as a mad dog!

Shal. Indeed, master Ford, this is not well; indeed.

Enter Mrs. FORD.

Ford. So say I too, sir.—Come hither, mistress Ford; mistress Ford, the honest woman, the modest wife, the virtuous creature, that hath the jealous fool to her husband!—I suspect without cause, mistress, do I?

Mrs. Ford. Heaven be my witness, you do, if you suspect me in any dishonesty.

Ford. Well said, brazen-face; hold it out.—Come forth, sirrah. [*Pulls the clothes out of the basket.*]

Page. This passes!

Mrs. Ford. Are you not ashamed? let the clothes alone.

Ford. I shall find you anon.

Eva. 'Tis unreasonable! Will you take up your wife's clothes? Come away.

Ford. Empty the basket, I say.

Mrs. Ford. Why, man, why?

Ford. Master Page, as I am a man, there was one conveyed out of my house yesterday in this basket: Why may not he be there again? In my house I am sure he is: my intelligence is true; my jealousy is reasonable: Pluck me out all the linen.

⁹ The words in brackets are from the quarto; *ging* was formerly used for *gang*.

¹⁰ *Passes*, i. e. *surpasses*, or goes beyond all bounds.

Mrs. Ford. If you find a man there, he shall die a flea's death.

Page. Here's no man.

Schal. By my fidelity, this is not well, master Ford; this wrongs you¹¹.

Eva. Master Ford, you must pray, and not follow the imaginations of your own heart: this is jealousies.

Ford. Well, he's not here I seek for.

Page. No, nor no where else, but in your brain.

Ford. Help to search my house this one time; if I find not what I seek, show no colour for my extremity, let me for ever be your table-sport; let them say of me, As jealous as Ford, that searched a hollow walnut for his wife's leman¹². Satisfy me once more; once more search with me.

Mrs. Ford. What hoa! mistress Page! come you, and the old woman down; my husband will come into the chamber.

Ford. Old woman! What old woman's that?

Mrs. Ford. Why, it is my maid's aunt of Brentford.

Ford. A witch, a quean, an old cozening quean! Have I not forbid her my house? She comes of errands, does she? We are simple men; we do not know what's brought to pass under the profession of fortunetelling. She works by charms, by spells, by the figure, and such daubery as this is; beyond our element; we know nothing.—Come down, you witch, you hag¹³ you; come down, I say.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, good, sweet husband;—good gentlemen, let him not strike the old woman.

¹¹ i. e. "This is below your character, unworthy of you."

¹² *Leman*, i. e. lover or sweetheart; it was applied to both sexes, but more frequently to women, as we find in Twelfth Night, Act ii. Sc. 3.

¹³ In the first folio, here and in Ford's next speech, we have misprint, you *Ragge*, confirming the similar error of *Nagge* for *Nage* in Antony and Cleopatra, Act iii. Sc. 8.

*Enter FALSTAFF in women's clothes, led by
MRS. PAGE.*

Mrs. Page. Come, mother Pratt, come, give me your und.

Ford. I'll prat her :—Out of my door, you witch ! eats him] you hag, you baggage, you polecat, you ryon¹⁴ ! out ! out ! I'll conjure you, I'll fortune-tell u.

[Exit FALSTAFF.

Mrs. Page. Are you not ashamed ? I think you have lled the poor woman.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, he will do it ;—'Tis a goodly cre- t for you.

Ford. Hang her, witch !

Eva. By yea and no, I think, the 'oman is a witch leed : I like not when a 'oman has a great peard ; spy a great peard under her muffler.

Ford. Will you follow, gentlemen ? I beseech you, low ; see but the issue of my jealousy ; if I cry out us upon no trail¹⁵, never trust me when I open again.

Page. Let's obey his humour a little further : Come, ntlemen.

[*Exeunt PAGE, FORD, SHALLOW, and EVANS.*

Mrs. Page. Trust me, he beat him most pitifully.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, by the mass that he did not ; he at him most unpitifully, methought.

Mrs. Page. I'll have the cudgel hallowed, and hung t the altar ; it hath done meritorious service.

Mrs. Ford. What think you ? May we, with the urant of woman-hood, and the witness of a good con- ence, pursue him with any further revenge ?

Mrs. Page. The spirit of wantonness is, sure, scared t of him ; if the devil have him not in fee-simple,

¹⁴ *Ronyon* means much the same as *scall* or *scab*, from *Rog-
ue, Fr.*

¹⁵ Expressions taken from the chase. *Trail* is the scent left the *passage of the game*. To *open* is to cry out or bark.

with fine and recovery¹⁶, he will never, I think, in the way of waste¹⁷, attempt us again.

Mrs. Ford. Shall we tell our husbands how we have served him?

Mrs. Page. Yes, by all means; if it be but to scrape the figures out of your husband's brains. If they can find in their hearts, the poor unvirtuous fat knight shall be any further afflicted, we two will still be the ministers.

Mrs. Ford. I'll warrant tney'll have him publicly shamed: and, methinks, there would be no period¹⁸ to the jest, should he not be publicly shamed.

Mrs. Page. Come to the forge with it then, shape it: I would not have things cool. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. A Room in the Garter Inn.

Enter Host and BARDOLPH.

Bard. Sir, the Germans desire to have three of your horses: the duke himself will be to-morrow at court, and they are going to meet him.

Host. What duke should that be comes so secretly? I hear not of him in the court: Let me speak with the gentlemen; they speak English?

Bard. Ay, sir, I'll call them to you.

Host. They shall have my horses; but I'll make them pay, I'll sauce them: they have had my house¹⁹

¹⁶ Ritson, himself a lawyer, supposes that Shakspeare "had been long enough in an attorney's office to know that *fee-simple* is the *largest estate*, and *fine and recovery* the *strongest assurance*, known to English Law." How Mrs. Page acquired her knowledge of these terms he has not informed us.

¹⁷ This is another forensic expression. Mr. Steevens says that the meaning of the passage is, "he will not make further attempts to ruin us by corrupting our virtue and destroying our reputation."

¹⁸ i. e. *right period*, or *proper catastrophe*.

¹⁹ The old copy has *houses*.

a week at command ; I have turned away my other guests: they must come off²⁰; I'll sause them; Come.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *A Room in Ford's House.*

Enter PAGE, FORD, MRS. PAGE, MRS. FORD, and SIR HUGH EVANS.

Eva. 'Tis one of the pest discretions or a 'oman as ever I did look upon.

Page. And did he send you both these letters at an instant?

Mrs. Page. Within a quarter of an hour.

Ford. Pardon me, wife : Henceforth do what thou wilt;

I rather will suspect the sun with cold¹,
Than thee with wantonness : now doth thy honour stand,

In him that was of late an heretic,
As firm as faith.

Page. 'Tis well, 'tis well ; no more.

Be not as extreme in submission,

As in offence ;

But let our plot go forward : let our wives
Yet once again, to make us public sport,
Appoint a meeting with this old fat fellow,
Where we may take him, and disgrace him for it.

Ford. There is no better way than that they spoke of.

Page. How ! to send him word they'll meet him in the park at midnight ! fie, fie ; he'll never come.

Eva. You say, he has been thrown into the rivers ; and has been grievously peaten, as an old 'oman ; me-

²⁰ To come off is to pay, to come down (as we now say), with a sum of money. It is a phrase of frequent occurrence in old plays.

¹ The reading in the text is Rowe's. The old copies read, "I rather will suspect the sun with gold."

thinks there should be terrors in him, that he should not come ; methinks, his flesh is punished, he shall have no desires.

Page. So think I too.

Mrs. Ford. Devise but how you'll use him when he comes,

And let us two devise to bring him thither.

Mrs. Page. There is an old tale goes, that Herne the hunter,

Sometime a keeper here in Windsor forest,
Doth all the winter time, at still midnight,
Walk round about an oak, with great ragg'd horns ;
And there he blasts the tree, and takes² the cattle ;
And makes milch-kine yield blood, and shakes a chain
In a most hideous and dreadful manner :
You have heard of such a spirit ; and well you know,
The superstitious idle-headed eld
Received, and did deliver to our age,
This tale of Herne the hunter for a truth.

Page. Why, yet there want not many, that do fear
In deep of night to walk by this Herne's oak³ ;
But what of this ?

² To take signifies to seize or strike with a disease, to blast. So, in Lear, Act ii. Sc. 4 :

" Strike her young bones, ye taking airs, with lameness.
And in Hamlet, Act i. Sc. 1 :

" No planets strike,
No fairy takes, no witch has power to charm."

" Of a horse that is taken. A horse that is bereft of his feeling, moving, or stirring, is said to be taken, and in sooth so he is, in that he is arrested by so villainous a disease : yet some farriers, not well understanding the ground of the disease, conster the word taken to be stricken by some planet, or evil spirit, which is false." — C. vii. *Markham on Horses*, 1595. Thus also in Horman's *Vulgaria*, 1519, " He is taken, or benomed ; Attonitus est."

³ The tree which was by tradition shown as Herne's oak, being totally decayed, is said to have been cut down by an inadvertent order of King George the Third in 1795. Mr. Knight has amply discussed the subject.

rs. Ford. Marry, this is our device ;
 Falstaff at that oak shall meet with us,
 guised like Herne, with huge horns on his head^{4.}]
age. Well, let it not be doubted but he'll come,
 in this shape : When you have brought him
 thither,

it shall be done with him ? what is your plot ?

rs. Page. That likewise have we thought upon,
 and thus :

Page my daughter, and my little son,
 three or four more of their growth, we'll dress
 urchins, ouphes⁵, and fairies, green and white,
 bounds of waxen tapers on their heads,
 rattles in their hands. Upon a sudden,
 Falstaff, she, and I, are newly met,
 them from forth a saw-pit rush at once
 some diffused⁶ song ; upon their sight,
 two in great amazedness will fly :
 let them all encircle him about,
 , fairy-like, to-pinch⁷ the unclean knight ;
 ask him, why, that hour of fairy revel,
 heir so sacred paths he dares to tread,
 hape profane.

rs. Ford. And till he tell the truth,

This line is from the quarto.

Ouphes, i. e. elves, hobgoblins.

Some diffused song appears to mean some obscure strange . In Cavendish's Life of Wolsey, the word occurs in this : " speak you Welsh to him : I doubt not but thy speech be more diffuse to him, than his French shall be to thee." Ave explains diffused by the French *diffus, espars, OBSCURE,* in Cooper's Dictionary, 1584, I find *obscurum* interpreted cure, difficult, DIFFUSE, hard to understand." Skelton uses several times for strange or obscure ; for instance, in the n of Laurel :

" Perseus pressed forth with problems diffuse."
To-pinch: to has here an augmentative sense, like he has had : all was generally prefixed, Spenser has all *to-torn*, all t, &c. and Milton in *Comus*, all *to-ruffled*.

Let the supposed fairies pinch him sound⁸,
And burn him with their tapers.

Mrs. Page. The truth being known,
We'll all present ourselves; dis-horn the spirit,
And mock him home to Windsor.

Ford. The children must
Be practised well to this, or they'll ne'er do't.

Eva. I will teach the children their behaviours;
and I will be like a Jack-an-apes also, to burn the
knight with my taber.

Ford. That will be excellent. I'll go buy them
vizards.

Mrs. Page. My Nan shall be the queel of all the
fairies,
Finely attired in a robe of white.

Page. That silk will I go buy;—and in that trim⁹
Shall master Slender steal my Nan away,
And marry her at Eton. [Aside.] Go, send to Fal-
staff straight.

Ford. Nay, I'll to him again in name of Brook:
He'll tell me all his purpose: Sure, he'll come.

Mrs. Page. Fear not you that: Go, get us pro-
perties¹⁰,
And tricking for our fairies.

Eva. Let us about it: It is admirable pleasures,
and fery honest knaveries.

[*Exeunt PAGE, FORD, and EVANS.*

Mrs. Page. Go, mistress Ford,
Send quickly to Sir John, to know his mind.

[*Exit MRS. FORD.*

I'll to the doctor; he hath my good will,
And none but he, to marry with Nan Page.

⁸ Sound, for soundly, the adjective used as an adverb.

⁹ The old copy has "and in that time." Theobald proposed to
read "and in that tire;" but trim in MS. would easily be mistaken
for time.

¹⁰ Properties are little incidental necessaries to a theatre,
tricking is dress or ornament.

That Slender, though well landed, is an idiot ;
 And he my husband best of all affects :
 The doctor is well money'd, and his friends
 Potent at court ; he, none but he, shall have her,
 Though twenty thousand worthier come to crave her.

[Exit.]

SCENE V. *A Room in the Garter Inn.**Enter Host and SIMPLE.*

Host. What would'st thou have, boor? what, thick-skin? speak, breathe, discuss; brief, short, quick, snap.

Sim. Marry, sir, I come to speak with Sir John Falstaff from master Slender.

Host. There's his chamber, his house, his castle, his standing-bed, and truckle-bed¹; 'tis painted about with the story of the prodigal, fresh and new: Go, knock and call; he'll speak like an Anthropophagian² unto thee: Knock, I say.

Sim. There's an old woman, a fat woman, gone up into his chamber; I'll be so bold as stay, sir, till she come down: I come to speak with her, indeed.

Host. Ha! a fat woman! the knight may be robbed: I'll call.—Bully knight! Bully Sir John! speak from thy lungs military: Art thou there? it is thine host, thine Ephesian, calls.

Fal. [above.] How now, mine host?

Host. Here's a Bohemian-Tartar tarries the coming down of thy fat woman: Let her descend, bully, let her descend; my chambers are honourable: Fye! privacy? fye!

¹ The usual furniture of chambers, at that time, was a *standing-bed*, under which was a *trochle*, *truckle*, or *running bed*: from *trochlea* a low wheel or castor. In the standing bed lay the master, in the truckle the servant.

² *Anthropophagian*, i. e. a *cannibal*: mine host uses these fustian words to astonish Simple.

Enter Falstaff.

Fal. There was, mine host, an old fat woman even now with me ; but she's gone.

Sim. Pray you, sir, was't not the wise woman of Brentford ?

Fal. Ay, marry, was it, muscle-shell³ ; What would you with her ?

Sim. My master, sir, my master Slender, sent to her, seeing her go thorough the streets, to know, sir, whether one Nym, sir, that beguiled him of a chain, had the chain, or no.

Fal. I spake with the old woman about it.

Sim. And what says she, I pray, sir ?

Fal. Marry, she says, that the very same man that beguiled master Slender of his chain, cozened him of it.

Sim. I would I could have spoken with the woman herself ; I had other things to have spoken with her too, from him.

Fal. What are they ? let us know.

Host. Ay, come ; quick.

Sim. I may not conceal them, sir⁴.

Host. Conceal them, or thou diest.

Sim. Why, sir, they were nothing but about mistress Anne Page ; to know if it were my master's fortune to have her, or no.

Fal. 'Tis, 'tis his fortune.

Sim. What, sir ?

Fal. To have her,—or no : Go ; say, the woman told me so.

³ He calls poor Simple *muscle-shell*, because he stands with his mouth open.

⁴ In the old copy this speech is given to Falstaff. The corner of Mr. Collier's folio reads " *You may not conceal them;*" perceiving the erroneous appropriation of the speech, but the whole humour of the passage consists in Simple's mistaking *veal* for *reveal*.

Sim. May I be so bold to say so, sir?

Fal. Ay, Sir Tike; who more bold?

► *Sim.* I thank your worship: I shall make my master glad with these tidings. [Exit SIMPLE.

Host. Thou art clerky⁵, thou art clerky, Sir John: Was there a wise woman with thee?

Fal. Ay, that there was, mine host; one that hath taught me more wit than ever I learned before in my life: and I paid nothing for it neither, but was paid⁶ for my learning.

Enter BARDOLPH.

Bard. Out, alas, sir! cozenage! mere cozenage!

Host. Where be my horses? speak well of them, varletto.

Bard. Run away with the cozeners: for so soon as I came beyond Eton, they threw me off, from behind one of them, in a slough of mire; and set spurs, and away, like three German devils, three Doctor Faus-tuses⁷.

Host. They are gone but to meet the duke, villain: do not say, they be fled; Germans are honest men.

Enter SIR HUGH EVANS.

Eva. Where is mine host?

Host. What is the matter, sir?

Eva. Have a care of your entertainments: there is a friend of mine come to town, tells me, there is three cousin germans, that has cozened all the hosts of Readings, of Maidenhead, of Colebrook, of horses and money. I tell you for good-will, look you: you

⁵ *Clerky*, i. e. *scholar-like*.

⁶ To *pay*, in Shakespeare's time, signified to *beat*; in which sense it is still not uncommon in familiar language: "Seven of the eleven I *paid*," says Falstaff, in *Henry IV. Part 1.*

⁷ The audience would be familiar with the name of the Necromancer from the popularity of Marlowe's play. We should perhaps read "Run away with by the cozeners."

are wise, and full of gibes and vlotting-stogs; and it is not convenient you should be cozened: Fare you well.

[Exit.]

Enter DOCTOR CAIUS.

Caius. Vere is mine *Host de Jarterre*.

Host. Here, master doctor, in perplexity, and doubtful dilemma.

Caius. I cannot tell vat is dat: but it is tell-a me, dat you make grand preparations for a duke *de Jarmany*: by my trot, dere is no duke, dat the court is know to come; I tell you for good vill: adieu.

[Exit.]

Host. Hue and cry, villain, go:—assist me, knight; I am undone:—fly, run, hue and cry, villain! I am undone!

[*Exeunt Host and BARDOLPH.*]

Fal. I would, all the world might be cozened; for I have been cozen'd and beaten too. If it should come to the ear of the court, how I have been transformed, and how my transformation hath been washed and cudgelled, they would melt me out of my fat, drop by drop, and liquor fishermen's boots with me; I warrant they would whip me with their fine wits, till I were as crest-fallen as a dried pear. I never prospered since I forswore myself at *Primero*⁸. Well, if my wind were but long enough [to say my prayers⁹,] I would repent.—

Enter MRS. QUICKLY.

Now! whence come you?

Quick. From the two parties, forsooth.

Fal. The devil take one party, and his dam the other, and so they shall be both bestowed! I have

⁸ *Primero* was the fashionable *game at cards* in Shakspeare's

The words, “to say my prayers,” are from the 4to.

suffered more for their sakes, more than the villainous inconstancy of man's disposition is able to bear.

Quick. And have not they suffered? Yes, I warrant, speciously one of them; mistress Ford, good heart, is beaten black and blue, that you cannot see a white spot about her.

Fal. What tell'st thou me of black and blue! I was beaten myself into all the colours of the rainbow, and I was like to be apprehended for the witch of Brentford; but that my admirable dexterity of wit, my counterfeiting the action of an old woman deliver'd me, the knave constable had set me i' the stocks, i' the common stocks, for a witch.

Quick. Sir, let me speak with you in your chamber; you shall hear how things go; and, I warrant, to your content. Here is a letter will say somewhat. Good hearts, what ado here is to bring you together! Sure, one of you does not serve heaven well, that you are so crossed.

Fal. Come up into my chamber. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI. *Another Room in the Garter Inn*

Enter FENTON and Host.

Host. Master Fenton, talk not to me; my mind is heavy, I will give over all.

Fent. Yet hear me speak: Assist me in my purpose,

And, as I am a gentleman, I'll give thee A hundred pound in gold, more than your loss.

Host. I will hear you, master Fenton; and I will, at the least, keep your counsel.

Fent. From time to time I have acquainted you With the dear love I bear to fair Anne Page; Who, mutually, hath answer'd my affection

(So far forth as herself might be her chooser),
Even to my wish. I have a letter from her
Of such contents as you will wonder at ;
The mirth whereof so larded with my matter,
That neither, singly, can be manifested,
Without the shew of both ;—wherein fat Falstaff
Hath a great scene¹ : the image of the jest

[Showing the letter.]

I'll show you here at large. Hark, good mine host :
To-night at Herne's oak, just 'twixt twelve and one,
Must my sweet Nan present the fairy queen ;
The purpose why, is here ; in which disguise,
While other jests are something rank on foot,
Her father hath commanded her to slip
Away with Slender, and with him at Eton
Immediately to marry : she hath consented :
Now, sir,

Her mother, ever² strong against that match,
And firm for doctor Caius, hath appointed
That he shall likewise shuffle her away,
While other sports are tasking of their minds,
And at the deanery, where a priest attends,
Straight marry her : to this her mother's plot
She, seemingly obedient, likewise hath
Made promise to the doctor ;—Now, thus it rests :
Her father means she shall be all in white ;

at habit, when Slender sees his time
by the hand, and bid her go,
with him :—her mother hath intended,
o denote her to the doctor
ust all be mask'd and vizarded),
at in green she shall be loose enrob'd,

the folios. The quarto 1602 reads "has a great *scare*," a misprint for *share*, which seems to suit the context

With ribands pendant, flaring 'bout her head ;
 And when the doctor spies his vantage ripe,
 To pinch her by the hand, and, on that token,
 The maid hath given consent to go with him.

Host. Which means she to deceive ? father or mother ?

Fent. Both, my good host, to go along with me :
 And here it rests,—that you'll procure the vicar
 To stay for me at church, 'twixt twelve and one,
 And, in the lawful name of marrying,
 To give our hearts united-ceremony.

Host. Well, husband your device ; I'll to the vicar :
 Bring you the maid, you shall not lack a priest.

Fent. So shall I ever more be bound to thee ;
 Besides, I'll make a present recompense. [*Exeunt.*

ACT V.

SCENE I. *A Room in the Garter Inn.*

Enter FALSTAFF and MRS. QUICKLY.

Falstaff.

FR'YTHEE, no more prattling ;—go.—
 I'll hold¹ : This is the third time ; I hope,
 good luck lies in odd numbers. Away, go ;
 they say, there is divinity in odd numbers, either in
 nativity, chance, or death.—Away.

Quick. I'll provide you a chain ; and I'll do what
 I can to get you a pair of horns.

Fal. Away, I say ; time wears : hold up your head
 and mince². [*Exit Mrs. QUICKLY.*

¹ *I'll hold*, i. e. *keep to the time*.

² *Mince*, i. e. *walk* : *to mince* signified to walk with affected
 delicacy.

Enter FORD.

How now, master Brook ? Master Brook, the master will be known to-night, or never. Be you in the Park about midnight, at Herne's oak, and you shall see wonders.

Ford. Went you not to her yesterday, sir, as you told me you had appointed ?

Ford. I went to her, master Brook, as you see, like a poor old man : but I came from her, master Brook, like a poor old woman. That same knave, Ford, her husband, hath the finest mad devil of jealousy in him, master Brook, that ever governed frenzy. I will tell you.—He best me grievously, in the shape of a woman ; for in the shape of man, master Brook, I fear not Goliath with a weaver's beam ; because I know also, life is a shuttle³. I am in haste ; go along with me ; I'll tell you all, master Brook. Since I plucked geese⁴, played truant, and whipped top, I knew not what it was to be beaten, till lately. Follow me : I'll tell you strange things of this knave Ford : on whom to-night I will be revenged, and I will deliver his wife into your hand.—Follow : Strange things in hand, master Brook ! follow.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *Windsor Park.**Enter PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER.*

Come, come ; we'll couch i'the castle-ditch, be the light of our fairies.—Remember, son my daughter.

Ay, forsooth ; I have spoke with her, and we

allusion to the Book of Job, vii. 6.

³ My days are swifter than a weaver's *shuttle*.⁴

a living goose of its feathers was formerly an *act* of *city*.

have a nay-word¹ how to know one another. I come to her in white, and cry, *mum*; she cries, *budget*; and by that we know one another.

Shal. That's good too: But what needs either your *mum*, or her *budget*; the white will decipher her well enough.—It hath struck ten o'clock.

Page. The night is dark; light and spirits will become it well. Heaven prosper our sport! No man means evil but the devil², and we shall know him by his horns. Let's away; follow me. [Exit.]

SCENE III. *The Street in Windsor.*

Enter Mrs. PAGE, Mrs. FORD, and Dr. CAIUS.

Mrs. Page. Master doctor, my daughter is in green; when you see your time, take her by the hand, away with her to the deanery, and despatch it quickly: Go before into the park; we two must go together.

Caius. I know vat I have to do; Adieu.

Mrs. Page. Fare you well, sir. [Exit CAIUS.] My husband will not rejoice so much at the abuse of Falstaff, as he will chafe at the doctor's marrying my daughter: but 'tis no matter; better a little chiding, than a great deal of heart-break.

Mrs. Ford. Where is Nan now, and her troop of fairies? and the Welsh devil, Hugh³?

Mrs. Page. They are all couched in a pit hard by Herne's oak, with obscured lights; which at the very instant of Falstaff's and our meeting, they will at once display to the night.

¹ *Nay-word*, i. e. *watchword*. In Ulysses upon Ajax, we have "mum-budget, not a word."

² Page indirectly alludes to Falstaff, who was to have horns on his head.

³ The old copy has erroneously *Herne*; Theobald altered it to *Hugh*.

Mrs. Ford. That cannot choose but amaze him.

Mrs. Page. If he be not amazed, he will be mocked; if he be amazed, he will every way be mocked.

Mrs. Ford. We'll betray him finely.

Mrs. Page. Against such lewdsters, and their lechery, Those that betray them do no treachery.

Mrs. Ford. The hour draws on; To the oak, to the oak!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *Windsor Park.*

Enter SIR HUGH EVANS and Fairies.

Eva. Trib, trib, fairies; come; and remember your parts: be bold, I pray you; follow me into the pit; and when I give the watch-ords, do as I bid you; Come, come; trib, trib.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *Another part of the Park.*

Enter FALSTAFF disguised, with a buck's head on.

Fal. The Windsor bell hath struck twelve; the minute draws on: Now, the hot-blooded gods assist me:—Remember, Jove, thou wast a bull for thy Europa; love set on thy horns—O powerful love! that, in some respects, makes a beast a man; in some other, a man a beast.—You were also, Jupiter, a swan, for the love of Leda;—O, omnipotent love! how near the god drew to the complexion of a goose?—A fault done first in the form of a beast;—O Jove, a beastly fault! and then another fault in the semblance of a fowl; think on't, Jove; a foul fault.—When gods have hot backs, what shall poor men do? For me, I am here a Windsor stag; and the fattest, I think, i' the forest: send me a cool rut-time, Jove,

or who can blame me to piss my tallow¹? Who comes here? my doe?

Enter Mrs. FORD and MRS. PAGE.

Mrs. Ford. Sir John? art thou there, my deer? my male deer?

Fal. My doe with the black scut?—Let the sky rain potatoes; let it thunder to the tune of *Green Sleeves*; hail kissing-comfits, and snow eringoies; let there come a tempest of provocation², I will shelter me here. [Embracing her.

Mrs. Ford. Mistress Page is come with me, sweetheart.

Fal. Divide me like a bri'b'd buck³, each a haunch: I will keep my sides to myself, my shoulders for the fellow⁴ of this walk, and my horns I bequeath your

¹ This is technical. "During the time of their rut the harts live with small sustenance.—The red mushroome helpeth well to make them pysse their greace they are then in so vehement heat."—*Turberville's Book of Hunting*, 1575.

² The sweet potato was used in England as a delicacy long before the introduction of the common potato by Sir Walter Raleigh in 1586. It was imported in considerable quantities from Spain and the Canaries, and was supposed to possess the power of restoring decayed vigour. The kissing-comfits were principally made of these and eringo roots, and were perfumed to make the breath sweet. Gerarde attributes the same virtues to the common potato which he distinguishes as the Virginian sort.

³ A *bri'b'd buck*; this is the reading of the old copies, which has been unnecessarily changed to a *bribe-buck* by all recent editors. A *bri'b'd buck* was a *buck cut up* to be given away in portions. *Bribes* in O. F. were portions or fragments of meat which were given away. Hence *bribeur* was a beggar, and the O. E. *bribour*, a petty thief. Mr. Way, in his notes to the Prompt-*rium Parvulorum*, has cited from the Rot. Parl. Edw. IV. n. 30, a passage in which persons are mentioned "who have stolen and *bribed signets*" (i. e. cygnets, or young swans).

⁴ *The fellow of this walk*, i. e. the *keeper*; the shoulders of the buck were his perquisites. The *woodman* was the attendant on the forester, but here used in a wanton sense for one choosing female game for the object of his pursuit. In his assumed character, Falstaff uses the terms of the forest.

husbands. Am I a woodman? ha! Speak I like Herne the hunter?—Why, now is Cupid a child of conscience; he makes restitution. As I am a true spirit, welcome!

[*Noise within.*

Mrs. Page. Alas! What noise?

Mrs. Ford. Heaven forgive our sins!

Fal. What should this be?

Mrs. Ford. } Away, away.

Mrs. Page. } [They run off.

Fal. I think, the devil will not have me damned, lest the oil that is in me should set hell on fire; he would never else cross me thus.

Enter SIR HUGH EVANS, *like a satyr*; MRS. QUICKLY, and PISTOL; ANNE PAGE, as the *Fairy Queen*, attended by her brother and others, dressed like fairies, with waxen tapers on their heads.

*Queen*⁵. Fairies, black, grey, green, and white,
You moon-shine revellers, and shades of night,
You ouphen-heirs⁶ of fixed destiny,
Attend your office, and your quality.—
Crier Hobgoblin, make the fairy o-yes.

Pist. Elves, list your names: Silence! you airy toys.
Cricket, to Windsor chimnies shalt thou, having leapt⁷,
Where fires thou find'st unrak'd, and hearths unswept,
There pinch the maids as blue as bilberry:
Our radiant queen hates sluts, and sluttary.

Fal. They are fairies; he, that speaks to them, shall die:

⁵ Queen, i. e. Anne Page disguised as the *Fairy Queen*. The old copies have *Qu.* and *Qui*. It is doubtful whether these passages were not intended to be spoken by Mrs. Quickly.

⁶ The old copy reads *orphan-heirs*. I adopt Warburton's reading, *ouphen*, i. e. fairy, *ouphes* being mentioned before and afterward.

⁷ The old copy "shalt thou leap," but the rhyme requires *apt*. The verse too should have twelve syllables, and I leave *ie* correction as I had made it long since. Mr. Collier's folio substitutes "when thou'st leapt."

I'll wink and couch : No man their works must eye.

[*Lies down upon his face.*]

Eva. Where's *Pead*?—Go you, and where you find
a maid,

That, ere she sleep, has thrice her prayers said,
Raise up the organs of her fantasy,
Sleep she as sound as careless infancy ;
But those as sleep, and think not on their sins,
Pinch them, arms, legs, backs, shoulders, sides, and
shins.

Queen. About, about ;

Search Windsor castle, elves, within and out :
Strew good luck, ouphes, on every sacred room ;
That it may stand till the perpetual doom,
In state as wholesome, as in state 'tis fit ;
Worthy the owner, and the owner it.

The several chairs of order look you scour
With juice of balm, and every precious flower⁸ :
Each fair instalment, coat, and several crest,
With loyal blazon, evermore be blest !
And nightly, meadow-fairies, look, you sing,
Like to the Garter's compass, in a ring :
The expressure that it bears, green let it be,
More fertile-fresh than all the field to see
And, *Hony soit qui mal y pense*, write,
In emerald tufts, flowers purple, blue and white ;
Like sapphire, pearl, and rich embroidery,
Buckled below fair knighthood's bending knee ;
Fairies use flowers for their charactery⁹.

* It was an article of ancient luxury to rub tables, &c. with aromatic herba. So, in the Baucis and Philemon of Ovid, Met. viii.

Mensam
sequatam *Mentha* abstersere virenti.

Pliny informs us that the Romans did so to drive away evil spirits.

⁹ " *Charactery* is a writing by characters, or by strange marks."—*Bullockar's English Expositor*, 12mo. 1656.

Away ! disperse ! But, till 'tis one o'clock,
Our dance of custom, round about the oak
Of Herne the hunter, let us not forget.

Eva. Pray you, lock hand in hand ; yourselves in
order set :

And twenty glow-worms shall our lanterns be,
To guide our measure round about the tree.

But, stay ; I smell a man of middle earth¹⁰.

Fal. Heaven defend me from that Welsh fairy ! lest
he transform me to a piece of cheese !

Pist. Vile worm, thou wast o'erlook'd¹¹ even in
thy birth.

Queen. With trial-fire touch me his finger-end :
If he be chaste, the flame will back descend,
And turn him to no pain ; but if he start,
It is the flesh of a corrupted heart.

Pist. A trial, come.

Eva. Come, will this wood take fire ?

[They burn him with their tapers.

Fal. Oh, oh, oh !

Quick. Corrupt, corrupt, and tainted in desire !
About him, fairies ; sing a scornful rhyme :
And, as you trip, still pinch him to your time¹².

¹⁰ By this term is merely meant a *mortal man*, in contradistinction to a *spirit* of the earth or of the air, such as a fairy or gnome. It was in use in the north of Scotland a century since, and appears borrowed from the Saxon *Middan Eard*.

¹¹ By *o'er-look'd* is here meant *bewitched* by an evil eye, the word is used in that sense in Glanvilli Sadducismi Triumphatus, p. 95. See note on the Merchant of Venice, Act iii. Sc. 2.

"Beshrew your eyes,
They have *o'er-looked* me."

¹² *Eva.* It is right ; indeed he is full of lecheries and iniquity. This speech of Sir Hugh is omitted in the folio. The whole scene varies much in the quartoes.

SONG.

Fye on sinful fantasy !
 Fye on lust and luxury !
 Lust is but a bloody fire,
 Kindled with unchaste desire.

Fed in heart ; whose flames aspire,
 As thoughts do blow them, higher and higher.
 Pinch him, fairies, mutually ;
 Pinch him for his villany ;
 Pinch him, and burn him, and turn him about,
 Till candles, and starlight, and moonshine be out.

During this song, the fairies pinch Falstaff. Doctor Caius comes one way, and steals away a fairy in green; Slender another way, and takes off a fairy in white; and Fenton comes, and steals away Mrs. Anne Page. A noise of hunting is made within. All the fairies run away. Falstaff pulls off his buck's head, and rises.

Enter PAGE, FORD, MRS. PAGE, and MRS. FORD.
They lay hold on him.

Page. Nay, do not fly : I think, we have watch'd
 you now ;
 Will none but Herne the hunter serve your turn ?
Mrs. Page. I pray you, come ; hold up the jest no
 higher :—
 Now, good Sir John, how like you Windsor wives ?
 See you these, husband ? do not these fair yokes¹³
 Become the forest better than the town ?

¹³ The extremities of *yokes* for oxen, as still used in several counties of England, bend upwards, and rising very high, in shape resemble *horns*. In Cotgrave's Dictionary, *voce JOUELLES*, we have " *Arched or yoked vines* ; vines so under propped or fashioned that one may go under the middle of them." See also Hutton's Latin, Greek, and English Lexicon, 1585, in *voce JUGUM*; " a thing made with *forkes*, like a gallows, a frame whereon vines are joyned."

Ford. Now, sir, who's a cuckold now?—Master Brook, Falstaff's a knave, a cuckoldy knave; here are his horns, master Brook: And, master Brook, he hath enjoyed nothing of Ford's but his buck-basket, his cudgel, and twenty pounds of money, which must be paid to master Brook; his horses are arrested for it, master Brook.

Mrs. Ford. Sir John, we have had ill luck, we could never meet. I will never take you for my love again, but I will always count you my deer.

Fal. I do begin to perceive that I am made an ass.

Ford. Ay, and an ox too; both the proofs are extant.

Fal. And these are not fairies? I was three or four times in the thought, they were not fairies; and yet the guiltiness of my mind, the sudden surprise of my powers, drove the grossness of the poppery into a received belief, in despite of the teeth of all rhyme and reason, that they were fairies. See now, how wit may be made a Jack-a-lent, when 'tis upon ill employment!

Eva. Sir John Falstaff, serve Got, and leave your desires, and fairies will not pinse you.

Ford. Well said, fairy Hugh.

Eva. And leave you your jealousies too, I pray you.

Ford. I will never mistrust my wife again, till thou art able to woo her in good English.

Fal. Have I laid my brain in the sun, and dried it, that it wants matter to prevent so gross o'er-reaching as this? Am I ridden with a Welsh goat too? Shall I have a coxcomb of frize¹⁴? tis time I were choked with a piece of toasted cheese.

Eva. Seese is not good to give putter; your pelly ll putter.

Fal. Seese and putter! Have I lived to stand at

¹⁴ i. e. a fool's cap made out of Welsh materials. Wales wasious for this cloth.

he taunt of one that makes fritters of English ? This
is enough to be the decay of lust and late walking
through the realm.

Mrs. Page. Why, Sir John, do you think, though
we would have thrust virtue out of our hearts by the
head and shoulders, and have given ourselves without
cruple to hell, that ever the devil could have made
ou our delight ?

Ford. What, a hodge-pudding ? a bag of flax ?

Mrs. Page. A puffed man ?

Page. Old, cold, withered, and of intolerable en-
rails ?

Ford. And one that is as slanderous as Satan ?

Page. And as poor as Job ?

Ford. And as wicked as his wife ?

Eva. And given to fornications and to taverns, and
sack and wine, and metheglins, and to drinkings, and
swearings and starings, pribbles and prabbles ?

Ful. Well, I am your theme ; you have the start
of me ; I am dejected ; I am not able to answer the
Welsh flannel¹⁵ ; ignorance itself is a plummet o'er
me¹⁶ : use me as you will.

Ford. Marry, sir, we'll bring you to Windsor, to
one master Brook, that you have cozened of money,
to whom you should have been a pander : over and
above that you have suffered, I think, to repay that
money will be a biting affliction¹⁷.

Page. Yet be cheerful, knight : thou shalt eat a

¹⁵ The very word *flannel* is derived from a Welsh one, and it
is almost unnecessary to add that it was originally the manu-
facture of Wales.

¹⁶ Ignorance itself weighs me down, and oppresses me.

¹⁷ Here the quartoes add :

“ *Mrs. F.* Nay, husband, let that go to make amends :
Forgive that sum, and so we'll all be friends.

“ *Ford.* Well, here's my hand ; all's forgiven at last.

“ *Fal.* It hath cost me well : I have been well pinched
wash'd.”

posset to-night at my house ; where I will desire thee to laugh at my wife, that now laughs at thee¹⁸ : Tell her, master Slender hath married her daughter.

Mrs. Page. Doctors doubt that : If Anne Page be my daughter, she is, by this, doctor Caius' wife.

[*Aside.*

Enter SLENDER.

Slen. Whoo ! ho ! ho ! father Page.

Page. Son ! how now ? how now, son ? have you despatched ?

Slen. Despatched !—I'll make the best in Gloucestershire know on't ; would I were hanged, la, else.

Page. Of what, son ?

Slen. I came yonder at Eton to marry mistress Anne Page, and she's a great lubberly boy. If it had not been i' the church, I would have swinged him, or he should have swinged me. If I did not think it had been Anne Page, would I might never stir, and 'tis a post-master's boy.

Page. Upon my life then you took the wrong.

Slen. What need you tell me that ? I think so, when I took a boy for a girl : If I had been married to him, for all he was in woman's apparel, I would not have had him.

Page. Why, this is your own folly. Did not I tell you, how you should know my daughter by her garments ?

Slen. I went to her in white, and cry'd *mum*, and she cry'd *budget*, as Anne and I had appointed ; and yet it was not Anne, but a post-master's boy¹⁹.

¹⁸ Dr. Johnson remarks, that the two plots are excellently connected, and the transition very artfully made in this speech.

¹⁹ Here again the quartoes add :

" *Eva, Jeshu!* Master Slender, cannot you see but marry
ys ?

" *Page.* O, I am vexed at heart : What shall I do ? "

Mrs. Page. Good George, be not angry : I knew of your purpose ; turned my daughter into green ; and, indeed, she is now with the doctor at the deanery, and there married.

Enter CAIUS.

Caius. Vere is mistress Page ? By gar, I am cozened : I ha' married *un garçon*, a boy ; *un paisan*, by gar, a boy ; it is not Anne Page : by gar, I am cozened.

Mrs. Page. Why, did you take her in green ?

Caius. Ay, be gar, and 'tis a boy ; be gar, I'll raise all Windsor. [*Exit CAIUS.*]

Ford. This is strange ! Who hath got the right Anne ?

Page. My heart misgives me : Here comes master Fenton.

Enter FENTON and ANNE PAGE.

How now, master Fenton ?

Anne. Pardon, good father ! good my mother, pardon !

Page. Now, mistress ? how chance you went not with master Slender ?

Mrs. Page. Why went you not with master doctor, maid ?

Fent. You do amaze²⁰ her : Hear the truth of it. You would have married her most shamefully, Where there was no proportion held in love. The truth is, she and I, long since contracted, Are now so sure that nothing can dissolve us. The offence is holy that she hath committed : And this deceit loses the name of craft, Of disobedience, or unduteous guile²¹ ;

²⁰ *Amaze*, i. e. *Confound* her by your questions.

²¹ *The old copy has title.* The correction is from Mr. Collier's *Coll.*

Since therein she doth evitate and shun
A thousand irreligious cursed hours,
Which forced marriage would have brought upon her.

Ford. Stand not amaz'd : here is no remedy :—
In love, the heavens themselves do guide the state ;
Money buys lands, and wives are sold by fate.

Fal. I am glad, though you have ta'en a special
stand to strike at me, that your arrow hath glanced.

Page. Well, what remedy ? Fenton, heaven give
thee joy !

What cannot be eschew'd, must be embrac'd.

Fal. When night-dogs run, all sorts of deer are
chas'd ²².

Mrs. Page. Well, I will muse no further :—master
Fenton,

Heaven give you many, many merry days !
Good husband, let us every one go home,
And laugh this sport o'er by a country fire ;
Sir John and all.

Ford. Let it be so :—Sir John,
To master Brook you yet shall hold your word ;
For he to-night shall lie with mistress Ford.

[*Exeunt.*

²² Young and old, does as well as bucks. He alludes to Fenton's having *run down* Anne Page. The quartoes add :

" *Eva.* I will dance and eat plums at your wedding."

I, 3

(Quickly) I must of another errand to
Sir John Falstaff from my 2 mistresses

I, 4

.(Ford) if I have horns to make one mad
let the proverb go with me; I'll be
horn mad.

MINUTE INTERMISSION

I, 1

.(Mrs Page) unvirtuous fat knight shall
be any farther afflicted, we two will
still be the ministers.

I, 2

.(Evans) Let us about it; it is admir-
able pleasure & very honest knaveries.

I, 3

.(Falstaff) I will deliver his wife into
your hand. Follow. Strange things in
hand, master Brook: follow.

I, 4

.(Ford) Let it be so. Sir John, to
master Brook you yet shall hold your
word, for he tonight, shall lie with
mistress Ford.

I, 1

... (Evans) I will make an end of my dinner; there's pippins & cheese to

I, 2

... (Pistol) Thou art the Mars of malcontents. I second thee. Troop on.

I, 3

... (Quickly) I know Anne's mind as well another does. Out upon it, what have forgot?

2 MINUTE INTERMISSION

II, 1

... (Ford) If I find her honest, I lose my labour; if she be otherwise, the labour well bestowed.

II, 2

... (Ford) Sett'r three minutes too soon than a minute too late. Fie, fie, cuckoo.

II, 3

... (Host) Let us wag then.

(Caius) Come at my heels, Jack Ruby.

II, 4

... (Shallow) Trust me, a bad host; follow gentlemen, follow.

5 MINUTE INTERMISSION

III, 1

... (Host) Falstaff, & drink canary with me.

(All) Have with ou to see this mon-

III, 2

... (Ford) Come wife, come Mrs Page; I pray you pardon me; I pray you heartily,

III, 3

(over)

THE PASTORAL BY CH. MARLOWE.

Referred to Act iii. Sc. 1, of the foregoing Play.

COME, live with me, and be my love,
And we will all the pleasures prove,
That hills and valleys, dales and field,
And all the craggy mountains yield.

There will we sit upon the rocks,
And see the shepherds feed their flocks,
By shallow rivers, by whose falls
Melodious birds sing madrigals :

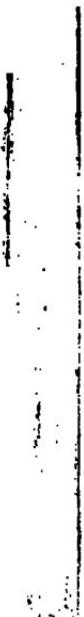
There will I make thee beds of roses
With a thousand fragrant posies,
A cap of flowers and a kirtle
Embroider'd all with leaves of myrtle ;

A gown made of the finest wool,
Which from the pretty lambs we pull ;
Fair lined slippers for the cold,
With buckles of the purest gold ;

A belt of straw, and ivy buds,
With coral clasps and amber studs :
And if these pleasures may thee move,
Come, live with me, and be my love.

Thy silver dishes for thy meat,
As precious as the gods do eat,
Shall on thy ivory table be
Prepared each day for thee and me.

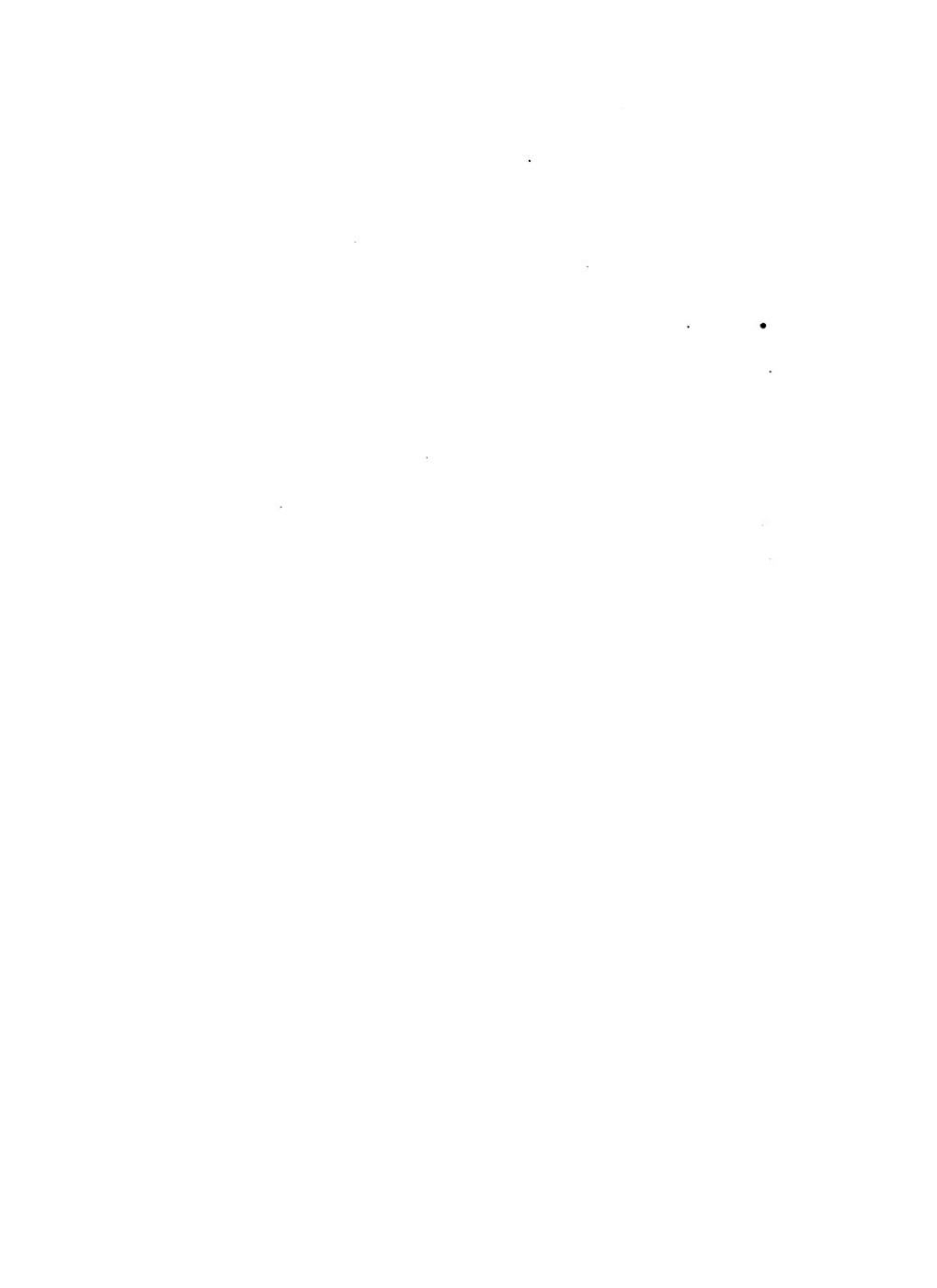
The shepherd swains shall dance and sing
For thy delight, each May morning :
If these delights thy mind may move,
Then live with me, and be my love.





MEASURE FOR MEASURE.









MEASURE FOR MEASURE



MEASURE FOR MEASURE.

PRELIMINARY REMARKS.

SHAKESPEARE took the fable of this play from the Promos and Cassandra of George Whetstone, published in 1578, of which this is "The Argument."

"In the city of Julio (sometimes under the dominion of Corvinus King of Hungary and Bohemia), there was a law, that what man soever committed adultery should lose his head, and the woman offender should wear some disguised apparel, during her life, to make her infamously noted. This severe law, by the favour of some merciful magistrate, became little regarded, until the time of Lord Promos's authority; who convicting a young gentleman named Andrugio of incontinency, condemned both him and his minion to the execution of this statute. Andrugio had a very virtuous and beautiful gentlewoman to his sister, named Cassandra. Cassandra, to enlarge her brother's life, submitted an humble petition to the Lord Promos. Promos regarding her good behaviour, and fantasying her great beauty, was much delighted with the sweet order of her talk; and doing good, that evil might come thereof, for a time he reprieved her brother: but wicked man, turning his liking into unlawful lust, he set down the spoil of her honour, ransom for her brother's life: chaste Cassandra, abhorring both him and his suit, by no persuasion would yield to this ransom. But in fine, won by the importunity of her brother (pleading for life), upon these conditions she agreed to Promos: First, that he should pardon her brother, and after marry her. Promos, as fearless in promise, as careless in performance, with solemn vow signed her conditions; but worse than any infidel, his will satisfied, he performed neither the one nor the other: for to keep his authority unspotted with favour, and to prevent Cassandra's clamours, he commanded the jailer secretly to present Cassandra with her brother's head. The jailer [touched] with the outrages of Andrugio (abhorring Promos's lewdness), by the providence of God provided thus for his safety. He presented Cassandra with a felon's head newly executed; who knew it not, being mangled,

from her brother's (who was set at liberty by the jailer). [She] was so aggrieved at this treachery, that, at the point to kill herself, she spared that stroke to be avenged of Promos; and devising a way, she concluded, to make her fortunes known to the king. She, executing this resolution, was so highly favoured of the king, that forthwith he hasted to do justice on Promos: whose judgment was to marry Cassandra, to repair her crazed honour; which done, for his heinous offence, he should lose his head. This marriage solemnized, Cassandra tied in the greatest bonds of affection to her husband, became an earnest suitor for his life: the king tendering the general benefit of the commonweal before her special case, although he favoured her much, would not grant her suit. Andrugio (disguised among the company), sorrowing the grief of his sister, bewrayed his safety, and craved pardon. The king to renown the virtues of Cassandra, pardoned both him and Promos. The circumstances of this rare history, in action lively followeth."

Whetstone, however, has not afforded a very correct analysis of his play, which contains a mixture of comic scenes, between a bawd, a pimp, felons, &c. together with some serious situations which are not described. A hint, like a seed, is more or less prolific, according to the qualities of the soil on which it is thrown. This story, which in the hands of Whetstone produced little more than barren insipidity, under the culture of Shakespeare became fertile of entertainment. The curious reader may see the old play of Promos and Cassandra among Six old plays on which Shakespeare founded, &c. published by Mr. Steevens, printed for S. Leacroft, Charing Cross. The piece exhibits an almost complete embryo of Measure for Measure; yet the hints on which it is formed are so slight, that it is nearly as impossible to detect them, as it is to point out in the acorn the future ramifications of the oak. The story originally came from the Hecatomithi of Cinthio. Decad 8, novel 5, and is repeated in the Tragic Histories of Belleforest.

This play was most probably written in 1603, as would appear by the allusions to the war with Spain, and the *sweat*, i. e. the plague called the sweating-sickness. We know from the amount of the expenses of the Revels, published by Mr. Cunningham, that it was represented at court on St. Stephen's night (26 Dec.) 1604. The lines which seem evidently to allude to King James' dislike to being surrounded by crowds of the people, show that they were at least written after his accession.

“And even so
The general subjects to a well-wish'd King,
Quit their own part, and in obsequious fondness
 Crowd to his presence, where their untaught love
 Must needs appear offence.”

may therefore conclude with Malone that it was written
the close of the year 1603, or the commencement of 1604.
was first printed in the folio of 1623. The text in the folio
is incorrectly printed, abounding with typographical errors
and corrupt readings.

of this play, and *Much Ado about Nothing*, Sir William
Shakespeare contrived, with some ingenuity, the plot of his *Love's
Labour's Lost*.



PERSONS REPRESENTED.

VINCENTIO, *Duke of Vienna.*

ANGELO, *Lord Deputy in the Duke's absence.*

ESCALUS, *an ancient Lord, joined with Angelo in the
Deputation.*

CLAUDIO, *a young Gentleman.*

LUCIO, *a Fantastic.*

TWO other like Gentlemen.

VARRIUS, *a Gentleman, servant to the Duke.*

Provost.

THOMAS, } *Two Friars.*
PETER, }

A Justice.

ELBOW, *a simple Constable.*

FROTH, *a foolish Gentleman.*

Clown, *Servant to Mrs. Over-done.*

ABHORSON, *an Executioner.*

BARNARDINE, *a dissolute Prisoner.*

ISABELLA, *Sister to Claudio.*

MARIANA, *betrothed to Angelo.*

JULIET, *beloved by Claudio.*

FRANCISCA, *a Nun.*

MISTRESS OVER-DONE, *a Bawd.*

**Lords, Gentlemen, Guards, Officers, and other
Attendants.**

SCENE, Vienna



MEASURE FOR MEASURE.

ACT I.

SCENE I. *An Apartment in the Duke's Palace.*

Enter DUKE, ESCALUS, Lords, and Attendants.

Duke.



SCALUS !

Escal. My lord.

Duke. Of government the properties to
unfold,

Vould seem in me to affect speech and discourse ;
Since I am put to know, that your own science
Exceeds, in that, the lists of all advice
My strength can give you : then no more remains
But thereto your sufficiency¹, as your worth is able,

¹ The old copy reads—

Then no more remains

But *that to* your sufficiency, as your worth is able,
And let them work.

In which passage we have three pages of notes in the variorum edition. No emendation or explanation of this passage hitherto offered is satisfactory ; I feel confident that our great poet never wrote "But *that to*," following as it does "Exceeds, *in that*." The remedy lies in the trifling correction of a press error. The word *hereto* was probably written *thereto*, and was mistaken by the printer for *thato*. The sense of the passage will then be "Since am so placed as to know that you are better skilled in the nature

And let them work. The nature of our people,
 Our city's institutions, and the terms
 For common justice, you are as pregnant² in,
 As art and practice hath enriched any
 That we remember: There is our commission,
 From which we would not have you warp.—Call
 hither,

I say, bid come before us Angelo.—

[Exit an Attendant.

What figure of us think you he will bear?
 For you must know, we have with special soul
 Elected him our absence to supply;
 Lent him our terror, drest him with our love;
 And given his deputation all the organs
 Of our own power: What think you of it?

Escal. If any in Vienna be of worth
 To undergo such ample grace and honour,
 It is lord Angelo.

Enter ANGELO.

Duke. Look, where he comes.
Ang. Always obedient to your grace's will,
 I come to know your pleasure.

Duke. Angelo,
 There is a kind of character in thy life,

of government than I am, it would be idle in me to lecture you on the subject. Then nothing more is wanting but *thereto*, your sufficient authority (i. e. to govern) as you have the ability, and let them (your skill and authority) come into operation." *Sufficiency* is sufficient authority, the commission which the Duke just after delivers to Angelo. Shakespeare uses the word *thereto* just in the same sense in The Winter's Tale, Act i. Sc. 2.

Camillo,—

As you are certainly a gentleman, *thereto*
 Clerk-like experienc'd, which no less adorns
 Our gentry, than our parents' noble names,
 In whose success we are gentle, &c.

i. e. ready in.

t, to the observer doth thy history
y unfold : Thyself and thy belongings
not thine own so proper, as to waste
self upon thy virtues, them on thee.³
ven doth with us, as we with torches do ;
light them for themselves : for if our virtues
not go forth of us, 'twere all alike
f we had them not. Spirits are not finely touch'd,
to fine issues : nor nature never lends⁴
smallest scruple of her excellence,
, like a thrifty goddess, she determines
self the glory of a creditor,
h thanks and use. But I do bend my speech
one that can my part in him advértise⁵ ;
d therefore.—Angelo ;
ur remove, be thou at full ourself ;
tality and Mercy in Vienna
e in thy tongue and heart⁶. Old Escalus,
ugh first in question, is thy secondary :
e thy commission.

Ang. Now, good my lord,
there be some more test made of my metal,
ore so noble and so great a figure
stamp'd upon it.

Duke. No more evasion :
have with a leaven'd⁷ and prepared choice

The old copy has “*they* on thee.”
Two negatives, not employed to make an affirmative, are common in Shakespeare's writings, so in Julius Cæsar :

‘*Nor to no Roman else.*’

i. e. to one who is already sufficiently conversant with the
re and duties of my office;—of that *office* which *I have now
ated to him.*

i. e. I delegate to thy tongue the power of pronouncing sentence
eath, and to thy heart the privilege of exercising mercy.

A choice *mature, concocted, fermented*; i. e. not hasty, but
iderate.

Proceeded to you ; therefore take your honours,
 Our haste from hence is of so quick condition,
 That it prefers itself, and leaves unquestion'd
 Matters of needful value. We shall write to you,
 As time and our concernings shall impótune,
 How it goes with us ; and do look to know
 What doth befall you here. So, fare you well :
 To the hopeful execution do I leave you
 Of your commissions.

Ang. Yet, give leave, my lord,
 That we may bring you something on the way.

Duke. My haste may not admit it ;
 Nor need you on mine honour have to do
 With any scruple : your scope⁸ is as mine own ;
 So to enforce or qualify the laws,
 As to your soul seems good. Give me your hand ;
 I'll privily away : I love the people,
 But do not like to stage me to their eyes :
 Though it do well, I do not relish well
 Their loud applause, and *aves*⁹ vehement ;
 Nor do I think the man of safe discretion,
 That does affect it. Once more, fare you well.

Ang. The heavens give safety to your purposes !

Escal. Lead forth, and bring you back in happiness.
Duke. I thank you : Fare you well. [Exit.]

Escal. I shall desire you, sir, to give me leave
 To have free speech with you ; and it concerns me
 To look into the bottom of my place :
 A power I have ; but of what strength and nature
 I am not yet instructed.

Ang. 'Tis so with me :—Let us withdraw together,
 And we may soon our satisfaction have
 Touching that point.

Escal. I'll wait upon your honour.
 [Exit.]

⁸ Scope is extent of power

⁹ Aves are hauilings.

SCENE II. A Street.

Enter LUCIO and two Gentlemen.

Lucio. If the duke, with the other dukes, come not to composition with the king of Hungary, why, then all the dukes fall upon the king.

1 *Gent.* Heaven grant us its peace, but not the king of Hungary's!

2 *Gent.* Amen.

Lucio. Thou concludest like the sanctimonious pirate, that went to sea with the ten commandments, but scraped one out of the table.

2 *Gent.* Thou shalt not steal?

Lucio. Ay, that he razed.

1 *Gent.* Why?

Lucio. 'Twas a commandment to command the captain and all the rest from their functions; they put forth to steal: There's not a soldier of us all, that, in the thanksgiving before meat, doth relish the petition well that prays for peace¹.

2 *Gent.* I never heard any soldier dislike it.

Lucio. I believe thee; for, I think, thou never wast where grace was said.

2 *Gent.* No? a dozen times at least.

1 *Gent.* What? in metre?

Lucio. In any proportion, or in any language.

1 *Gent.* I think, or in any religion.

Lucio. Ay! why not? Grace is grace, despite of all controversy: As for example; Thou thyself art a wicked villain, despite of all grace.

1 *Gent.* Well, there went but a pair of shears between us².

Lucio. I grant; as there may between the lists and the velvet: Thou art the list.

¹ This speech is erroneously given to the 1 *Gent.*, in the old copies.

² This was a common saying, equivalent to they were both of a piece.

1 *Gent.* And thou the velvet : thou art good velvet ; thou art a three-pil'd piece, I warrant thee : I had as lief be a list of an English kersey, as be pil'd, as thou art pil'd, for a French velvet³. Do I speak feelingly now ?

Lucio. I think thou dost ; and, indeed, with most painful feeling of thy speech : I will, out of thine own confession, learn to begin thy health ; but, whilst I live, forget to drink after thee.

1 *Gent.* I think, I have done myself wrong ; have I not ?

2 *Gent.* Yes, that thou hast ; whether thou art tainted, or free.

Lucio. Behold, behold, where madam Mitigation comes !

1 *Gent.* I have purchased as many diseases under her roof, as come to—⁴

2 *Gent.* To what, I pray ?

1 *Gent.* Judge.

2 *Gent.* To three thousand dollars a-year⁵.

1 *Gent.* Ay, and more.

Lucio. A French crown more.

1 *Gent.* Thou art always figuring diseases in me : but thou art full of error ; I am sound.

Lucio. Nay, not as one would say, healthy ; but so sound, as things that are hollow ; thy bones are hollow : impiety has made a feast of thee.

³ “ *Pil'd*, for a French velvet.”—Velvet was esteemed according to the richness of the *pile* ; three-pil'd was the richest. But *Pil'd* also means *bald*. The jest alludes to the loss of hair in a certain disease. Lucio, finding the Gentleman understands the distemper so well, and mentions it so *feelingly*, promises to remember to drink his *health*, but to forget to *drink after him*. In times the cup of an infected person was thought to be cons-

his speech also forms part of Lucio's in the old copies. There a quibble is intended between *dollar* and *dolour*. It again in The Tempest, Act i. Sc. 1.

Enter Bawd.

1 *Gent.* How now? Which of your hips has the most profound sciatica?

Bawd. Well, well; there's one yonder arrested, and carried to prison, was worth five thousand of you all.

1 *Gent.* Who's that, I pray thee?

Bawd. Marry, sir, that's Claudio; signior Claudio.

1 *Gent.* Claudio to prison! 'tis not so.

Bawd. Nay, but I know, 'tis so; I saw him arrested; saw him carried away; and which is more, within these three days his head's⁶ to be chopped off.

Lucio. But, after all this fooling, I would not have it so: Art thou sure of this?

Bawd. I am too sure of it: and it is for getting madam Julietta with child.

Lucio. Believe me, this may be: he promised to meet me two hours since; and he was ever precise in promise-keeping.

2 *Gent.* Besides, you know, it draws something near to the speech we had to such a purpose.

1 *Gent.* But most of all, agreeing with the proclamation.

Lucio. Away; let's go learn the truth of it.

[*Exeunt Lucio and Gentlemen.*]

Bawd. Thus, what with the war, what with the sweat, what with the gallows, and what with poverty, I am custom-shrunk. How now? what's the news with you?

Enter Clown.

Clo. Yonder man is carried to prison.

Bawd. Well; what has he done?

Clo. A woman.

Bawd. But what's his offence?

Clo. Groping for trouts in a peculiar river.

⁶ The old copy has head.

Bawd. What, is there a maid with child by him?

Clo. No; but there's a woman with maid by him: You have not heard of the proclamation, have you?

Bawd. What proclamation, man?

Clo. All houses in the suburbs of Vienna must be pluck'd down.

Bawd. And what shall become of those in the city?

Clo. They shall stand for seed: they had gone down too, but that a wise burgher put in for them.

Bawd. But shall all our houses of resort in the suburbs be pull'd down⁷?

Clo. To the ground, mistress.

Bawd. Why, here's a change, indeed, in the commonwealth! What shall become of me?

Clo. Come, fear not you; good counsellors lack no clients: though you change your place, you need not change your trade; I'll be your tapster still. Courage; there will be pity taken on you: you that have worn your eyes almost out in the service, you will be considered.

Bawd. What's to do here, Thomas Tapster? Let's withdraw.

Clo. Here comes signior Claudio, led by the provost to prison: and there's madam Juliet. [Exeunt.

SCENE III¹. *The same.*

Enter Provost, CLAUDIO, JULIET, and Officers; LUCIO, and two Gentlemen.

Claud. Fellow, why dost thou show me thus to the world?

Bear me to prison where I am committed.

⁷ In one of the Scotch Laws of James, it is ordered, "that common women be put at the utmost endes of townes, queire least peril of fire is." Licensed houses of resort were in some towns of the continent placed in the suburbs.

¹ This is properly not a new scene, as there is no change of place.

Prov. I do it not in evil disposition,
But from lord Angelo by special charge.

Claud. Thus can the demi-god, Authority,
Make us pay down for our offence by weight.—
The words of heaven ;—on whom it will, it will ;
On whom it will not, so : yet still 'tis just².

Lucio. Why, how now, Claudio? whence comes this restraint?

Claud. From too much liberty, my Lucio, liberty ;
As surfeit is the father of much fast,
So every scope by the immoderate use
Turns to restraint : Our natures do pursue,
(Like rats that ravin down their proper bane)
A thirsty evil ; and when we drink, we die³.

Lucio. If I could speak so wisely under an arrest,
I would send for certain of my creditors : And yet, to say the truth, I had as lief have the poppery of freedom, as the morality⁴ of imprisonment.—What's thy offence, Claudio?

Claud. What, but to speak of would offend again.

Lucio. What is it? murder?

Claud. No.

Lucio. Lechery?

Claud. Call it so.

Prov. Away, sir ; you must go.

Claud. One word, good friend :—Lucio, a word with you. [Takes him aside]

² Authority being absolute in Angelo, is finely styled by Claudio, the demi-god, whose decrees are as little to be questioned as the words of heaven. The poet alludes to a passage in St. Paul's Epist. to the Romans, xi. 15—18: "I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy."

³ So, in Chapman's Revenge for Honour :

" Like poison'd rats, which, when they've swallowed
The pleasing bane, rest not until they drink,
And can rest then much less, until they burst."

⁴ The old copies have mortality. Davenant corrected it in his iteration of the play.

Lucio. A hundred, if they'll do you any good.—
Is lechery so look'd after?

Claud. Thus stands it with me :—Upon a true con-
tráct,

I got possession of Julietta's bed ;
You know the lady ; she is fast my wife,
Save that we do the denunciation lack
Of outward order : this we came not to,
Only for propagation⁵ of a dower
Remaining in the coffer of her friends ;
From whom we thought it meet to hide our love,
Till time had made them for us. But it chances,
The stealth of our most mutual entertainment,
With character too gross, is writ on Juliet.

Lucio. With child, perhaps ?

Claud. Unhappily, even so.

And the new deputy now for the duke,—
Whether it be the fault and glimpse of newness ;
Or whether that the body public be
A hórsé whereon the governor doth ride,
Who, newly in the seat, that it may know
He can command, lets it straight feel the spur :

⁵ The old sense of the word is “promoting, inlarging, *increas-ing*, spreading.” It appears that Claudio would say : “for the sake of *promoting* such a dower as her friends might hereafter bestow on her, when time had reconciled them to her clandestine marriage.” The verb is as obscurely used by Chapman in the Sixteenth book of the *Odyssey*:

“to try if we
Alone may *propagate* to victory
Our bold encounters.”

Shakespeare uses “To *propagate* their states,” for, to *improve* or *pro-mote* their conditions, in *Timon of Athens*, Act i. Sc. 1. Mr. Collier’s folio substitutes *procuration*, and for *denunciation* in the line above reads *pronunciation*; but to *denounce* and *denounced* are several times used by Shakespeare where we should now perhaps use *pronounce*, and *pronounced*. To change the word would, therefore, be to violate the language peculiar to the poet. Neither of the proposed alterations are admissible.

Whether the tyranny be in his place,
 Or in his eminence that fills it up,
 I stagger in :—But this new governor
 Awakes me all the enrolled penalties,
 Which have, like unsavour'd armour, hung by the wall
 So long, that nineteen zodiacks⁶ have gone round,
 And none of them been worn ; and, for a name,
 Now puts the drowsy and neglected act
 Freshly on me :—'tis surely, for a name.

Lucio. I warrant, it is : and thy head stands so tickle⁷ on thy shoulders, that a milk-maid, if she be in love, may sigh it off. Send after the duke, and appeal to him.

Claud. I have done so, but he's not to be found.
 I pr'ythee, Lucio, do me this kind service :
 This day my sister should the cloister enter,
 And there receive her approbation⁸ :
 Acquaint her with the danger of my state ;
 Implore her, in my voice, that she make friends
 To the strict deputy ; bid herself assay him ;
 I have great hope in that : for in her youth
 There is a prone⁹ and speechless dialect,
 Such as moves men ; besides, she hath prosperous art
 When she will play with reason and discourse,
 And well she can persuade.

Lucio. I pray, she may : as well for the encouragement of the like, which else would stand under grievous imposition ; as for the enjoying of thy life, which¹⁰ I would be sorry should be thus foolishly lost at a game of tick-tack¹¹. I'll to her.

⁶ *Zodiacs*, i. e. *yearly circles*.

⁷ *Tickle*, for *ticklish*.

⁸ *Approbation*, i. e. enter on her *noviciate* or *probation*.

⁹ *Prone* is *prompt* or *ready*.

¹⁰ *The old copies have who*, an evident typographical error.

¹¹ *Jouer au tric trac* is used in French in a wanton sense.

Claud. I thank you, good friend Lucio.

Lucio. Within two hours,—

Claud. Come, officer, away.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. *A Monastery.*

Enter DUKE and Friar THOMAS.

Duke. No ; holy Father ; throw away that thought;
Believe not that the dribbling dart of love¹
Can pierce a cōmplete bosom² : why I desire thee
To give me secret harbour, hath a purpose
More grave and wrinkled than the aims and ends
Of burning youth.

Fri. May your grace speak of it?

Duke. My holy sir, none better knows than you
How I have ever lov'd the life remov'd ;
And held in idle price to haunt assemblies,
Where youth, and cost, and witless bravery keeps³.
I have delivered to lord Angelo
(A man of stricture⁴ and firm abstinence),
My absolute power and place here in Vienna,
And he supposes me travell'd to Poland ;
For so I have strew'd it in the common ear,
And so it is receiv'd : Now, pious sir,
You will demand of me, why I do this ?

Fri. Gladly, my lord.

Duke. We have strict statutes and most biting laws,
(The needful bits and curbs to headstrong steeds)⁵,
Which for these fourteen years we have let sleep ;

¹ A *dribbed* or *dribbling* shot was a Toxopholite expression for a weak one falling short of the mark.

² "A complete bosom" is a bosom completely armed.

³ *Bravery* is showy dress. *Keeps*, i. e. *resides*.

⁴ *Stricture*, i. e. *strictness*.

The needful bits and curbs to headstrong *steeds*." The old as *weeds*, an evident misprint. Theobald made the necessary correction.

Even like an o'ergrown lion in a cave,
 That goes not out to prey : Now, as fond fathers,
 Having bound up the threat'ning twigs of birch,
 Only to stick it in their children's sight,
 For terror, not to use ; in time the rod's⁶
 More mock'd than fear'd : so our decrees,
 Dead to infliction, to themselves are dead
 And liberty plucks justice by the nose ;
 The baby beats the nurse, and quite athwart
 Goes all decorum.

Fri. It rested in your grace
 To unloose this tied-up justice, when you pleas'd :
 And it in you more dreadful would have seem'd,
 Than in lord Angelo.

Duke. I do fear, too dreadful :
 Sith 'twas my fault to give the people scope,
 'Twould be my tyranny to strike, and gall them
 For what I bid them do : For we bid this be done,
 When evil deeds have their permissive pass,
 And not the punishment. Therefore, indeed, my father,
 I have on Angelo impos'd the office ;
 Who may, in the ambush of my name, strike home,
 And yet my nature never in the fight,
 To do in slander⁷ : And to behold his sway,
 I will, as 'twere a brother of your order,

⁶ The *s* at the end of *rod's* is wanting in the old copies. It is supplied by the annotator of my copy of the second folio.

⁷ This is the reading of the old copy. Since Hanmer's time it has been usual to print

“And yet my nature never in the *sight*,
 To do *it* slander.”

The meaning appears to be, And yet my too lenient nature never appearing in the *contest* with crime to do any thing in slander of Angelo's severe justice. Perhaps we might read

“And yet my nature never in the *light*,
 To do *him* slander.”

i.e. To disparage Angelo by the contrast.

Visit both prince and people : therefore, I pr'ythee,
 Supply me with the habit, and instruct me
 How I may formally in person bear me
 Like a true friar. More reasons for this action,
 At our more leisure shall I render you ;
 Only, this one :—Lord Angelo is precise ;
 Stands at a guard with envy ; scarce confesses
 That his blood flows, or that his appetite
 Is more to bread than stone : Hence shall we see,
 If power change purpose, what our seemers be.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE V. A Nunnery.

Enter ISABELLA and FRANCISCA.

Isab. And have you nuns no further privileges ?
Fran. Are not these large enough ?

Isab. Yes, truly : I speak not as desiring more ;
 But rather wishing a more strict restraint
 Upon the sisterhood, the votarists of Saint Clare.

Lucio. Ho ! Peace be in this place ! [Within.]
Isab. Who's that which calls ?
Fran. It is a man's voice : Gentle Isabella,
 Turn you the key, and know his business of him ;
 You may, I may not ; you are yet unsworn :
 When you have vow'd, you must not speak with men,
 But in the presence of the prioress :
 Then, if you speak, you must not show your face ;
 Or, if you show your face, you must not speak.
 He calls again ; I pray you, answer him.

[Exit FRANCISCA.]

Isab. Peace and prosperity ! Who is 't that calls ?

Enter LUCIO.

Lucio. Hail, virgin, if you be ; as those cheek-roses
 Proclaim you are no less : Can you so stead me,

As bring me to the sight of Isabella,
A novice of this place, and the fair sister
To her unhappy brother Claudio ?

Isab. Why her unhappy brother ? let me ask ;
The rather, for I now must make you know
I am that Isabella, and his sister.

Lucio. Gentle and fair, your brother kindly greets
you :
Not to be weary with you, he's in prison.

Isab. Woe me ! For what ?
Lucio. For that, which, if myself might be his judge,
He should receive his punishment in thanks :
He hath got his friend with child.

Isab. Sir, make me not your sport¹.
Lucio. 'Tis true. I would not,—though 'tis my
familiar sin

With maids to seem the lapwing², and to jest,
Tongue far from heart,—play with all virgins so :
I hold you as a thing ensky'd, and sainted ;
By your renouncement, an immortal spirit ;
And to be talked with in sincerity,
As with a saint.

Isab. You do blaspheme the good, in mocking me.
Lucio. Do not believe it. Fewness and truth³, 'tis
thus :

Your brother and his lover have embrac'd :
As those that feed grow full ; as blossoming time,

¹ The old copy reads "Sir, make me not your *story*." Davey's reading in the alteration of this play, is *scorn*. But Lucio's reply shows that it should be *sport*.

² This bird is said to draw pursuers from her nest by crying in other places. This was formerly the subject of a proverb, "The lapwing cries most, farthest from her nest," i. e. *tongue far from heart*. So, in The Comedy of Errors :

" *Adr.* Far from her nest the lapwing cries away ;
My heart prays for him, though my tongue do curse."

³ *Fewness and truth*, i. e. *in few and true words*.

That from the seedness the bare fallow brings
To teeming foison⁴; even so her plenteous womb
Expresseth his full tilth⁵ and husbandry.

Isab. Some one with child by him?—My cousin Juliet?

Lucio. Is she your cousin?

Isab. Adoptedly; asschool-maids change their name
By vain though apt affection.

Lucio. She it is.

Isab. O let him marry her!

Lucio. This is the point.

The duke is very strangely gone from hence;
Bore many gentlemen, myself being one,
In hand, and hope of action: but we do learn
By those that know the very nerves of state,
His givings out were of an infinite distance
From his true-meant design. Upon his place,
And with full line of his authority,
Governs lord Angelo; a man, whose blood
Is very snow-broth; one who never feels
The wanton stings and motions of the sense;
But doth rebate⁶ and blunt his natural edge
With profits of the mind, study and fast.
He (to give fear to use⁷ and liberty,
Which have, for long, run by the hideous law,
As mice by lions), hath pick'd out an act,
Under whose heavy sense your brother's life
Falls into forfeit: he arrests him on it;
And follows close the rigour of the statute,
To make him an example: all hope is gone,
Unless you have the grace by your fair prayer
To soften Angelo: And that's my pith

⁴ Teeming foison is abundant produce.

⁵ Tilth is tillage. See Shakespeare's third Sonnet.

⁶ To rebate is to make dull: *Aciem ferri hebetare*.—Baret.

⁷ i. e. to intimidate use, or practices long countenanceustom

Of business 'twixt you and your poor brother.

Isab. Doth he so seek his life?

Lucio. Has censur'd⁸ him
Already; and, as I hear, the provost hath
A warrant for his execution.

Isab. Alas! what poor ability's in me
To do him good?

Lucio. Assay the power you have.

Isab. My power! Alas! I doubt,—

Lucio. Our doubts are traitors,
And make us lose the good we oft might win,
By fearing to attempt. Go to lord Angelo,
And let him learn to know, when maidens sue,
Men give like gods; but when they weep and kneel,
All their petitions are as freely theirs
As they themselves would owe⁹ them.

Isab. I'll see what I can do.

Lucio. But speedily.

Isab. I will about it straight;
No longer staying but to give the mother
Notice of my affair. I humbly thank you:
Commend me to my brother: soon at night
I'll send him certain word of my success.

Lucio. I take my leave of you.

Isab. Good sir, adieu.

[*Exeunt.*

⁸ To *censure* is to *judge*. This is the poet's general meaning for the word, but the editors have given him several others. We have it again in the next scene:

"When I that *censure* him do so offend,
Let mine own judgment pattern out my death."

⁹ To *owe* is to *have*, to *possess*.

ACT II.

SCENE I. *A Hall in Angelo's House.*

*Enter ANGELO, ESCALUS, a Justice, Provost,
Officers, and other Attendants.*

Angele.

WE must not make a scare-crow of the law,
Setting it up to fear¹ the birds of prey,
And let it keep one shape, till custom make it
Their perch, and not their terror.

Escal. Ay, but yet
Let us be keen, and rather cut a little,
Than fall², and bruise to death: Alas! this gentleman,
Whom I would save, had a most noble father,
Let but your honour know,
(Whom I believe to be most strait in virtue),
That, in the working of your own affections,
Had time coher'd with place, or place with wishing,
Or that the resolute acting of your blood
Could have attain'd the effect of your own purpose,
Whether you had not, sometime in your life,
Err'd in this point which now you censure him³,
And pull'd the law upon you.

Ang. 'Tis one thing to be tempted, Escalus,
Another thing to fall. I not deny,
The jury, passing on the prisoner's life,
May, in the sworn twelve, have a thief or two
Guiltier than him they try: What's open made
To justice, that justice seizes. What know the laws,

¹ The verb active, to fear is to affright.

² i. e. throw down; to fall a tree is still used for to fell it.

³ To complete the sense of this line for seems to be required:
—“which now you censure him for.” But Shakespeare frequently
uses elliptical expressions.

That thieves do pass⁴ on thieves? 'Tis very pregnant⁵,
 The jewel that we find, we stoop and take it,
 Because we see it; but what we do not see,
 We tread upon, and never think of it.
 You may not so extenuate his offence,
 For⁶ I have had such faults; but rather tell me,
 When I, that censure him, do so offend,
 Let mine own judgment pattern out my death,
 And nothing come in partial. Sir, he must die.

Escal. Be it as your wisdom will.

Ang. Where is the provost?

Prov. Here, if it like your honour.

Ang. See that Claudio
 Be executed by nine to-morrow morning:
 Bring him his confessor, let him be prepar'd;
 For that's the utmost of his pilgrimage.

[*Exit Provost.*

Escal. Well, heaven forgive him; and forgive us all!
 Some rise by sin, and some by virtue fall:
 Some run from brakes⁷ of vice, and answer none;
 And some condemned for a fault alone.

⁴ An old forensic term, signifying to *pass judgment*, or *sentence*.

⁵ *Full of force or conviction*; or *full of proof in itself*. So, in Othello, Act ii. Sc. 1, "As it is a most *pregnant* and unfore'd position."

⁶ i. e. Because I have had such faults.

⁷ The first folio here reads—"Some run from *brakes of ice*, and answer none." The correction was made by Rowe. *Brakes* here most probably signify *thorny perplexities*, as in K. Henry VIII. Act i. Sc. 2.

"'Tis but the fate of place, and the rough *brake*,
 That virtue must go through."

A *brake* also signified any engine or instrument, as a flax-brake, a brake for horses, &c. and hence also a trap or snare. Thus Skelton's *Eleinour Rummin*. It was a state to take—the devil in a *brake*. And in Holland's *Leaguer*, a Comedy, by Sh. Mar-mion:

her I'll make

A stale to catch this courtier in a *brake*.

And, in Cavendish's Life of Wolsey, p. 84, "At last, as ye have

Enter ELBOW, FROTH, Clown, Officers, &c.

Elb. Come, bring them away : if these be good people in a common-weal, that do nothing but use their abuses in common houses, I know no law ; bring them away.

Ang. How now, sir ! What's your name ? and what's the matter ?

Elb. If it please your honour, I am the poor duke's constable, and my name is Elbow ; I do lean upon justice, sir, and do bring in here before your good honour two notorious benefactors.

Ang. Benefactors ! Well ; what benefactors are they ? are they not malefactors ?

Elb. If it please your honour, I know not well what they are : but precise villains they are, that I am sure of ; and void of all profanation in the world, that good christians ought to have.

Escal. This comes off well⁸ ; here's a wise officer.

Ang. Go to : What quality are they of ? Elbow is your name ? Why dost thou not speak, Elbow ?

Clo. He cannot, sir ; he's out at elbow.

Ang. What are you, sir ?

Elb. He, sir ? a tapster, sir ; parcel-bawd ; one that serves a bad woman ; whose house, sir, was, as they say, plucked down in the suburbs ; and now she professes⁹ a hot-house, which, I think, is a very ill house too.

heard here before, how divers of the great estates and Lords of the council lay in await with my lady Anne Boleyn, to espy a convenient time and occasion to take the Cardinal in a *broke*. Mr. Knight retains the old reading. Mr. Collier alters it to "breaks of ice," and by mistake says, that this is the reading of the old copies.

⁸ *This comes off well*, i. e. *is well told*. The meaning of this phrase, when seriously applied to speech, is, "This is well delivered," "this story is well told." But in the present instance

is used ironically.

⁹ *Professes a hot-house*, i. e. keeps a bagnio.

Escal. How know you that?

Eb. My wife, sir, whom I detest before heaven and
ur honour,—

Escal. How! thy wife?

Eb. Ay, sir; whom, I thank heaven, is an honest
oman,—

Escal. Dost thou detest her therefore?

Eb. I say, sir, I will detest myself also, as well as
e, that this house, if it be not a bawd's house, it is
ty of her life, for it is a naughty house.

Escal. How dost thou know that, constable?

Eb. Marry, sir, by my wife; who, if she had been
woman cardinaly given, might have been accused in
nunciation, adultery, and all uncleanness there.

Escal. By the woman's means?

Eb. Ay, sir, by mistress Over-done's means: but
she spit in his face, so she defied him.

Clo. Sir, if it please your honour, this is not so.

Eb. Prove it before these varlets here, thou honour-
le man, prove it.

Escal. Do you hear how he misplaces?

[To ANGELO.]

Clo. Sir, she came in great with child; and longing
(aving your honour's reverence), for stew'd prunes¹⁰:
we had but two in the house, which at that very
stant time stood, as it were, in a fruit-dish, a dish of
me three pence; your honours have seen such dishes;
ey are not China dishes, but very good dishes.

Escal. Go to, go to: no matter for the dish, sir.

Clo. No, indeed, sir, not of a pin; you are therein
the right: but, to the point. As I say, this mis-
ess Elbow, being, as I say, with child, and being
rest belly'd, and longing, as I said, for prunes; and
aving but two in the dish, as I said, master Froth-
ere, this very man, having eaten the rest, as I said,

¹⁰ A favourite dish, anciently common in brothels.

and, as I say, paying for them very honestly ;—for, as you know, master Froth, I cou'd not give you three pence again.

Froth. No, indeed.

Clo. Very well : you being then, if you be remember'd, cracking the stones of the aforesaid prunes.

Froth. Ay, so I did, indeed.

Clo. Why, very well : I telling you then, if you be remember'd, that such a one, and such a one, were past cure of the thing you wot of, unless they kept very good diet, as I told you.

Froth. All this is true.

Clo. Why, very well then.

Escal. Come, you are a tedious fool : to the purpose,—What was done to Elbow's wife, that he hath cause to complain of ? Come me to what was done to her.

Clo. Sir, your honour cannot come to that yet.

Escal. No, sir, nor I mean it not.

Clo. Sir, but you shall come to it, by your honour's leave : And, I beseech you, look into master Froth here, sir ; a man of fourscore pound a year ; whose father died at Hallowmas :—Was't not at Hallowmas, master Froth ?

Froth. All-hallond¹¹ eve.

Clo. Why, very well ; I hope here be truths : He, sir, sitting, as I say, in a lower¹² chair, sir ;—'twas in the *Bunch of Grapes*, where, indeed, you have a delight to sit : Have you not ?

Froth. I have so ; because it is an open room, and good for winter^a.

¹¹ *All-hallond Eve*, the Eve of All Saints' day.

¹² Every house had formerly what was called a *low chair*, designed for the ease of sick people, and occasionally occupied by lazy ones.

^a The corrector of Mr. Collier's folio would substitute *windows*, which would totally destroy the humour of the passage, and yet Collier advocates the innovation!

Clo. Why, very well then :—I hope here be truths.

Ang. This will last out a night in Russia,
When nights are longest there. I'll take my leave,
And leave you to the hearing of the cause ;
Hoping, you'll find good cause to whip them all.

Escal. I think no less ; Good morrow to your lordship.

[Exit ANGELO.]

Now, sir, come on : What was done to Elbow's wife, once more ?

Clo. Once, sir ? there was nothing done to her once.

Elb. I beseech you, sir, ask him what this man did to my wife.

Clo. I beseech your honour, ask me.

Escal. Well, sir : What did this gentleman to her ?

Clo. I beseech you, sir, look in this gentleman's face :—Good master Froth, look upon his honour ; 'tis for a good purpose : Doth your honour mark his face ?

Escal. Ay, sir, very well.

Clo. Nay, I beseech you, mark it well.

Escal. Well, I do so.

Clo. Doth your honour see any harm in his face ?

Escal. Why, no.

Clo. I'll be supposed upon a book, his face is the worst thing about him : Good then ; if his face be the worst thing about him, how could master Froth do the constable's wife any harm ? I would know that of your honour.

Escal. He's in the right : Constable, what say you to it ?

Elb. First, an it like you, the house is a respected house : next, this is a respected fellow ; and his mistress is a respected woman.

Clo. By this hand, sir, his wife is a more respected person than any of us all.

Elb. Varlet, thou liest ; thou liest, wicked varlet : the time is yet to come, that she was ever respected with man, woman, or child.

Clo. Sir, she was respected with him before he married with her.

Escal. Which is the wiser here? Justice or Iniquity¹³? Is this true?

Elb. O thou caitiff! O thou varlet! O thou wicked Hannibal! I respected with her, before I was married to her? If ever I was respected with her, or she with me, let not your worship think me the poor duke's officer:—Prove this, thou wicked Hannibal, or I'll have mine action of battery on thee.

Escal. If he took you a box o' th' ear, you might have your action of slander too.

Elb. Marry, I thank your good worship for it. What is't your worship's pleasure I shall do with this wicked caitiff?

Escal. Truly, officer, because he hath some offences in him, that thou wouldest discover if thou couldst, let him continue in his courses till thou know'st what they are.

Elb. Marry, I thank your worship for it.—Thou see'st, thou wicked varlet now, what's come upon thee; thou art to continue now, thou varlet; thou art to continue.

Escal. Where were you born, friend? [*To FROTH.*

Froth. Here in Vienna, sir.

Escal. Are you of fourscore pounds a year?

Froth. Yes, an't please you, sir.

Escal. So.—What trade are you of, sir?

[*To the Clown.*

Clo. A tapster; a poor widow's tapster.

Escal. Your mistress's name?

Clo. Mistress Over-done.

Escal. Hath she had any more than one husband?

Clo. Nine, sir; Over-done by the last.

i.e. constable or clown. Justice and Iniquity were characters in the old miracle plays and moralities.

Escal. Nine!—Come hither to me, master Froth. Master Froth, I would not have you acquainted with tapsters; they will draw you, master Froth, and you will hang them: Get you gone, and let me hear no more of you.

Froth. I thank your worship: for mine own part, I never come into any room in a taphouse, but I am drawn in.

Escal. Well; no more of it, master Froth: farewell. [*Exit Froth.*]—Come you hither to me, master tapster; what's your name, master tapster?

Clo. Pompey.

Escal. What else?

Clo. Bum, sir.

Escal. 'Troth, and your bum is the greatest thing about you: so that, in the beastliest sense, you are Pompey the great. Pompey, you are partly a bawd, Pompey, howsoever you colour it in being a tapster. Are you not? come, tell me true; it shall be the better for you.

Clo. Truly, sir, I am a poor fellow, that would live.

Escal. How would you live, Pompey? by being a bawd? What do you think of the trade, Pompey? is it a lawful trade?

Clo. If the law would allow it, sir?

Escal. But the law will not allow it, Pompey; nor it shall not be allowed in Vienna.

Clo. Does your worship mean to geld and spay all the youth of the city?

Escal. No, Pompey.

Clo. Truly, sir, in my poor opinion, they will to't then: If your worship will take order¹⁴ for the drabs and the knaves, you need not to fear the bawds.

Escal. There are pretty orders beginning, I can tell you: It is but heading and hanging.

¹⁴ To take order is to take measures, or precautions.

Clo. If you head and hang all that offend that way but for ten year together, you'll be glad to give out a commission for more heads. If this law hold in Vienna ten year, I'll rent the fairest house in it, after three pence a bay¹⁵: if you live to see this come to pass, say, Pompey told you so.

Escal. Thank you, good Pompey: and, in requital of your prophecy, hark you,—I advise you, let me not find you before me again upon any complaint whatsoever, no, not for dwelling where you do; if I do, Pompey, I shall beat you to your tent, and prove a shrewd Cæsar to you; in plain dealing, Pompey, I shall have you whipt: so for this time, Pompey, fare you well.

Clo. I thank your worship for your good counsel: but I shall follow it as the flesh and fortune shall better determine.

Whip me? No, no; let carman whip his jade; The valiant heart's not whipt out of his trade. [*Exit.*]

Escal. Come hither to me, master Elbow; come hither, master Constable. How long have you been in this place of constable?

Elb. Seven year and a half, sir.

Escal. I thought, by your¹⁶ readiness in the office, you had continued in it some time: You say, seven years together?

Elb. And a half, sir.

Escal. Alas! it hath been great pains to you! They

¹⁵ A bay is a principal division in building, as a barn of three bays is a barn twice crossed by beams. Coles in his Latin Dictionary defines "a bay of building, mensura 24 pedum." Houses appear to have been estimated by the number of bays. This note remains as it was printed in my former edition. Mr. Collier had evidently never seen it, as he acknowledges his obligation to the Rev. Mr. Barry. Mr. C.'s corrected folio would substitute "after threepence a day."

¹⁶ The folios have *the* instead of *your*.

do you wrong to put you so oft upon't : Are there not men in your ward sufficient to serve it ?

Ebb. Faith, sir, few of any wit in such matters : as they are chosen, they are glad to choose me for them ; I do it for some piece of money, and go through with all.

Escal. Look you, bring me in the names of some six or seven, the most sufficient of your parish.

Ebb. To your worship's house, sir ?

Escal. To my house : Fare you well. [*Exit Elbow.*] What's o'clock, think you ?

Just. Eleven, sir.

Escal. I pray you home to dinner with me.

Just. I humbly thank you.

Escal. It grieves me for the death of Claudio ; But there's no remedy.

Just. Lord Angelo is severe.

Escal. It is but needful : Mercy is not itself that oft looks so ; Pardon is still the nurse of second woe.

But yet,—Poor Claudio !—There's no remedy.
Come, sir

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *Another Room in the same.*

Enter Provost and a Servant.

Serv. He's hearing of a cause ; he will come straight. I'll tell him of you.

Prov. Pray you, do. [*Exit Servant.*] I'll know His pleasure : may be, he will relent. Alas ! He hath but as offended in a dream ! All sects, all ages smack of this vice ; and he To die for it !—

Enter ANGELO.

Ang. Now, what's the matter, provost ?

Prov. Is it your will Claudio shal' die to-morrow ?

Ang. Did I not tell thee, yea? hadst thou not order?
Why dost thou ask again?

Prov. Lest I might be too rash.
Under your good correction, I have seen,
When, after execution, judgment hath
Repeated o'er his doom.

Ang. Go to; let that be mine:
Do you your office, or give up your place,
And you shall well be spar'd.

Prov. I crave your honour's pardon.—
What shall be done, sir, with the groaning Juliet?
She's very near her hour.

Ang. Dispose of her
To some more fitter place; and that with speed.

Re-enter Servant.

Serv. Here is the sister of the man condemn'd,
Desires access to you.

Ang. Hath he a sister?

Prov. Ay, my good lord; a very virtuous maid,
And to be shortly of a sisterhood,
If not already.

Ang. Well, let her be admitted.

[*Exit Servant.*

See you, the fornicatress be remov'd;
Let her have needful, but not lavish, means;
There shall be order for it.

Enter LUCIO and ISABELLA.

Prov. Save your honour! [*Offering to retire.*

Ang. Stay a little while.—[*To ISAB.*] You are welcome: What's your will?

Isab. I am a woful suitor to your honour,
Please but your honour hear me.

Ang. Well; what's your suit?

Isab. There is a vice, that most I do abhor,

nd most desire should meet the blow of justice ;
or which I would not plead, but that I must ;
or which I must not plead, but that I am
t war, 'twixt will, and will not.

Ang. Well ; the matter ?

Isab. I have a brother is condemn'd to die :
do beseech you, let it be his fault,
nd not my brother¹.

Prov. [Aside.] Heaven give thee moving graces !

Ang. Condemn the fault, and not the actor of it !
Thy, every fault's condemn'd, ere it be done :
[ine were the very cipher of a function,
o fine² the faults, whose fine stands in record,
nd let go by the actor.

Isab. O just, but severe law !
had a brother then.—Heaven keep your honour !

[Retiring.

Lucio. [To Isab.] Give't not o'er so : to him again,
intreat him :
neel down before him, hang upon his gown ;
ou are too cold : if you should need a pin,
ou could not with more tame a tongue desire it :
o him, I say.

Isab. Must he needs die ?

Ang. Maiden, no remedy.

Isab. Yes ; I do think that you might pardon him,
nd neither heaven, nor man, grieve at the mercy.

Ang. I will not do't.

Isab. But can you, if you would ?

Ang. Look, what I will not, that I cannot do.

Isab. But might you do't, and do the world no wrong,
so your heart were touch'd with that remorse
s mine is to him ?

¹ i. e. let my brother's fault die or be extirpated, but let not him
fer.

² i. e. "to pronounce the fine or sentence of the law upon the
me, and let the delinquent escape."

Ang. He's sentenc'd; 'tis too late.

Lucio. [To Isab.] You are too cold.

Isab. Too late? why, no; I, that do speak a word,
May call it back³ again: Well, believe this,
No ceremony that to great ones 'longs,
Not the king's crown, nor the deputed sword,
The marshal's truncheon, nor the judge's robe,
Become them with one half so good a grace,
As mercy does. If he had been as you,
And you as he, you would have slipt like him;
But he, like you, would not have been so stern.

Ang. Pray you, begone.

Isab. I would to heaven I had your potency,
And you were Isabel! should it then be thus?
No; I would tell what 'twere to be a judge,
And what a prisoner.

Lucio. Ay, touch him: there's the vein. [Aside.

Ang. Your brother is a forfeit of the law,
And you but waste your words.

Isab. Alas! alas!
Why, all the souls that were, were forfeit once;
And He that might the vantage best have took,
Found out the remedy: How would you be,
If he, which is the top of judgment, should
But judge you as you are? O, think on that;
And mercy then will breathē within your lips,
Like man new made.

Ang. Be you content, fair maid;
It is the law, not I, condemns your brother:
Were he my kinsman, brother, or my son,
It should be thus with him;—he must die to-morrow.

Isab. To-morrow? O, that's sudden! Spare him,
spare him:
He's not prepar'd for death! Even for our kitchens

³ The word *back*, necessary to the sense, was added in the second folio. *

e kill the fowl of season⁴: shall we serve heaven
ith less respect than we do minister
our gross selves? Good, good my lord, bethink you:
ho is it that hath died for this offence?
ere's many have committed it.

Lucio. [Aside.] Ay, well said.
Ang. The law hath not been dead, though it hath
slept⁵:

ose many had not dar'd to do that evil,
the first that did the edict infringe
id answer'd for his deed : now, 'tis awake ;
ikes note of what is done ; and, like a prophet,
oks in a glass⁶, that shows what future evils
ither now, or by remissness new-conceiv'd,
id so in progress to be hatch'd and born),
e now to have no successive degrees,
it, ere⁷ they live, to end.

Isab. Yet show some pity.

Ang. I show it most of all, when I show justice,
r then I pity those I do not know⁸,
hich a dismiss'd offence would after gall ;
id do him right, that, answering one foul wrong,
ves not to act another. Be satisfied ;
ur brother dies to-morrow : be content.

Isab. So you must be the first, that gives this sen-
tence :

i. e. when mature or fit for death, as Hamlet says of the
g—

When he is fit and *season'd* for his passage.

“ *Dormiunt aliquando leges, moriuntur nunquam,*” is a maxim
our law.

This alludes to the deceptions of the fortune-tellers, who pre-
ded to see future events in a beryl, or crystal glass.

The old copy has *here*. I adopt Hanmer's emendation, which
es a clear sense.

One of Judge Hale's “Memorials” is of the same tendency :
hen I find myself swayed to mercy, let me remember that
re is a mercy likewise due to the country.”

And he, that suffers : O ! it is excellent
To have a giant's strength ; but it is tyrannous
To use it like a giant.

Lucio. [Aside.] That's well said.

Isab. Could great men thunder
As Jove himself does, Jove would ne'er be quiet,
For every pelting⁹, petty officer,
Would use his heaven for thunder ;
Nothing but thunder.—Merciful heaven !
Thou rather, with thy sharp and sulphurous bolt,
Split'st the unwedgeable and gnarled¹⁰ oak,
Than the soft myrtle¹¹ :—But man, proud man !
Drest in a little brief authority :
Most ignorant of what he's most assur'd,
His glassy essence,—like an angry ape,
Plays such fantastic tricks before high heaven,
As make the angels weep ; who, with our spleens,
Would all themselves laugh mortal¹².

Lucio. [To Isab.] O, to him, to him, wench : he
will relent ;
He's coming, I perceive 't.

Prov. [Aside.] Pray heaven, she win him !
Isab. We cannot weigh our brother with ourself :
Great men may jest with saints : 'tis wit in them ;
But, in the less, foul profanation.

Lucio. [To Isab.] Thou'rt in the right, girl ; more
o' that.

⁹ *Pelting for paltry.*

¹⁰ *Gnarled*, i. e. *knotted*.
¹¹ Mr. Douce has remarked the close affinity between this passage and one in the second satire of Persius. Yet we have no translation of that poet of Shakespeare's age.

"Ignovisse putas, quia, cum tonat, ocyus ilex
Sulfure discutitur sacro, quam tuque domusque ?"

¹² The notion of angels weeping for the sins of men is rabbinical. By *spleens* Shakespeare meant that peculiar turn of the human mind, that always inclines it to a spiteful and unseasonable mirth. Had the angels *that*, they would laugh themselves out of their immortality, by indulging a passion unworthy of that prerogative.

Isab. That in the captain's but a choleric word,
Which in the soldier is flat blasphemy.

Lucio. [Aside.] Art advis'd o' that? more on 't.

Ang. Why do you put these sayings upon me?

Isab. Because authority, though it err like others,
Hath yet a kind of medicine in itself,
That skins the vice o' the top¹³: Go to your bosom;
Knock there, and ask your heart, what it doth know
That's like my brother's fault: if it confess
A natural guiltiness, such as is his,
Let it not sound a thought upon your tongue
Against my brother's life.

Ang. [Aside.] She speaks, and 'tis
Such sense, that my sense breeds with it¹⁴. [To Her.

Fare you well.

Isab. Gentle my lord, turn back.

Ang. I will bethink me:—Come again to-morrow.

Isab. Hark, how I'll bribe you: Good my lord, turn
back.

Ang. How! bribe me?

Isab. Ay, with such gifts, that heaven shall share
with you.

Lucio. [Aside.] You had marr'd all else.

Isab. Not with fond¹⁵ shekels¹⁶ of the tested gold,
Or stones, whose rates are either rich, or poor,
As fancy values them: but with true prayers,

¹³ Shakespeare has used this metaphor again in Hamlet—"It will but skin and film the ulcerous place."

¹⁴ i. e. Such sense as breeds or produces a consequence in his mind. Malone thought that *sense* here meant *sensual desire*.

¹⁵ *Fond*, in its old signification sometimes meant *foolish*. In its modern sense it evidently implied a doting or extravagant affection; here it signifies *overvalued or prized by folly*.

¹⁶ The old copies have *sickles*, and in the Wickliffe version, as well as in Coverdale's Bible, the word is *sicle* and *sycle*. In Peele's David and Betsabe, it is also *sickles*. In Hebrew *s* and *sh* are the same letter. The corrector of Mr. Collier's folio would substitute the improbable word *circles*! and Mr. Collier himself says, "Shakespeare's word may have been *Cycles*!"

That shall be up at heaven, and enter there
Ere sun-rise ; prayers from preserved¹⁷ souls,
From fasting maids, whose minds are dedicate
To nothing temporal.

Ang. Well : come to me to-morrow.

Lucio. Go to ; it is well : away. [Aside to ISABEL.

Isab. Heaven keep your honour safe !

Ang. Amen¹⁸ :

For I am that way going to temptation, [Aside.
Where prayers cross¹⁹.

Isab. At what hour to-morrow
Shall I attend your lordship ?

Ang. At any time 'fore noon.

Isab. Save your honour !

[Exeunt LUCIO, ISABELLA, and Provost.

Ang. From thee ; even from thy virtue !—
What's this ? what's this ? Is this her fault, or mine ?
The tempter, or the tempted, who sins most ? Ha !
Not she ; nor doth she tempt : but it is I,
That lying by the violet, in the sun,
Do, as the carrion does, not as the flower,
Corrupt with virtuous season. Can it be,
That modesty may more betray our sense²⁰
Than woman's lightness ? Having waste ground enough,
Shall we desire to raze the sanctuary,
And pitch our evils there²¹ ? O, fy, fy, fy !

¹⁷ Preserved from the corruption of the world.

¹⁸ Isabella prays that his honour may be safe, meaning only to give him his title : his imagination is caught by the word *honour*, he feels that it is in danger, and therefore says Amen to her benediction.

¹⁹ The petition of the Lord's Prayer, " Lead us not into temptation," is here considered as *crossing* or intercepting the way in which Angelo was going : he was exposing himself to temptation by the appointment for the morrow's meeting.

²⁰ Sense for sensual appetite.

²¹ No language could more forcibly express the aggravated gravity of Angelo's passion, which the purity of Isabella but

What dost thou ? or, what art thou, Angelo ?
 Dost thou desire her foully, for those things
 That make her good ? O, let her brother live !
 Thieves for their robbery have authority,
 When judges steal themselves. What ! do I love her,
 That I desire to hear her speak again,
 And feast upon her eyes ? What is't I dream on ?
 A cunning enemy, that, to catch a saint,
 With saints dost bait thy hook ! Most dangerous
 Is that temptation, that doth goad us on
 To sin in loving virtue. Never could the strumpet,
 With all her double vigour, art, and nature, .
 Once stir my temper ; but this virtuous maid
 Subdues me quite.—Ever, till now,
 When men were fond, I smil'd, and wonder'd how²² !

[Exit.

SCENE III. *A Room in a Prison.*

Enter Duke, habited like a Friar, and Provost.

Duke. Hail to you, Provost ! so, I think you are.
Prov. I am the provost : What's your will, good
 friar ?

Duke. Bound by my charity, and my bless'd order,
 come to visit the afflicted spirits
 Here in the prison : do me the common right
 To let me see them ; and to make me know
 The nature of their crimes, that I may minister
 To them accordingly.

Prov. I would do more than that, if more were
 needful.

erved the more to inflame. The desecration of edifices devoted
 to religion, by converting them to the most abject purposes of
 avarice, was an eastern method of expressing contempt. See
 Kings x. 27.

²² Dr. Johnson thinks the second act should end here.

Enter JULIET.

Look, here comes one ; a gentlewoman of mine,
Who falling in the flames¹ of her own youth,
Hath blister'd her report : She is with child :
And he that got it, sentenc'd : a young man
More fit to do another such offence,
Than die for this.

Duke. When must he die ?

Prov. As I do think, to-morrow.—

I have provided for you ; stay a while, [To JULIET.
And you shall be conducted.

Duke. Repent you, fair one, of the sin you carry ?

Juliet. I do ; and bear the shame most patiently.

Duke. I'll teach you how you shall arraign your
conscience,

And try your penitence, if it be sound,
Or hollowly put on.

Juliet. I'll gladly learn.

Duke. Love you the man that wrong'd you ?

Juliet. Yes, as I love the woman that wrong'd him.

Duke. So then, it seems, your most offenceful act
Was mutually committed ?

Juliet. Mutually.

Duke. Then was your sin of heavier kind than his.

Juliet. I do confess it, and repent it, father.

Duke. 'Tis meet so, daughter : But lest² you do
repent,

As that the sin hath brought you to this shame,—
Which sorrow is always toward ourselves, not heaven;
Showing, we'd not spare³ heaven as we love it,

¹ The folio reads *flawes*. Davenant made the alteration, which Warburton also proposed, not knowing that he had been anticipated.

² The folio has *least*, but this is the way in which *lest* was mostly spelt.

³ This passage appears to me corrupt. At any rate we must

But as we stand in fear,—

Juliet. I do repent me, as it is an evil;
And take the shame with joy.

Duke. There rest⁴.
Your partner, as I hear, must die to-morrow,
And I am going with instruction to him.—
Grace go with you! *Benedicite!* [Exit.

Juliet. Must die to-morrow! O, injurious law⁵,
That respites me a life, whose very comfort
Is still a dying horror!

Prov. 'Tis pity of him. [Exit.

SCENE IV. A Room in Angelo's House.

Enter ANGELO.

Ang. When I would pray and think, I think and
pray
To several subjects: heaven hath my empty words;
Whilst my invention¹, hearing not my tongue,
Anchors on Isabel: Heaven in my mouth,
As if I did but only chew his name;
And in my heart, the strong and swelling evil
Of my conception: The state, whereon I studied,
Is like a good thing, being often read,

conceive a violent ellipsis, and understand “we'd not spare to offend heaven.” But I think we should read

Showing we'd not *appease* heav'n as we love it.
The corrector in Mr. Collier's folio would substitute *serve*.

¹ i. e. *keep yourself in this frame of mind.*

⁵ The old copies have “O injurious *love*.” The reading in the text is by Sir Thomas Hanmer; the words *lauve* and *love* were easily confounded.

¹ *Invention* for *imagination*. So in Shakespeare's 103d Sonnet:

“a face,

That overgoes my blunt *invention* quite.”

And in K. Henry V,

“O for a muse of fire, that would ascend
The brightest heaven of *invention*.”

Grown sear'd² and tedious ; yea, my gravity,
 Wherein (let no man hear me) I take pride,
 Could I, with boot³, change for an idle plume
 Which the air beats for vain. O place ! O form !
 || How often dost thou with thy case, thy habit,
 Wrench awe from fools, and tie the wiser souls
 To thy false seeming⁴ ! Blood, thou art blood !
 Let's write good angel on the devil's horn,
 'Tis not the devil's crest⁵.

Enter Servant.

How now ! who's there ?

Serv. One Isabel, a sister,
 Desires access to you.

Ang. Teach her the way. [Exit Serv.
 O heavens !
 Why does my blood thus muster to my heart ;
 Making both it unable for itself,
 And dispossessing all the other parts
 Of necessary fitness ?
 So play the foolish throngs with one that swoons ;
 Come all to help him, and so stop the air
 By which he should revive : and even so
 The general⁶, subject to a well-wish'd king,

² Most copies of the first folio read *feard*. It is corrected in Lord Ellesmere's copy to *seard*, which is undoubtedly the true word, in the sense of *dry, faded, withered*.

³ *Boot* is *profit*.

⁴ Shakespeare judiciously distinguishes the different operations of high place upon different minds. Fools are frightened, and wise men allured. Those who cannot judge but by the eye are easily awed by splendour ; those who consider men as well as conditions, are easily persuaded to love the appearance of virtue dignified with power. Malone inserts *still* in this line, and reads,

"Blood thou still art blood."

⁵ " Though we should write *good angel* on the devil's horn, it will not change his nature, so as to give him a right to wear that crest." This explanation by Malone is confirmed by a passage Lyly's *Midas*, " Melancholy ! melancholy a word for barber's iith ? Thou shouldest say heavy, dull, and doltish ; melancholy ie crest of courtiers."

Quit their own part, and in obsequious fondness
 Crowd to his presence, where their untaught love
 Must needs appear offence.

Enter ISABELLA.

How now, fair maid ?

Isab. I am come to know your pleasure.

Ang. That you might know it, would much better
 please me,

Than to demand what 'tis. Your brother cannot live.

Isab. Even so ?—Heaven keep your honour !

[Retiring.]

Ang. Yet may he live awhile ; and it may be,
 As long as you, or I : Yet he must die.

Isab. Under your sentence ?

Ang. Yea.

Isab. When, I beseech you ? that in his reprieve,
 Longer, or shorter, he may be so fitted,
 That his soul sicken not.

Ang. Ha ! Fye, these filthy vices ! It were as good
 To pardon him, that hath from nature stolen
 A man already made, as to remit
 Their saucy sweetness, that do coin heaven's image
 In stamps that are forbid : 'tis all as easy
 Falsely to take away a life true made,
 As to put mettle in restrained means,
 To make a false one⁶.

Isab. 'Tis set down so in heaven, but not in earth.

Ang. Say you so ? then I shall pose you quickly.

⁶ *The general*, i. e. the *people* or *multitude* subject to a king. So, in Hamlet : "the play pleased not the million ; 'twas caviare to the *general*." It is supposed that Shakespeare, in this passage and in one before (Act i. Sc. 2), intended to flatter the unkingly weakness of James I., which made him so impatient of the crowds which flocked to see him, at his first coming, that he restrained them by a proclamation.

⁷ *The thought is simply*, that murder is as easy as fornication and the inference which Angelo would draw is, that it is as *proper* to pardon the latter as the former.

Which had you rather, That the most just law
 Now took your brother's life ; or, to redeem him,
 Give up your body to such sweet uncleanness,
 As she that he hath stain'd ?

Isab. Sir, believe this,
 I had rather give my body than my soul⁸.

Ang. I talk not of your soul : Our compell'd sins
 Stand more for number than accompt⁹.

Isab. How say you ?
Ang. Nay, I'll not warrant that ; for I can speak
 Against the thing I say. Answer to this ;—
 I, now the voice of the recorded law,
 Pronounce a sentence on your brother's life :
 Might there not be a charity in sin,
 To save this brother's life ?

Isab. Please you to do't,
 I'll take it as a peril to my soul :
 It is no sin at all, but charity.

Ang. Pleas'd you to do't, at peril of your soul,
 Were equal poise of sin and charity.

Isab. That I do beg his life, if it be sin,
 Heaven, let me bear it ! you granting of my suit,
 If that be sin, I'll make it my morn prayer
 To have it added to the faults of mine,
 And nothing of your answer.

Ang. Nay, but hear me :
 Your sense pursues not mine : either you are ignorant,
 Or seem so, craftily¹⁰ ; and that's not good.

Isab. Let me be ignorant, and in nothing good,
 But graciously to know I am no better.

⁸ Isabel appears to use the words "give my body," in a different sense to Angelo. Her meaning appears to be, "I had rather die than forfeit my eternal happiness by the prostitution of my person."

⁹ i. e. actions that we are compelled to, however numerous, are not imputed to us by heaven as crimes.

¹⁰ The old copy has *crafty*, an evident error.

Ang. Thus wisdom wishes to appear most bright,
When it doth tax itself : as these black masks¹¹
Proclaim an enshield¹² beauty ten times louder
Than beauty could displayed.—But mark me ;
To be received plain, I'll speak more gross :
Your brother is to die.

Isab. So.

Ang. And his offence is so, as it appears
Accountant to the law upon that pain.

Isab. True.

Ang. Admit no other way to save his life,
(As I subscribe not that, nor any other,
But in the loss of question¹³), that you, his sister,
Finding yourself desir'd of such a person,
Whose credit with the judge, or own great place,
Could fetch your brother from the manacles
Of the all-binding¹⁴ law ; and that there were
No earthly mean to save him, but that either
You must lay down the treasures of your body
To this supposed, or else to let him suffer ;
What would you do ?

Isab. As much for my poor brother, as myself :
That is, Were I under the terms of death,

¹¹ The masks worn by female spectators of the play are here probably meant ; *these* may be a misprint for *those*. At the beginning of Romeo and Juliet, we have a passage of similar import :

“ These happy *masks* that kiss fair ladies' brows,
Being *black*, put us in mind they hide the fair.”

¹² *enshield*, i. e. *enshielded, covered*.

¹³ This is the reading of the old copy. It has been conjectured that Shakespeare meant by *loss of question* the *casus questionis* of the logicians. This is the suggestion of an ingenious correspondent of Notes and Queries, vol. vi. p. 217. I find it, however, altered in my corrected copy of the second folio to “*loose of question*,” the meaning would then be, “in the *looseness* of conversation.”

¹⁴ The old copy has *all-building* law ; the necessary correction was made by Theobald. “ The *manacles* of the *all-building* law” is surely not consequential.

The impression of keen whips I'd wear as rubies,
 And strip myself to death, as to a bed
 That longing I've¹⁵ been sick for, ere I'd yield
 My body up to shame.

Ang. Then must your brother die.

Isab. And 'twere the cheaper way.

Better it were, a brother died at once,
 Than that a sister, by redeeming him,
 Should die for ever.

Ang. Were not you then as cruel as the sentence
 That you have slander'd so?

Isab. Ignomy¹⁶ in ransom, and free pardon,
 Are of two houses: lawful mercy is
 Nothing akin to foul redemption.

Ang. You seem'd of late to make the law a tyrant:
 And rather prov'd the sliding of your brother
 A merriment than a vice.

Isab. O pardon me, my lord; it oft falls out,
 To have what we would have, we speak not what we
 mean:

I something do excuse the thing I hate,
 For his advantage that I dearly love.

Ang. We are all frail.

Isab. Else let my brother die.
 If not a feodary, but only he,
 Owe, and succeed this weakness¹⁷.

¹⁵ I is not in the old copy, which reads merely *have*.

¹⁶ *Ignomy*, i. e. *ignominy*, which is the reading of the second folio.

¹⁷ "If not a *feodary*, but only he
 Owe and succeed *this weakness*."

Shakespeare uses the word *feodary* for a confederate, associate, in Cymbeline, Act iii. Sc. 2. To *owe* is to own; to possess, and to *succeed* is to follow. The word *this* is substituted for the old reading *thy*, on the authority of a MS. correction, found by Mr. Collier, in a copy of the first folio. The meaning of the passage will then be, "If we are not all frail, if my brother have no companion holding by the same tenure of frailty; but he alone possess and allow this weakness, let him die."

Ang. Nay, women are frail too.

Isab. Ay, as the glasses where they view themselves; Which are as easy broke as they make forms. Women!—Help heaven! men their creation mar In profiting by them¹⁸. Nay, call us ten times frail; For we are soft as our complexions are, And credulous to false prints.

Ang. I think it well: And from this testimony of your own sex, (Since, I suppose, we are made to be no stronger Than faults may shake our frames) let me be bold;— I do arrest your words; Be that you are, That is, a woman; if you be more, you're none; If you be one (as you are well express'd By all external warrants), show it now, By putting on the destin'd livery.

Isab. I have no tongue but one: gentle my lord, Let me entreat you speak the former language.

Ang. Plainly conceive, I love you.

Isab. My brother did love Juliet; and you tell me, That he shall die for it.

Ang. He shall not, Isabel, if you give me love.

Isab. I know, your virtue hath a license in't, Which seems a little fouler than it is, To pluck on others¹⁹.

Ang. Believe me, on mine honour, My words express my purpose.

Isab. Ha! little honour to be much believ'd, And most pernicious purpose!—Seeming, seeming²⁰!

I will proclaim thee, Angelo; look for't:

¹⁸ The meaning appears to be, that “men debase their natures by taking advantage of women's weakness.” She therefore calls on Heaven to assist them.

¹⁹ i. e. “your virtue assumes an air of licentiousness, which is not natural to you, on purpose to try me.”

²⁰ *Seeming* is *hypocrisy*.

Sign me a present pardon for my brother,
Or, with an outstretch'd throat, I'll tell the world
Aloud, what man thou art.

Ang. Who will believe thee, Isabel?
My unsoil'd name, the austereness of my life,
My vouch against you, and my place i' the state,
Will so your accusation overweigh,
That you shall stifle in your own report,
And smell of calumny. I have begun;
And now I give my sensual race the rein:
Fit thy consent to my sharp appetite;
Lay by all nicety, and prolixious blushes²¹,
That banish what they sue for; redeem thy brother
By yielding up thy body to my will;
Or else he must not only die the death²²,
But thy unkindness shall his death draw out
To lingering sufferance. Answer me to-morrow,
Or, by the affection that now guides me most,
I'll prove a tyrant to him: As for you,
Say what you can, my false o'erweighs your true.

Exeit.

Isab. To whom should I complain? Did I tell this,
Who would believe me? O perilous mouths!
That bear in them one and the self-same tongue,
Either of condemnation or approof!
Bidding the law make court'sy to their will;
Hooking both right and wrong to the appetite,
To follow as it draws! I'll to my brother:
Though he hath fallen by prompture²³ of the blood,
Yet hath he in him such a mind of honour,
That had he twenty heads to tender down

²¹ *Prolixious blushes* mean what Milton has elegantly called—
“Sweet reluctant delay.”

²² *The death.* This phrase seems originally to have been a mistaken translation of the French *La mort*. Chaucer uses it frequently, and it is common to all writers of Shakespeare's age.

²³ *Prompture*, i. e. temptation, instigation.

On twenty bloody blocks, he'd yield them up,
 Before his sister should her body stoop
 To such abhor'd pollution.
 Then, Isabel, live chaste, and, brother, die :
 More than our brother is our chastity.
 I'll tell him yet of Angelo's request,
 And fit his mind to death, for his soul's rest. [Exit.]

ACT III.

SCENE I. *A Room in the Prison.*

Enter Duke, CLAUDIO, and Provost.

Duke.

O, then you hope of pardon from lord Angelo?
 Claud. The miserable have no other me-
 dicine,

But only hope :

I have hope to live, and am prepar'd to die.

Duke. Be absolute for death ; either death or life,
 Shall thereby be the sweeter. Reason thus with life,—
 If I do lose thee, I do lose a thing
 That none but fools would keep : a breath thou art,
 (Servile to all the skiey influences),
 That dost this habitation, where thou keep'st²,
 Hourly afflict. Merely, thou art death's fool ;
 For him thou labour'st by thy flight to shun,
 And yet runn'st toward him still : Thou art not noble ;
 For all the accommodations that thou bear'st,
 Are nurs'd by baseness³ : Thou art by no means valiant ;

² *Keep'st*, i. e. dwellest. So, in Henry IV. Part i:

“ ‘Twas where the madcap duke his uncle *kept.*”

³ Upon this passage Johnson observes “that a minute analysis of life at once destroys that splendour which dazzles the imagination. Whatever grandeur can display, or luxury enjoy, is procured by *baseness*, by offices of which the mind shrinks from the

For thou dost fear the soft and tender fork
 Of a poor worm⁴: Thy best of rest is sleep,
 And that thou oft provok'st; yet grossly fear'st
 Thy death, which is no more. Thou art not thyself;
 For thou exist'st on many a thousand grains
 That issue out of dust: Happy thou art not;
 For what thou hast not, still thou striv'st to get;
 And what thou hast, forget'st: Thou art not certain;
 For thy complexion shifts to strange affects⁵,
 After the moon: If thou art rich, thou art poor;
 For, like an ass, whose back with ingots bows,
 Thou bear'st thy heavy riches but a journey,
 And death unloads thee: Friend hast thou none;
 For thine own bowels, which do call thee sire,
 The mere effusion of thy proper loins,
 Do curse the gout, serpigo⁶, and the rheum,
 For ending thee no sooner: Thou hast nor youth,
 nor age;

But, as it were, an after-dinner's sleep,
 Dreaming on both⁷; for all thy blessed youth
 Becomes as aged, and doth beg the alms

contemplation. All the delicacies of the table may be traced back to the shambles and the dunghill, all magnificence of building was hewn from the quarry, and all the pomp of ornament from among the damps and darkness of the mine."

⁴ *Worm* is put for any creeping thing or *serpent*. Shakespeare adopts the vulgar error, that a serpent wounds with his tongue, and that his tongue is *forked*. In old tapestries and paintings the tongues of serpents and dragons always appear barbed like the point of an arrow.

⁵ The old copy reads *effects*. We read *affects*, i. e. affections, passions of the mind. See Hamlet, Act iii. Sc. 4.

⁶ *Serpigo* is a leprous eruption.

⁷ This is exquisitely imagined. When we are young, we busy ourselves in forming schemes for succeeding time, and miss the gratifications that are before us; when we are old, we amuse the languor of age with the recollection of youthful pleasures or performances; so that our life, of which no part is filled with the business of the present time, resembles our dreams after dinner, when the events of the morning are mingled with the designs of the evening.

Of palsied *eld⁸*; and when thou art old, and rich,
Thou hast neither heat, affection, limb, nor beauty,
To make thy riches pleasant. What's yet in this
That bears the name of life? Yet in this life
Lie hid more thousand deaths; yet death we fear,
That makes these odds all even.

Claud.

I humbly thank you.

To sue to live, I find, I seek to die:
And seeking death, find life: Let it come on.

Isab. [Without.] What, ho! Peace here; grace
and good company!

Prov. Who's there? come in; the wish deserves a
welcome.

Enter ISABELLA.

Duke. Dear sir, ere long I'll visit you again.

Claud. Most holy sir, I thank you.

Isab. My business is a word or two with Claudio.

Prov. And very welcome. Look, signior, here's
your sister.

Duke. Provost, a word with you.

Prov. As many as you please.

Duke. Bring me to hear them speak, where I may
be conceal'd⁹. [Exeunt Duke and Provost.

Claud. Now, sister, what's the comfort?

Isab. Why, as all comforts are; most good, most
good indeed:

Lord Angelo, having affairs to heaven,

* Old age. In youth, which is or ought to be the *happiest* time, man commonly wants means to obtain what he could enjoy, he is dependent on *palsied eld*; must beg alms from the coffers of hoary avarice; and being very niggardly supplied, *becomes as aged*, looks like an old man on happiness beyond his reach. And when he is *old and rich*, when he has wealth enough for the purchase of all that formerly excited his desires, he has no longer the powers of enjoyment.

⁹ The first folio reads "Bring them to *hear me speak, &c.*" the second folio reads "bring them to speak." The emendation is by Steevens.

Intends you for his swift ambassador,
Where you shall be an everlasting leiger¹⁰:
Therefore your best appointment make with speed:
To-morrow you set on.

Claud. Is there no remedy?

Isab. None, but such remedy, as to save a head,
To cleave a heart in twain.

Claud. But is there any?

Isab. Yes, brother, you may live;
There is a devilish mercy in the judge,
If you'll implore it, that will free your life,
But fetter you till death.

Claud. Perpetual durance?

Isab. Ay, just; perpetual durance; a restraint,
Though all the world's vastidity you had,
To a determined scope¹¹.

Claud. But in what nature?

Isab. In such a one as (you consenting to't)
Would bark your honour from that trunk you bear,
And leave you naked¹².

Claud. Let me know the point.

Isab. O, I do fear thee, Claudio; and I quake,
Lest thou a feverous life should'st entertain,
And six or seven winters more respect
Than a perpetual honour. Dar'st thou die?
The sense of death is most in apprehension;
And the poor beetle, that we tread upon,
In corporal sufferance finds a pang as great
As when a giant dies¹³.

¹⁰ A *leiger* is a *resident ambassador*.

¹¹ *To a determined scope.* A confinement of your mind to one painful idea: to ignominy, of which the remembrance can neither be suppressed nor escaped.

¹² *A metaphor*, from stripping trees of their *bark*.

¹³ *And the poor beetle*, &c. This beautiful passage is in all our minds and memories, but it most frequently stands in quotation shed from the antecedent line:—"The sense of death is most

Claud. Why give you me this shame ?
Think you I can a resolution fetch
From flowery tenderness ? If I must die,
Will encounter darkness as a bride,
And hug it in mine arms.

Isab. There spake my brother ; there my father's
grave .

Iid utter forth a voice ! Yes, thou must die :
hou art too noble to conserve a life
1 base appliances. This outward-sainted deputy,—
Those settled visage and deliberate word
'ips youth i' the head, and follies doth emmew¹⁴,
s falcon doth the fowl,—is yet a devil ;
is filth within being cast, he would appear
pond as deep as hell.

Claud. The primzie¹⁵ Angelo ?

Isab. O, 'tis the cunning livery of hell,
he damned'st body to invest and cover
1 primzie guards¹⁶! Dost thou think, Claudio,

apprehension," without which it is liable to an opposite construction. The meaning is :—" Death is less painful in itself than a fear of it. The mental apprehension, not the corporal suffering, is the chief sense ; the giant when he dips feels no greater pain than the beetle?" The natural history of the passage, as Mr. Hunter observes, taken in either sense is incorrect.

¹⁴ " In whose presence the follies of youth are afraid to show themselves, as the fowl is afraid to flutter while the falcon hovers over it." To *emmew* is a term in Falconry, signifying to restrain, keep in a mew or cage either by force or terror.

¹⁵ The folio 1623 reads " The *prenzie* Angelo?" and " In *enzie* guards." The folio 1632 has substituted *princely*, which is been followed in subsequent editions. *Princely* dress, is surely not " the cunning livery of Hell." *Precise*, suggested by Tieck and adopted by Mr. Knight, spoils the metre. *Primzie*, for *stiff*, *rimal*, *demure*, is used by Burns, and there is an old proverb, " A *imzie* damsel makes a laidlie dame." *Prim* is spelt *prin* in a poem by Fletcher :—

" He looks as gaunt and *prin*, as he that spent
A tedious twelve years in an eager lent."

¹⁶ *Guards* are *facings*; and here stands, by synecdoche, for

If I would yield him my virginity,
Thou might'st be freed.

Claud. O, heavens ! it cannot be.

Isab. Yes, he would give it thee, from this rank
offence,
So to offend him still¹⁷: This night's the time
That I should do what I abhor to name,
Or else thou diest to-morrow.

Claud. Thou shalt not do't.

Isab. O ! were it but my life,
I'd throw it down for your deliverance
As frankly as a pin.

Claud. Thanks, dear Isabel.

Isab. Be ready, Claudio, for your death to-morrow.

Claud. Yes.—Has he affections in him,
That thus can make him bite the law by the nose,
When he would force it¹⁸? Sure it is no sin ;
Or of the deadly seven it is the least.

Isab. Which is the least ?

Claud. If it were damnable, he, being so wise,
Why, would he for the momentary trick,
Be perdurable fin'd ?—O Isabel !

Isab. What says my brother ?

Claud. Death is a fearful thing.

Isab. And shamed life a hateful.

Claud. Ay, but to die, and go we know not where ;
To lie in cold obstruction, and to rot :
This sensible warm motion to become

appearance. See note on K. Henry IV. Part I. Act iv. Sc. 1.
Mr. Collier's corrected folio would substitute *priestly garb*, but
Angelo, as vicegerent, would certainly not have *priestly garb*.

¹⁷ i. e. "From the time of my committing this offence, you
might persist in sinning with safety."

¹⁸ "Has he passions that impel him to transgress the law at the
very moment that he is enforcing it against others ? Surely then
it cannot be a sin so very heinous, since Angelo, who is so wise,
will venture it ? Shakespeare shows his knowledge of human
nature in the conduct of Claudio."

xneaded clod ; and the delighted¹⁹ spirit
 bathe in fiery floods, or to reside
 thrilling regions of thick-ribbed ice²⁰ ;
 be imprison'd in the viewless winds,
 d blown with restless violence round about
 e pendent world ; or to be worse than worst
 those, that lawless and uncertain thoughts
 agine howling !—'tis too horrible !
 e weariest and most loathed worldly life,
 at age, ache, penury²¹, and imprisonment
 1 lay on nature, is a paradise
 what we fear of death,

*I*sab. Alas ! alas !

Claud. Sweet sister, let me live.
 iat sin you do to save a brother's life,
 ture dispenses with the deed so far,
 at it becomes a virtue.

*I*eab. O, you beast !
 faithless coward ! O, dishonest wretch !
 It thou be made a man out of my vice ?
 : not a kind of incest, to take life

¹⁹ *Delighted* is occasionally used by Shakespeare for *delighting*,
 causing delight; delighted in. So, in Othello, Act ii. Sc. 3 :
 “ If virtue no *delighted* beauty lack.”

¹ Cymbeline, Act v. Sc. 4 :

“ Whom best I love, I cross, to make my gift
 The more delayed, *delighted*.”

²⁰ *Delighting spirit* and the *fiery bath*, are a parallel antithesis
ensible warm motion and *kneaded clod*. See this passage amply
 discussed in Notes and Queries, vol. ii. pp. 113, 139, 200, 250,

²¹ Jonson, in his Catiline, Act ii. Sc. 4, has a similar expres-
 sion :—“ We're spirits bound in *ribs of ice*.” Shakespeare returns
 to the various destinations of the disembodied spirit, in that pa-
 tic speech of Othello in the fifth Act. Milton seems to have
 had Shakespeare before him when he wrote the second book of
 “ Paradise Lost,” v. 595—603.

¹ The first folio has *penury*. It was corrected to *penury* in
 the second.

From thine own sister's shame? What should I think?
 Heaven shield, my mother play'd my father fair,
 For such a warped slip of wilderness²²
 Ne'er issu'd from his blood. Take my defiance:
 Die; perish! might but my bending down
 Reprieve thee from thy fate, it should proceed:
 I'll pray a thousand prayers for thy death,
 No word to save thee.

Claud. Nay, hear me, Isabel.

Isab. O, fy, fy, fy!

Thy sin's not accidental, but a trade²³:
 Mercy to thee would prove itself a bawd:
 'Tis best that thou diest quickly. [Going.
Claud. O hear me, Isabella!

Re-enter Duke.

Duke. Vouchsafe a word, young sister, but one word.

Isab. What is your will?

Duke. Might you dispense with your leisure, I would
 by and by have some speech with you: the satisfac-
 tion I would require, is likewise your own benefit.

Isab. I have no superfluous leisure; my stay must
 be stolen out of other affairs; but I will attend you a
 while.

Duke. [To CLAUDIO, aside.] Son, I have overheard
 what hath past between you and your sister. Angelo
 had never the purpose to corrupt her; only he hath
 made an assay of her virtue, to practise his judgment
 with the disposition of natures. She, having the truth
 of honour in her, hath made him that gracious denial
 which he is most glad to receive: I am confessor to
 Angelo, and I know this to be true; therefore pre-
 pare yourself to death: Do not satisfy²⁴ your resolu-

²² Wilderness for wildness.

²³ Trade, an established habit, a custom, a practice.

²⁴ Do not satisfy yourself with hopes that are fallible. Wer-

tion with hopes that are fallible : to-morrow you must die ; go to your knees, and make ready.

Claud. Let me ask my sister pardon. I am so out of love with life, that I will sue to be rid of it.

Duke. Hold²⁵ you there : Farewell. [*Exit Claudio.*

Re-enter Provost.

Provost, a word with you.

Prov. What's your will, father ?

Duke. That now you are come, you will be gone : Leave me awhile with the maid : my mind promises with my habit, no loss shall touch her by my company.

Prov. In good time²⁶. [*Exit Provost.*

Duke. The hand that hath made you fair, hath made you good : the goodness, that is cheap²⁷ in beauty, makes beauty brief in goodness ; but grace, being the soul of your complexion, shall keep the body of it ever fair. The assault that Angelo hath made to you, fortune hath convey'd to my understanding ; and, but that frailty hath examples for his falling, I should wonder at Angelo. How will you do to content this substitute, and to save your brother ?

Isab. I am now going to resolve him : I had rather my brother die by the law, than my son should be unlawfully born. But O, how much is the good duke burton would read, "Do not *falsify* your hopes" with a very unsatisfactory argument ; but not one succeeding editor adopts that reading. A conjecture of the Hon. Charles Yorke on this passage will be found in Warburton's Letters, p. 500, 8vo. ed.

²⁵ Hold you there : continue in that resolution.

²⁶ i. e. à la bonne heure, so be it, very well.

²⁷ When the goodness of a beautiful person is *cheap*, i. e. easily parted with, it causes the beauty associated with it to be short-lived. But *grace*, i. e. goodness, being the life and soul of your nature, and like the principle of life preserving a body, shall keep your personal beauty always fresh and fair. An absurd attempt has been made to mar the passage by reading chief instead of *cheap*.

deceived in Angelo! If ever he return, and I can speak to him, I will open my lips in vain, or discover his government.

Duke. That shall not be much amiss: Yet, as the matter now stands, he will avoid your accusation; he made trial of you only.—Therefore, fasten your ear on my advisings; to the love I have in doing good, a remedy presents itself. I do make myself believe, that you may most uprighteously do a poor wronged lady a merited benefit; redeem your brother from the angry law; do no stain to your own gracious person; and much please the absent duke, if, peradventure, he shall ever return to have hearing of this business.

Isab. Let me hear you speak further; I have spirit to do any thing that appears not foul in the truth of my spirit.

Duke. Virtue is bold, and goodness never fearful. Have you not heard speak of Mariana the sister of Frederick, the great soldier, who miscarried at sea?

Isab. I have heard of the lady, and good words went with her name.

Duke. She should this Angelo have married; was affianced to her by oath²⁸, and the nuptial appointed: between which time of the contract, and limit²⁹ of the solemnity, her brother Frederick was wracked at sea, having in that perish'd vessel the dowry of his sister. But mark, how heavily this befell to the poor gentlewoman: there she lost a noble and renowned brother, in his love toward her ever most kind and natural; with him the portion and sinew of her fortune, her marriage dowry; with both, her combinante³⁰ husband, this well-seeming Angelo.

²⁸ The first folio reads defectively "was affianced to her oath," by was supplied in the second folio. *She* at the commencement of this speech, is the reading of the old copy, we should now write *Her*.

²⁹ *Limit*, i. e. appointed time.

³⁰ *Combinante*, i. e. betrothed, contracted.

Isab. Can this be so? Did Angelo so leave her?

Duke. Left her in her tears, and dried not one of them with his comfort; swallowed his vows whole, pretending, in her, discoveries of dishonour: in few, bestowed³¹ her on her own lamentation, which she yet wears for his sake; and he, a marble to her tears, is waashed with them, but relents not.

Isab. What a merit were it in death, to take this poor maid from the world! What corruption in this life, that it will let this man live!—But how out of this can she avail?

Duke. It is a rupture that you may easily heal: and the cure of it not only saves your brother, but keeps you from dishonour in doing it.

Isab. Show me how, good father.

Duke. This forenamed maid hath yet in her the continuance of her first affection; his unjust unkindness, that in all reason should have quenched her love, hath, like an impediment in the current, made it more violent and unruly. Go you to Angelo: answer his requiring with a plausible obedience; agree with his demands to the point: only refer³² yourself to this advantage,—first, that your stay with him may not be long; that the time may have all shadow and silence in it; and the place answer to convenience. This being granted in course, now follows all:³³ We shall advise this wronged maid to stead up your appointment, go in your place; if the encounter acknowledge itself hereafter, it may compel him to her recompense: and here, by this, is your brother saved, your honour untainted, the poor Mariana advantaged, and the corrupt deputy scaled³⁴. The maid will I frame, and

³¹ Bestowed her on her own lamentation, gave her up to her SOTROWS.

³² Refer yourself, have recourse to.

³³ The old copy has and before “now follows.”

³⁴ Scaled, i. e. stripped of his covering or disguise, his affectation of virtue; desquamatus. A metaphor of a similar nature has

make fit for his attempt. If you think well to carry this as you may, the doubleness of the benefit defends the deceit from reproof. What think you of it?

Isab. The image of it gives me content already; and, I trust, it will grow to a most prosperous perfection.

Duke. It lies much in your holding up: Haste you speedily to Angelo: if for this night he entreat you to his bed, give him promise of satisfaction. I will presently to St. Luke's; there, at the moated grange, resides this dejected Mariana: At that place call upon me; and dispatch with Angelo, that it may be quickly.

Isab. I thank you for this comfort: Fare you well, good father.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE II. *The Street before the Prison.*

Enter Duke, as a Friar; to him ELBOW, Clown, and Officers.

Elb. Nay, if there be no remedy for it, but that you will needs buy and sell men and women like beasts, we shall have all the world drink brown and white bastard¹.

Duke. O, heavens! what stuff is here?

Clo. 'Twas never merry world, since, of two usurries, the merriest was put down, and the worser allow'd by order of law a furr'd gown to keep him warm; and furr'd with fox and lamb-skins² too, to signify, that craft, being richer than innocence, stands for the facing.

occurred in this play, taken from the barking, peeling, or sing of trees. I cannot convince myself that it means *weighed*, &c. we could imagine that *counterpoised* was intended.

Bastard; a sweet wine, raisin wine, according to Minshey, the Italian *Bastardo*.

It is probable we should read "fox on lambskins," otherwise

Ebb. Come your way, sir :—Bless you, good father friar.

Duke. And you, good brother father³ : What offence hath this man made you, sir ?

Ebb. Marry, sir, he hath offended the law ; and, sir, we take him to be a thief too, sir ; for we have found upon him, sir, a strange pick-lock⁴, which we have sent to the deputy.

Duke. Fye, sirrah ; a bawd, a wicked bawd !
The evil that thou causest to be done,
That is thy means to live. Do thou but think
What 'tis to cram a maw, or clothe a back,
From such a filthy vice : say to thyself,—
From their abominable and beastly touches
I drink, I eat, array⁵ myself, and live.
Canst thou believe thy living is a life,
So stinkingly depending ? Go mend, go mend.

Clo. Indeed, it does stink in some sort, sir ; but yet, sir, I would prove——

Duke. Nay, if the devil have given thee proofs for sin,
Thou wilt prove his. Take him to prison, officer ;
Correction and instruction must both work,
Ere this rude beast will profit.

Ebb. He must before the deputy, sir ; he has given

craft will not stand for the facing. Fox-skins and lamb-skins were both used as facings according to the statute of apparel, 24 Hen. 8, c. 13. So, in Characterismi, or Lenton's Leasures, &c. 1631 :—"An usurer is an old fox clad in lamb-skin."

³ The Duke humorously calls him *brother father*, because he had called him *father friar*, which is equivalent to *father brother*, friar being derived from *frère*. Fr.

⁴ It is not necessary to take *honest* Pompey for a house-breaker, the *locks* he had occasion to *pick* were Spanish padlocks. In Jonson's Volpone, Corvino threatens to make his wife wear one of these strange contrivances.

⁵ The folios have *away*, evidently a typographical error. Theobald made the correction.

him warning. The deputy cannot abide a whore-master: if he be a whoremonger, and comes before him, he were as good go a mile on his errand.

Duke. That we were all, as some would seem to be,
Free from our faults, as faults from seeming, free⁶!

Enter Lucio.

Etb. His neck will come to your waist, a cord⁷, sir.

Clo. I spy comfort; I cry, bail: Here's a gentleman, and a friend of mine.

Lucio. How now, noble Pompey? What, at the wheels of Caesar? Art thou led in triumph? What, is there none of Pygmalion's images, newly made woman⁸, to be had now, for putting the hand in the pocket and extracting it clutch'd? What reply? Ha! What say'st thou to this tune, matter, and method? Is't not drown'd i' the last rain? Ha! What say'st thou to t' ⁹? Is the world as it was, man? Which is the way? Is it sad, and few words? Or how? The trick of it?

Duke. Still thus, and thus! still worse!

Lucio. How doth my dear morsel, thy mistress? Procures she still? Ha!

Clo. Troth, sir, she hath eaten up all her beef, and she is herself in the tub¹⁰.

Lucio. Why, 'tis good; it is the right of it; it must be so: Ever your fresh whore, and your powder'd

⁶ i. e. "As faults are free from or destitute of all comeliness or seeming." *Free* at the commencement of the line is wanting in the old copy, but necessary both to sense and metre.

⁷ His neck will be tied, like your waist, with a cord. The friar wore a rope for a girdle.

⁸ i. e. Have you no new courtesans to recommend to your customers.

⁹ The old copies print *trot*, an evident printer's error for "what say'st thou to t'?"

¹⁰ The method of cure for a certain disease was grossly called *the powdering tub*. See the notes on the tub-fast and the diet, in *Timon of Athens*, Act iv. in the Variorum Shakespeare.

bawd : An unshunn'd¹¹ consequence ; it must be so :
Art going to prison, Pompey ?

Clo. Yes, faith, sir.

Lucio. Why, 'tis not amiss, Pompey : Farewell :
Go ; say, I sent thee thither. For debt, Pompey ?
Or how ?

Elb. For being a bawd, for being a bawd.

Lucio. Well, then imprison him : If imprisonment
be the due of a bawd, why, 'tis his right : Bawd is
he, doubtless, and of antiquity too ; bawd-born. Fare-
well, good Pompey : Commend me to the prison,
Pompey ; You will turn good husband now, Pom-
pey ; you will keep the house¹².

Clo. I hope, sir, your good worship will be my bail.

Lucio. No, indeed, will I not, Pompey ; it is not
the wear¹³. I will pray, Pompey, to increase your
bondage : if you take it not patiently, why, your mettle
is the more. Adieu, trusty Pompey.—Bless you, friar.

Duke. And you.

Lucio. Does Bridget paint still, Pompey ? Ha !

Elb. Come your ways, sir ; come.

Clo. You will not bail me then, sir ?

Lucio. Then, Pompey ? nor now.—What news
abroad, friar ? What news ?

Elb. Come your ways, sir ; come.

Lucio. Go,—to kennel, Pompey, go.

[*Exeunt ELBOW, Clown, and Officers*
What news, friar, of the duke ?

Duke. I know none : Can you tell me of any ?

Lucio. Some say, he is with the emperor of Russia ;
other some, he is in Rome : But where is he, think
you ?

Duke. I know not where : But wheresoever, I wish
him well.

¹¹ *Unshunn'd*, i. e. *inevitable*.

¹² i. e. *stay at home*, alluding to the etymology of *husband*.

¹³ *The wear*, i. e. *fashion*.

Lucio. It was a mad fantastical trick of him, to steal from the state, and usurp the beggary he was never born to. Lord Angelo dukes it well in his absence; he puts transgression to't.

Duke. He does well in 't.

Lucio. A little more lenity to lechery would do no harm in him: something too crabbed that way, friar.

Duke. It is too general a vice, and severity must cure it.

Lucio. Yes, in good sooth, the vice is of a great kindred; it is well ally'd: but it is impossible to extirp it quite, friar, till eating and drinking be put down. They say, this Angelo was not made by man and woman, after the downright way of creation: Is it true, think you?

Duke. How should he be made then?

Lucio. Some report a sea-maid spawn'd him:—Some that he was begot between two stock-fishes:—But it is certain, that when he makes water, his urine is congeal'd ice; that I know to be true: and he is a motion¹⁴ ungenerative, that's infallible.

Duke. You are pleasant, sir; and speak apace.

Lucio. Why, what a ruthless thing is this in him, for the rebellion of a cod-piece, to take away the life of a man? Would the duke that is absent have done this? Ere he would have hang'd a man for the getting a hundred bastards, he would have paid for the nursing a thousand: He had some feeling of the sport; he knew the service, and that instructed him to mercy.

Duke. I never heard the absent duke much detected¹⁵ for women; he was not inclined that way.

¹⁴ The old copy has *generative*. Theobald corrected it. Lucio in this scene calls Angelo this *ungenitured* agent. *A motion*, a *puppet*, or *moving body*, without the power of generation.

¹⁵ Detected for suspected. See Merry Wives of Windsor, p. 272.

Lucio. O, sir ! you are deceived.

Duke. 'Tis not possible.

Lucio. Who ? not the duke ? yes, your beggar of fifty ;—and his use was, to put a ducat in her clack-dish¹⁶ : the duke had crotchetts in him : He would be drunk too ; that let me inform you.

Duke. You do him wrong, surely.

Lucio. Sir, I was an inward¹⁷ of his : A shy fellow was the duke : and, I believe, I know the cause of his withdrawing.

Duke. What, I pr'ythee, might be the cause ?

Lucio. No,—pardon ;—'tis a secret must be lock'd within the teeth and the lips : but this I can let you understand,—The greater file¹⁸ of the subject held the duke to be wise.

Duke. Wise ? why, no question but he was.

Lucio. A very superficial, ignorant, unweighing fellow.

Duke. Either this is envy in you, folly, or mistaking ; the very stream of his life, and the business he hath helmed¹⁹, must, upon a warranted need, give him a better proclamation. Let him be but testimonied in his own bringings forth, and he shall appear to the envious, a scholar, a statesman, and a soldier. Therefore, you speak unskilfully ; or, if your knowledge be more, it is much darkened in your malice.

¹⁶ A wooden dish with a moveable cover, formerly carried by beggars, which they clacked and clattered to show that it was empty. In this they received the alms. It was one mode of attracting attention. Lepers and other paupers deemed infectious, originally used it, that the sound might give warning not to approach too near, and alms be given without touching the object. The custom of clacking at Easter is not yet quite disused in some counties. Lucio's meaning is too evident to want explanation.

¹⁷ *inward*, i. e. *intimate*.

¹⁸ *The greater file*, i. e. *the majority of his subjects*.

¹⁹ *Helmed*, is *guided, steered through*, a metaphor from navigation.

Lucio. Sir, I know him, and I love him.

Duke. Love talks with better knowledge, and knowledge with dearer love.

Lucio. Come, sir, I know what I know.

Duke. I can hardly believe that, since you know not what you speak. But, if ever the Duke return (as our prayers are he may), let me desire you to make your answer before him: If it be honest you have spoke, you have courage to maintain it: I am bound to call upon you; and, I pray you, your name?

Lucio. Sir, my name is Lucio; well known to the duke.

Duke. He shall know you better, sir, if I may live to report you.

Lucio. I fear you not.

Duke. O! you hope the duke will return no more; or you imagine me too unhurtful an opposite²⁰. But, indeed, I can do you little harm; you'll forswear this again.

Lucio. I'll be hang'd first: thou art deceived in me, friar. But no more of this. Canst thou tell if Claudio die to-morrow, or no?

Duke. Why should he die, sir?

Lucio. Why? for filling a bottle with a tun-dish. I would, the duke, we talk of, were return'd again: this ungenitur'd²¹ agent will unpeople the province with continency; sparrows must not build in his house-eaves, because they are lecherous. The duke yet would have dark deeds darkly answered; he would never bring them to light: would he were return'd! Marry, this Claudio is condemn'd for untrussing. Farewell, good friar; I pr'ythee, pray for me. The duke, I say to thee again, would eat mut-

opposite, i. e. *opponent*.

igenitur'd. This word seems to be formed from *genitoirs*, which occurs several times in Holland's Pliny, vol. ii. 560, 589, and comes from the French *genitoires*.

ton²² on Fridays. He's not past it yet; ^a and I say to thee, he would mouth with a beggar, though she smelt brown bread and garlick: say, that I said so. Farewell.

[Exit.]

Duke. No might nor greatness in mortality
Can censure 'scape; back-wounding calumny
The whitest virtue strikes. What king so strong,
Can tie the gall up in the slanderous tongue?
But who comes here?

Enter ESCALUS, Provost, Bawd, and Officers.

Escal. Go: away with her to prison!

Bawd. Good my lord, be good to me; your honour is accounted a merciful man: good my lord.

Escal. Double and treble admonition, and still forfeit²³ in the same kind? This would make mercy swear, and play the tyrant.

Prov. A bawd of eleven years continuance, may it please your honour.

Bawd. My lord, this is one Lucio's information against me: mistress Kate Keep-down was with child by him in the duke's time, he promised her marriage; his child is a year and a quarter old, come Philip and Jacob: I have kept it myself; and see how he goes about to abuse me.

Escal. That fellow is a fellow of much licence:—let him be called before us.—Away with her to prison: Go to; no more words. [Exeunt Bawd and Officers.] Provost, my brother Angelo will not be alter'd, Claudio must die to-morrow: let him be furnished with divines, and have all charitable preparation: if my

²² A wench was called a *laced mutton*. In Doctor Faustus 1604, Lechery says, "I am one that loves an inch of raw ~~mutton~~ better than an ell of stock-fish." Two Gentlemen of Verona Act i. Sc. 2, note 9.

^a The old copy has He's now past it; yet, &c.

²³ *Forfeit, transgress, offend, from forfaire.* Fr

brother wrought by my pity, it should not be so with him.

Prov. So please you, this friar hath been with him, and advised him for the entertainment of death.

Escal. Good even, good father.

Duke. Bliss and goodness on you!

Escal. Of whence are you?

Duke. Not of this country, though my chance is now To use it for my time: I am a brother Of gracious order, late come from the See, In special business from his holiness.

Escal. What news abroad i' the world?

Duke. None, but that there is so great a fever on goodness, that the dissolution of it must cure it: novelty is only in request; and²⁴ it is as dangerous to be aged in any kind of course, as it is virtuous to be constant in any undertaking. There is scarce truth enough alive, to make societies secure; but security enough, to make fellowships accurst²⁵. Much upon this riddle runs the wisdom of the world. This news is old enough, yet it is every day's news. I pray you, sir, of what disposition was the duke?

Escal. One, that, above all other strifes, contended especially to know himself.

Duke. What pleasure was he given to?

Escal. Rather rejoicing to see another merry, than merry at any thing which professed to make him rejoice: a gentleman of all temperance. But leave we

²⁴ Mr. Collier, finding *as* repeated in the old copy, would read "as it is as dangerous to be aged in any kind of course, as it is virtuous to be constant in any undertaking, there is scarce truth enough alive to make societies secure, but security enough to make fellowships accurst." I must say with Mr. Knight, that I cannot see any logical connexion in this long period.

²⁵ The allusion is to those legal *securities* into which fellowship leads men to enter for each other. For this quibble Shakespeare has high authority, "He that hateth *suretiship* is *sure*." *Prov. xi. 15.*

him to his events, with a prayer they may prove prosperous; and let me desire to know how you find Claudio prepared. I am made to understand, that you have lent him visitation.

Duke. He professes to have received no sinister measure from his judge, but most willingly humbles himself to the determination of justice: yet had he framed to himself, by the instruction of his frailty, many deceiving promises of life; which I, by my good leisure, have discredited to him, and now is he resolved²⁶ to die.

Escal. You have paid the heavens your function²⁷, and the prisoner the very debt of your calling. I have labour'd for the poor gentleman, to the extremest shore of my modesty; but my brother justice have I found so severe, that he hath forced me to tell him, he is indeed—justice²⁸.

Duke. If his own life answer the straitness of his proceeding, it shall become him well; wherein, if he chance to fail, he hath sentenced himself.

Escal. I am going to visit the prisoner: Fare you well.

Duke. Peace be with you!

[*Exeunt ESCALUS and Provost.*

He, who the sword of heaven will bear,
Should be as holy as severe;
Pattern in himself to know,
Grace to stand, and virtue go²⁹;

²⁶ *Resolved*, i. e. *satisfied*; probably because conviction leads to decision or resolution.

²⁷ Mr. Collier's corrected folio would read "You have paid the heavens *the due* of your function, &c." The words are not absolutely necessary, but may serve to the elucidation of the passage.

²⁸ *Summum jus, summa injuria.*

²⁹ This passage is obscure, nor can it be cleared without a more licentious paraphrase than the reader may be willing to allow. "He that bears the sword of heaven should be not less *holy than severe*; should be able to discover in himself a pattern

More nor less to others paying,
 Than by self-offences weighing.
 Shame to him, whose cruel striking
 Kills for faults of his own liking !
 Twice treble shame on Angelo,
 To weed my vice³⁰, and let his grow !
 O, what may man within him hide,
 Though angel on the outward side !
 How may likeness wade in crimes,
 Making³¹ practice on the times,
 To draw with idle spiders' strings
 Most pond'rous and substantial things !
 Craft against vice I must apply :
 With Angelo to-night shall lie
 His old betrothed, but despised ;
 So disguise shall, by the disguis'd,
 Pay with falsehood false exacting,
 And perform an old contracting.

[Exit.]

of such grace as can avoid temptation, and such virtue as may go abroad into the world without danger of seduction." Coleridge observes that, "Grace to stand, virtue to go," would be better English though worse metre.

³⁰ It is not the Duke's own vice, as the commentators have supposed, that he refers to; but to Angelo indulging in a vice for which he cuts off others.

³¹ The old copy reads

"How may likeness made in crimes,
 Making practice on the times."

It has been proposed to read *masking*, and *mocking*, instead of *making*. I have adopted Mr. Halliwell's suggestion, and read *wade* for *made*. The sense of this obscure passage appears to be:—"How may persons assuming the *likeness* or semblance of virtue, while they are guilty of the grossest crimes, by practising upon the world, draw to themselves by the flimsiest pretensions the most solid advantages; such as pleasure, honour, reputation, &c." *Likeness* is *seeming*.

ACT IV.

SCENE I. *A Room at the Moated Grange.*

MARIANA discovered sitting; a Boy singing.

SONG¹.

AKE, oh take those lips away,
 That so sweetly were forsown;
 And those eyes, the break of day,
 Lights that do mislead the morn:
 But my kisses bring again,
 bring again,
 Seals of love, but seal'd in vain,
 seal'd in vain.

Mari. Break off thy song, and haste thee quick
 away;

Here comes a man of comfort, whose advice
 Hath often still'd my brawling discontent.—

[Exit Boy.]

Enter Duke.

I cry you mercy, sir; and well could wish
 You had not found me here so musical:

¹ It does not appear certain to whom this beautiful little song rightly belongs. Mr. Malone prints it as Shakespeare's, Mr. Boswell thinks Fletcher has the best claim to it, Mr. Weber that Shakespeare may have written the first stanza, and Fletcher the second. It may indeed be the property of some unknown or forgotten author. Be this as it may, the reader will be pleased to have the second stanza,

“ Hide, oh hide those hills of snow
 Which thy frozen bosom bears,
 On whose tops the pinks that glow
 Are of those that April wears.
 But first set my poor heart free,
 Bound in those icy chains by thee.”

Both stanzas are given as Shakespeare's, in the edition of his Poems printed in 1640. It is also inserted entire in Beaumont and Fletcher's Bloody Brother, Act v. Sc. 2.

Let me excuse me, and believe me so,—
My mirth it much displeas'd, but pleas'd my woe.
Duke. 'Tis good : though musick oft hath such a
charm,
To make bad good, and good provoke to harm.
I pray you, tell me, hath any body inquired for me
here to-day ? much upon this time have I promis'd
here to meet.

Mari. You have not been inquired after : I have
sat here all day.

Duke. I do constantly believe you :—The time is
come, even now. I shall crave your forbearance a little;
may be, I will call upon you anon, for some advantage
to yourself.

Mari. I am always bound to you.

[Exit.]

Enter ISABELLA.

Duke. Very well met, and welcome.
What is the news from this good deputy?

Isab. He hath a garden circumjur'd with brick,
Whose western side is with a vineyard back'd:
And to that vineyard is a planch'd gate,
That makes the garden this bigge,

With whispering and most guilty diligence,
In action all of precept, he did show me
The way twice o'er.

Duke. Are there no other tokens
Between you 'greed, concerning her observance?

Isab. No, none, but only a repair i' the dark ;
And that I have possess'd⁵ him, my most stay
Can be but brief : for I have made him know,
I have a servant comes with me along,
That stays upon me ; whose persuasion is,
I come about my brother.

Duke. 'Tis well borne up.
I have not yet made known to Mariana
A word of this :—What, ho ! within ! come forth !

Re-enter MARIANA.

I pray you, be acquainted with this maid ;
She comes to do you good.

Isab. I do desire the like.

Duke. Do you persuade yourself that I respect you ?

Mari. Good friar, I know you do ; and have found it.

Duke. Take then this your companion by the hand,
Who hath a story ready for your ear :
I shall attend your leisure ; but make haste ;
The vaporous night approaches.

Mari. Will't please you walk aside ?

[*Exeunt MARIANA and ISABELLA.*]

Duke. O place and greatness, millions of false eyes
Are stuck upon thee ! volumes of report
Run with these false and most contrarious quests
Upon thy doings ! thousand 'scapes of wit
Make thee the father of their idle dream,
And rack thee in their fancies !—

* i. e. informed. Thus Shylock says—

" I have possess'd your grace of what I purpose."

Re-enter MARIANA and ISABELLA.

Welcome! How agree!

Isab. She'll take the enterprise upon her, father,
If you advise it.

Duke. It is not my consent,
But my entreaty too.

Isab. Little have you to say,
When you depart from him, but, soft and low,
Remember now my brother.

Mari. Fear me not.

Duke. Nor, gentle daughter, fear you not at all:
He is your husband on a pre-contráct:
To bring you thus together, 'tis no sin;
Sith that the justice of your title to him
Doth flourish⁷ the deceit. Come, let us go;
Our corn's to reap, for yet our tilth's⁸ to sow.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *A Room in the Prison.*

Enter Provost and Clown.

Prov. Come hither, sirrah: Can you cut off a man's head?

Clo. If the man be a bachelor, sir, I can: but if he be a married man, he is his wife's head, and I can never cut off a woman's head.

Prov. Come, sir, leave me your snatches, and yield me a direct answer. To-morrow morning are to die Claudio and Barnardine: Here is in our prison a common executioner, who in his office lacks a helper: if you will take it on you to assist him, it shall redeem

⁷ *Flourish*, i. e. *ornament*, embellish an action that would otherwise seem ugly.

⁸ *Tilth* here means *land prepared for sowing*. The old copy reads *tithe*; the emendation is Warburton's, v. p. 344, note 5, *ante*.

you from your gyves ; if not, you shall have your full time of imprisonment, and your deliverance with an unpitied whipping ; for you have been a notorious bawd.

Clo. Sir, I have been an unlawful bawd, time out of mind ; but yet I will be content to be a lawful hangman. I would be glad to receive some instruction from my fellow partner.

Prov. What ho, Abhorson ! Where's Abhorson, there ?

Enter ABHORSON.

Abhor. Do you call, sir ?

Prov. Sirrah, here's a fellow will help you to-morrow in your execution : If you think it meet, compound with him by the year, and let him abide here with you ; if not, use him for the present, and dismiss him : He cannot plead his estimation with you ; he hath been a bawd.

Abhor. A bawd, sir ? Fye upon him, he will discredit our mystery.

Prov. Go to, sir ; you weigh equally ; a feather will turn the scale. [*Exit.*]

Clo. Pray, sir, by your good favour (for, surely, sir, a good favour¹ you have, but that you have a hanging look), do you call, sir, your occupation a mystery ?

Abhor. Ay, sir ; a mystery.

Clo. Painting, sir, I have heard say, is a mystery ; and your whores, sir, being members of my occupation, using painting, do prove my occupation a mystery : but what mystery there should be in hanging, if I should be hang'd, I cannot imagine.

Abhor. Sir, it is a mystery.

Clo. Proof.

Abhor. Every true man's apparel fits your thief : If

¹ *Favour* is countenance.

it be too little for your thief, your true man thinks it big enough ; if it be too big for your thief, your thief thinks it little enough : so every true man's apparel fits your thief².

Re-enter Provost.

Prov. Are you agreed ?

Clo. Sir, I will serve him ; for I do find, your hangman is a more penitent trade than your bawd ; he doth oftener ask forgiveness.

Prov. You, sirrah, provide your block and your axe, to-morrow four o'clock.

Abhor. Come on, bawd ; I will instruct thee in my trade ; follow.

Clo. I do desire to learn, sir ; and, I hope, if you have occasion to use me for your own turn, you shall find me yare³ ; for, truly, sir, for your kindness, I owe you a good turn.

Prov. Call hither Barnardine and Claudio.

[*Exeunt Clown and ABHORSON.*

One has my pity ; not a jot the other,
Being a murderer, though he were my brother.

Enter CLAUDIO.

Look, here's the warrant, Claudio, for thy death :

² Warburton says, " This proves the *thief's* trade a mystery, not the hangman's," and therefore supposes that a speech, in which the hangman proved his trade a mystery is lost, part of this last speech being in the old editions given to the clown. But Heath observes, " The argument of the hangman is exactly similar to that of the clown. As the latter puts in his claim to the whores as members of his occupation, and in virtue of their painting would enroll his own fraternity in the mystery of painters ; so the former equally lays claim to the thieves as members of his occupation, and in their right endeavours to rank his brethren the hangmen under the mystery of fitters of apparel, or tailors."

³ *Yare*, i. e. ready.

'Tis now dead midnight, and by eight to-morrow
Thou must be made immortal. Where's Barnardine?

Claud. As fast lock'd up in sleep, as guiltless labour
When it lies starkly in the traveller's bones :
He will not wake.

Prov. Who can do good on him ?
Well, go, prepare yourself. But hark, what noise ?

[*Knocking within*
Heaven give your spirits comfort ! [Exit CLAUDIO.
By and by :—

I hope it is some pardon, or reprieve,
For the most gentle Claudio.—Welcome, father.

Enter Duke.

Duke. The best and wholesomest spirits of the night
Envelope you, good Provost ! Who call'd here of late ?

Prov. None, since the curfew rung.

Duke. Not Isabel ?

Prov. No.

Duke. They will then, ere't be long.

Prov. What comfort is for Claudio ?

Duke. There's some in hope.

Prov. It is a bitter deputy.

Duke. Not so, not so ; his life is parallel'd
Even with the stroke⁴ and line of his great justice ;
He doth with holy abstinence subdue
That in himself, which he spurs on his power
To qualify⁵ in others : were he meal'd⁶
With that which he corrects, then were he tyrannous ;
But this being so, he's just.—Now are they come.—

[*Knocking within.*—Provost goes out.

⁴ Stroke is here put for the stroke of a pen, or a line.

⁵ To qualify is to temper, to moderate.

⁶ Meal'd appears to mean here sprinkled, o'erstudded, defiled ; I cannot think that in this instance it has any relation to the verb to mell, meddle or mix with.

This is a gentle provost : Seldom-when^a
 The steeled gaoler is the friend of men.—
 How now ? What noise ? That spirit's possess'd with
 haste,
 That wounds the unwisting^b postern with these strokes.

Provost returns, speaking to one at the door.

Prov. There he must stay, until the officer
 Arise to let him in ; he is call'd up.

Duke. Have you no countermand for Claudio yet,
 But he must die to-morrow ?

Prov. None, sir, none.

Duke. As near the dawning, Provost, as it is,
 You shall hear more ere morning.

Prov. Happily^c,
 You something know ; yet, I believe, there comes
 No countermand ; no such example have we :
 Besides, upon the very siege^d of justice,
 Lord Angelo hath to the public ear
 Profess'd the contrary.

Enter a Messenger.

This is his lordship's man¹⁰.

* This is absurdly printed *Seldom, when, &c.* in all the late editions. “ *Seldom-when* (i. e. *rarely, not often*) is the steeled gaoler the friend of men.” Thus in old phraseology we have *seldom-time, any-when, &c.*; and in Palsgrave’s French Grammar, 1530, *seldom-what, gueres souvent*. The comma between *seldom* and *when* is not in the old copy, but an arbitrary addition of some editor. We have this compound word again in K. Henry IV. P. 2, A. iv. Sc. 4, where the same error in printing it again occurs : “ ‘Tis *seldom-when* the bee doth leave her comb in the dead carion.”

? The old copies have *unsisting*, I read *unwisting*, i. e. *unknowing, unheeding; resisting, unlisting, and unresisting* have also been suggested.

^c *Hapily, haply*, perhaps the old orthography of the word.

^d *Siege*, i. e. *seat*.

¹⁰ In the old copies these words are given to the *Duke*, and the

Duke. And here comes Claudio's pardon.

Mess. My lord hath sent you this note ; and by me this further charge, that you swerve not from the smallest article of it, neither in time, matter, or other circumstance. Good-morrow ; for, as I take it, it is almost day.

Prov. I shall obey him. [*Exit Messenger.*

Duke. This is his pardon ; purchas'd by such sin.

[*Aside.*

For which the pardoner himself is in :

Hence hath offence his quick celerity,

When it is borne in high authority :

When vice makes mercy, mercy's so extended,

That for the fault's love, is the offender friended.—

Now, sir, what news ?

Prov. I told you : Lord Angelo, be-like, thinking me remiss in mine office, awakens me with this un-wonted putting on¹¹ : methinks, strangely ; for he hath not used it before.

Duke. Pray you, let's hear

Prov. [Reads.] *Whatsoever you may hear to the contrary, let Claudio be executed by four of the clock ; and, in the afternoon, Barnardine : for my better satisfaction, let me have Claudio's head sent me by five. Let this be duly performed ; with a thought, that more depends on it than we must yet deliver. Thus fail not to do your office, as you will answer it at your peril.*

What say you to this, sir ?

Duke. What is that Barnardine, who is to be executed in the afternoon ?

Prov. A Bohemian born ; but here nursed up and bred : one that is a prisoner nine years old.

Duke. How came it that the absent duke had not

next line to the *Provost*, an evident error. The provost had declared that Angelo would not relent.

¹¹ Putting on, is spur, incitemen.

either deliver'd him to his liberty, or executed him? I have heard, it was ever his manner to do so.

Prov. His friends still wrought reprieves for him: And, indeed, his fact, till now in the government of Lord Angelo, came not to an undoubtful proof.

Duke. Is it now apparent?

Prov. Most manifest, and not denied by himself.

Duke. Hath he borne himself penitently in prison? How seems he to be touch'd?

Prov. A man that apprehends death no more dreadfully, but as a drunken sleep: careless, reckless, and fearless of what's past, present, or to come; insensible of mortality, and desperately mortal.

Duke. He wants advice.

Prov. He will hear none. He hath evermore had the liberty of the prison; give him leave to escape hence, he would not: drunk many times a day, if not many days entirely drunk. We have very oft awaked him, as if to carry him to execution, and show'd him a seeming warrant for it: it hath not moved him at all.

Duke. More of him anon. There is written in your brow, Provost, honesty and constancy: if I read it not truly, my ancient skill beguiles me; but in the boldness of my cunning¹², I will lay myself in hazard. Claudio, whom here you have a warrant to execute, is no greater forfeit to the law than Angelo who hath sentenced him: To make you understand this in a manifested effect, I crave but four days respite; for the which you are to do me both a present and a dangerous courtesy.

Prov. Pray, sir, in what?

Duke. In the delaying death.

Prov. Alack! how may I do it? having the hour limited; and an express command, under penalty,^{to}

¹² i. e. in confidence of my sagacity.

deliver his head in the view of Angelo? I may make my case as Claudio's, to cross this in the smallest.

Duke. By the vow of mine order, I warrant you, if my instructions may be your guide. Let this Barnardine be this morning executed, and his head borne to Angelo.

Prov. Angelo hath seen them both, and will discover the favour.

Duke. O, death's a great disguiser: and you may add to it. Shave the head, and tie the beard; and say, it was the desire of the penitent to be so bared before his death: You know, the course is common¹³. If any thing fall to you upon this, more than thanks and good fortune, by the saint whom I profess, I will plead against it with my life.

Prov. Pardon me, good father; it is against my oath.

Duke. Were you sworn to the duke, or to the deputy?

Prov. To him, and to his substitutes.

Duke. You will think you have made no offence, if the duke avouch the justice of your dealing?

Prov. But what likelihood is in that?

Duke. Not a resemblance, but a certainty. Yet since I see you fearful, that neither my coat, integrity, nor my persuasion, can with ease attempt you, I will go further than I meant, to pluck all fears out of you. Look you, sir, here is the hand and seal of the duke. You know the character, I doubt not; and the signet is not strange to you.

Prov. I know them both.

Duke. The contents of this is the return of the duke; you shall anon over-read it at your pleasure;

¹³ “Shave the head and tie the beard—the course is common.” This probably alludes to a practice among Roman Catholics of desiring to receive the tonsure of the monks before they died.

where you shall find, within these two days he will be here. This is a thing that Angelo knows not: for he this very day receives letters of strange tenor; perchance, of the duke's death; perchance, entering into some monastery; but, by chance, nothing of what is writ¹⁴. Look, the unfolding star calls up the shepherd¹⁵. Put not yourself into amazement, how these things should be: all difficulties are but easy when they are known. Call your executioner, and off with Barnardine's head: I will give him a present shrift, and advise him for a better place. Yet you are amazed; but this shall absolutely resolve¹⁶ you. Come away; it is almost clear dawn. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. *Another Room in the same.*

Enter Clown.

Clo. I am as well acquainted here, as I was in our house of profession: one would think it were mistress Over-done's own house, for here be many of her old customers. First, here's young master Rash¹; he's in for a commodity of brown paper and old ginger, ninescore and seventeen pounds; of which he made five marks, ready money²: marry, then, ginger was

¹⁴ “What is writ;” we should read “here writ;” the Duke pointing to the letter in his hand.

¹⁵ So Milton in Comus:—

“The star that bids the shepherd fold
Now the top of heaven doth hold.”

¹⁶ *Resolve*, i. e. *convince you*.

¹ This enumeration of the inhabitants of the prison affords a very striking view of the practices predominant in Shakespeare's age. Besides those whose follies are common to all times, we have four fighting men and a traveller. It is not unlikely that the originals of the pictures were then known. *Rash* was a silken stuff formerly worn in coats: all the names are characteristic.

² It was the practice of money lenders in Shakespeare's time, & more recently, to make advances partly in goods and

not much in request, for the old women were all dead. Then is there here one master Caper, at the suit of master Three-pile the mercer, for some four suits of peach-colour'd satin, which now peaches him a beggar. Then have we here young Dizy, and young master Deep-vow, and master Copper-spur, and master Starve-lackey the rapier and dagger-man, and young Drop-heir that kill'd lusty Pudding, and master Forthright the tilter, and brave master Shoe-tie the great traveller, and wild Half-can that stabb'd Pots, and, I think, forty more; all great doers in our trade, and are now for the Lord's sake³.

partly in cash. The goods were to be resold generally at an enormous loss upon the cost price, and of these commodities it appears that *brown paper* and *ginger* often formed a part. This custom is illustrated by numerous extracts from cotemporary writers, in the Variorum Shakespeare. In Greene's Defence of Coney-catching, 1592: "If he borrow a hundred pound, he shall have forty in silver, and threescore in wares; as lute strings, hobby-horses, or *brown paper*," &c. "Which when the poor gentleman came to sell again, he could not make threescore and ten in the hundred beside the usury."—*Quip for an upstart Courtier*, 1620.

³ It appears from Davies's Epigrams, 1611, that this was the language in which prisoners who were confined for debt addressed passengers:—

"Good gentle writers, for the Lord's sake, for the Lord's sake,
Like Ludgate prisoners, lo, I, begging, make
My mone."

And in Nashe's Peirce Pennilesse, 1593, "At that time that thy joys were in the *fleeting*, and thus crying for the Lord's sake out of an iron window." A very curious passage in confirmation of this has occurred to me in Baret's Alvearie, 1573, under the word "*Interest*, or the borrowing of usurie money wherewith to pay my debt."—"And therefore methinke it is prettily sayd in Grammar that *Interest* will be joyned with *Mea, Tua, Sua, Nostra, Vestra*, and *Cuia*, only in the ablative case, because they are pronounes possessives. For how great so ever his possessions, goodes, or lands be that haunteth the company of this impersonall, if now perchance he be able to kepe three persons, at length he shall not be able to kepe one: yea he himselfe shall shortly become such an impersonall, that he shall be counted as nobody, without any countenance, credit, person, or estimation among men. And when

Enter ABHORSON.

Abhor. Sirrah, bring Barnardine hither.

Clo. Master Barnardine ! you must rise and be hang'd, master Barnardine !

Abhor. What, ho, Barnardine !

Barnar. [Within.] A pox o' your throats ! Who makes that noise there ? What are you ?

Clo. Your friends, sir ; the hangman : You must be so good, sir, to rise and be put to death.

Barnar. [Within.] Away, you rogue, away ; I am sleepy.

Abhor. Tell him, he must awake, and that quickly too.

Clo. Pray, master Barnardine, awake till you are executed, and sleep afterwards.

Abhor. Go in to him, and fetch him out.

Clo. He is coming, sir, he is coming ; I hear his straw rustle.

Enter BARNARDINE.

Abhor. Is the axe upon the block, sirrah ?

Clo. Very ready, sir.

Barnar. How now, Abhorson ? what's the news with you ?

Abhor. Truly, sir, I would desire you to clap into your prayers ; for, look you, the warrant's come.

Barnar. You rogue, I have been drinking all night, I am not fitted for't.

Clo. O, the better, sir ; for he that drinks all night, and is hanged betimes in the morning, may sleep the sounder all the next day.

he hath thus filched, and fleeced his possessive so long till he hath made him as rich as a new shorn sheep, then will he turn him
"commons into Ludgate : where for his ablative case he shall
a dative cage, craving and crying at the grate, your worship's
tie FOR THE LORD'S SAKE."

Enter Duke.

Abhor. Look you, sir, here comes your ghostly father ; Do we jest now, think you ?

Duke. Sir, induced by my charity, and hearing how hastily you are to depart, I am come to advise you, comfort you, and pray with you.

Barnar. Friar, not I ; I have been drinking hard all night, and I will have more time to prepare me, or they shall beat out my brains with billets : I will not consent to die this day, that's certain.

Duke. O, sir you must : and therefore, I beseech you, Look forward on the journey you shall go.

Barnar. I swear, I will not die to-day for any man's persuasion.

Duke. But hear you,—

Barnar. Not a word ; if you have any thing to say to me, come to my ward ; for thence will not I to-day.

[*Exit.*]

Enter Provost.

Duke. Unfit to live, or die : O, gravel heart⁴!— After him, fellows ; bring him to the block.

[*Exeunt ABHORSON and Clown.*]

Prov. Now, sir, how do you find the prisoner ?

Duke. A creature unprepar'd, unmeet for death ; And, to transport⁵ him in the mind he is, Were damnable.

Prov. Here in the prison, father, There died this morning of a cruel fever One Ragozine, a most notorious pirate, A man of Claudio's years ; his beard and head, Just of his colour : What if we do omit This reprobate, till he were well inclined ;

⁴ Mr. Collier's folio substitutes "O, grovelling beast!"

⁵ Transport, i. e. to remove him from one world to another. The French *trépas* affords a kindred sense.

And satisfy the deputy with the visage
Of Ragozine, more like to Claudio ?

Duke. O, 'tis an accident that heaven provides !
Despatch it presently ; the hour draws on
Prefix'd by Angelo. See, this be done,
And sent according to command ; whiles I
Persuade this rude wretch willingly to die.

Prov. This shall be done, good father, presently.
But Barnardine must die this afternoon :
And how shall we continue Claudio,
To save me from the danger that might come,
If he were known alive ?

Duke. Let this be done :—Put them in secret holds,
Both Barnardine and Claudio : Ere twice
The sun hath made his journal greeting
To yonder generation⁶, you shall find
Your safety manifested.

Prov. I am your free dependant.

Duke. Quick, despatch, and
send the head to Angelo. [Exit Provost.
Now will I write letters to Angelo,—
The provost, he shall bear them,—whose contents
Shall witness to him, I am near at home ;
And that, by great injunctions, I am bound
To enter publickly : him I'll desire
To meet me at the consecrated fount,
A league below the city ; and from thence,
By cold gradation and well-balanced⁷ form,
We shall proceed with Angelo.

⁶ The old copy has *yond*. Malone and Steevens read—
“ Ere twice

The sun has made his journal greeting to
The under generation.”

* Adopt Mr. Knight's reading, as nearer to the old copy, and better
use. “ To yonder generation ” is, to the world without the
of the prison where the words are spoken.
he old copies have *weal-balanced*, of which I cannot con-
the meaning.

Re-enter Provost.

Prov. Here is the head ; I'll carry it myself.

Duke. Convenient is it : Make a swift return ;
For I would commune with you of such things,
That want no ear but yours.

Prov. I'll make all speed. [*Exit.*]

Isab. [Within.] Peace, ho, be here !

Duke. The tongue of Isabel :—She's come to know,
If yet her brother's pardon be come hither :
But I will keep her ignorant of her good,
To make her heavenly comforts of despair,
When it is least expected.

Enter ISABELLA.

Isab. Ho ! by your leave.

Duke. Good morning to you, fair and gracious
daughter.

Isab. The better, given me by so holy a man.
Hath yet the deputy sent my brother's pardon ?

Duke. He hath releas'd him, Isabel, from the world :
His head is off, and sent to Angelo.

Isab. Nay, but it is not so.

Duke. It is no other :
Show your wisdom, daughter, in your close patience.

Isab. O, I will to him, and pluck out his eyes !

Duke. You shall not be admitted to his sight.

Isab. Unhappy Claudio ! Wretched Isabel !
Injurious world ! Most damned Angelo !

Duke. This nor hurts him, nor profits you a jot :
Forbear it therefore ; give your cause to heaven.
Mark what I say, which you shall find
By every syllable a faithful verity.
The duke comes home to-morrow ;—nay, dry your eyes ;
One of our convent, and his confessor,

Gives me this instance : Already he hath carried
Notice to Escalus and Angelo,
Who do prepare to meet him at the gates,
There to give up their power. If you can pace your
wisdom

In that good path that I would wish it go,
And you shall have your bosom⁸ on this wretch,
Grace of the duke, revenges to your heart,
And general honour.

Isab. I am directed by you.

Duke. This letter then to friar Peter give ?
'Tis that he sent me of the duke's return :
Say, by this token, I desire his company
At Mariana's house to-night. Her cause, and yours,
I'll perfect him withal ; and he shall bring you
Before the duke ; and to the head of Angelo
Accuse him home, and home. For my poor self,
I am combined⁹ by a sacred vow,
And shall be absent. Wend you with this letter ;
Command these fretting waters from your eyes
With a light heart : trust not my holy order,
If I pervert your course.—Who's here ?

Enter LUCIO.

Lucio.

Good even !

Friar, where is the Provost ?

Duke. Not within, sir.

Lucio. O, pretty Isabella, I am pale at mine heart,
to see thine eyes so red : thou must be patient : I am
fain to dine and sup with water and bran ; I dare not
for my head fill my belly ; one fruitful meal would
set me to't : But they say the duke will be here to-

⁸ Your bosom, is your heart's desire, your wish.

Shakespeare uses *combined* for *bound by a pact, affianced*; ⁹ illus Angelo the *combinante* husband of Mariana. Yet Mr. Col- corrected folio would substitute *confined*.

morrow. By my troth, Isabel, I lov'd thy brother : if the old fantastical duke of dark corners had been at home, he had lived. [Exit ISABELLA.

Duke. Sir, the duke is marvellous little beholding¹⁰ to your reports; but the best is, he lives not in them¹¹.

Lucio. Friar, thou knowest not the duke so well as I do : he's a better woodman¹² than thou takest him for.

Duke. Well, you'll answer this one day. Fare ye well.

Lucio. Nay, tarry ; I'll go along with thee ; I can tell thee pretty tales of the duke.

Duke. You have told me too many of him already, sir, if they be true ; if not true, none were enough.

Lucio. I was once before him for getting a wench with child.

Duke. Did you such a thing ?

Lucio. Yes, marry, did I ; but was fain to forswear it ; they would else have married me to the rotten medlar.

Duke. Sir, your company is fairer than honest : Rest you well.

Lucio. By my troth, I'll go with thee to the lane's end : If bawdy talk offend you, we'll have very little of it : Nay, friar, I am a kind of burr, I shall stick.

[Exit.

¹⁰ Thus the old copy, *beholding* for *beholden*, according to the constant usage of the time.

¹¹ i. e. *he depends not on them*.

¹² A *woodman* was an attendant on the forester ; his great employment was hunting. It is here used in a wanton sense for a hunter of a different sort of game. So, Falstaff asks Mrs. Ford in the *Merry Wives of Windsor* :—

“ Am I a woodman? Ha! ”

And in *The Chances*, A. i. Sc. 9—

“ Well, well, son John,
I see you are a *woodman*, and can choose
Your *deer*, though it be dark.”

SCENE IV. *A Room in Angelo's House.*

Enter ANGELO and ESCALUS.

Escal. Every letter he hath writ hath disvouch'd¹ other.

Ang. In most uneven and distracted manner. His actions show much like to madness: pray heaven, his wisdom be not tainted! And why meet him at the gates, and re-deliver our authorities there?

Escal. I guess not.

Ang. And why should we proclaim it in an hour before his entering, that, if any crave redress of injustice, they should exhibit their petitions in the street?

Escal. He shows his reason for that: to have a despatch of complaints; and to deliver us from devices hereafter, which shall then have no power to stand against us².

Ang. Well, I beseech you, let it be proclaim'd: Betimes i' the morn, I'll call you at your house: Give notice to such men of sort and suit³, As are to meet him.

Escal. I shall, sir: fare you well. [*Exit.*

Ang. Good night.— This deed unshapes me quite, makes me unpregnant⁴, And dull to all proceedings. A deflower'd maid! And by an eminent body, that enforc'd The law against it!—But that her tender shame

¹ *Disvouched* is con radicited.

² Mr. Collier exhibits the preceding speeches in a metrical form, but such metre as neither satisfies the ear, nor contents the mind of the least fastidious reader of dramatic blank verse. In the old copies they are properly printed as prose, for which it was doubtless intended.

³ *Sort and suit*, i. e. *figure and rank.*

⁴ *Unpregnant*, i. e. *unready, unprepared*; the contrary to *pre-
sent*, in its sense of ready, apprehensive.

Will not proclaim against her maiden loss,
How might she tongue me ! Yet Reason dares⁵ her
no :

For my authority here's of a credent bulk,
That no particular scandal once can touch,
But it confounds the breather. He should have liv'd,
Save that his riotous youth, with dangerous sense,
Might, in the times to come, have ta'en revenge,
By so receiving a dishonour'd life,
With ransom of such shame. 'Would yet he had liv'd !
Alack, when once our grace we have forgot,
Nothing goes right : we would, and we would not.

[Exit⁶.

SCENE V. Fields without the Town.

Enter Duke in his own habit, and Friar PETER.

Duke. These letters at fit time deliver me.

[Giving letters.

The provost knows our purpose, and our plot.

The matter being afoot, keep your instruction,

⁵ The old copy has—" For my authority *bears* of a credent bulk," which it is difficult to reconcile to sense. The printer had mistaken the word *here's* for *bears*. This slight correction makes the whole passage intelligible. " Yet reason *dares* or *overawes* her from doing it, and cries *no* to her whenever she finds herself prompted to tongue Angelo." *Dare* is often used in this sense by Shakespeare ; and the word *no* is used in a similar way in *The Chances* :—

" I wear a sword to satisfy the world *no*."

And in *A Wife for a Month* :—

" I'm sure he did not, for I charged him *no*."

Credent is *creditable*, not *questionable*. *Particular* is *private*. a French sense of the word.

⁶ Dr. Johnson thought the fourth Act should end here, " for here is properly a cessation of action, a night intervenes, and the place is changed between the passages of this scene and those of the next. The fifth Act, beginning with the following scene, would proceed without any interruption of time or place."

And hold you ever to our special drift ;
 Though sometimes you do blench¹ from this to that,
 As cause doth minister. Go, call at Flavius' house,
 And tell him where I stay : give the like notice
 To Valentius², Rowland, and to Crassus,
 And bid them bring the trumpets to the gate ;
 But send me Flavius first.

F. Peter.

It shall be speeded well.

[*Exit Friar.*

Enter VARRIUS.

Duke. I thank thee, Varrius ; thou hast made good
 haste :

Come, we will walk : There's other of our friends
 Will greet us here anon, my gentle Varrius. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VI. Street near the City Gate.

Enter ISABELLA and MARIANA.

Isab. To speak so indirectly, I am loath ;
 I would say the truth ; but to accuse him so,
 That is your part : Yet I'm advis'd to do it ;
 He says, to 'vailfull purpose.³

Mari.

Be rul'd by him.

Isab. Besides, he tells me, that, if peradventure
 He speak against me on the adverse side,
 I should not think it strange ; for 'tis a physic,
 That's bitter to sweet end.

Mari. I would, friar Peter—

Isab. O, peace ! the friar is come.

¹ To blench, to start off, to fly off.

² Valentius in the folios. Flavius is misprinted *Flavia's* in the preceding line.

³ The folio prints this *vaile-full*, but *avail-ful* is most probably meant.

Enter Friar PETER¹.

F. Peter. Come, I have found you out a stand most fit,

Where you may have such vantage on the duke,
He shall not pass you. Twice have the trumpets sounded;

The generous² and gravest citizens
Have hent³ the gates, and very near upon
The duke is ent'ring; therefore hence, away.

[*Exeunt.*

ACT V.

SCENE I. *A public Place near the City Gate.*

MARIANA (*veil'd*), ISABELLA, and PETER, at a distance. Enter at opposite doors, Duke, VARRIUS, Lords; ANGELO, ESCALUS, LUCIO, Provost, Officers, and Citizens.

Duke.

 Y very worthy cousin, fairly met:—
Our old and faithful friend, we are glad to
see you.

Ang. and Escal. Happy return be to your royal grace!

Duke. Many and hearty thankings to you both.
We have made inquiry of you; and we hear
Such goodness of your justice, that our soul
Cannot but yield you forth to public thanks,
Forerunning more requital.

Ang. You make my bonds still greater.

¹ He is called Friar Thomas in the first Act.

² Generous, for most noble, or those of rank. *Generosi*, Lat.

³ Hent, i. e. seized, laid hold on, from the Saxon *hentan*.

Duke. O, your desert speaks loud ; and I should wrong it,

To lock it in the wards of covert bosom,
When it deserves with characters of brass
A forted residence, 'gainst the tooth of time,
And razure of oblivion : Give me your hand,
And let the subject see, to make them know
That outward courtesies would fain proclaim
Favours that keep within.—Come, Escalus ;
You must walk by us on our other hand ;—
And good supporters are you.

PETER and ISABELLA come forward¹.

F. Peter. Now is your time ; speak loud, and kneel before him.

Isab. Justice, O royal duke ! Vail² your regard
Upon a wrong'd, I'd fain have said, a maid !
O worthy prince ! dishonour not your eye
By throwing it on any other object,
Till you have heard me in my true complaint,
And given me, justice, justice, justice, justice !

Duke. Relate your wrongs : In what ? By whom ?
Be brief :

Here is Lord Angelo shall give you justice !
Reveal yourself to him.

Isab. O, worthy duke,
You bid me seek redemption of the devil :
Hear me yourself ; for that which I must speak
Must either punish me, not being believ'd,
Or wring redress from you ; hear me, O, hear me,
here.

Ang. My lord, her wits, I fear me, are not firm :
She hath been a suitor to me for her brother,
Cut off by course of justice.

Isab. By course of justice !

¹ The old copies have " Enter Peter and Isabella."

² To *vail* is to *lower*, to let fall, to cast down.

Ang. And she will speak most bitterly, and strange.

Isab. Most strange, but yet most truly, will I speak :
That Angelo's forsworn ; is it not strange ?
That Angelo's a murderer ; is't not strange ?
That Angelo is an adulterous thief,
An hypocrite, a virgin-violator ;
Is it not strange, and strange ?

Duke. Nay, [it is] ten times strange.

Isab. It is not truer he is Angelo,
Than this is all as true as it is strange :
Nay, it is ten times true ; for truth is truth
To the end of reckoning.

Duke. Away with her :—Poor soul,
She speaks this in the infirmity of sense.

Isab. O prince, I conjure thee, as thou believest
There is another comfort than this world,
That thou neglect me not, with that opinion
That I am touch'd with madness : make not impossible
That which but seems unlike. 'Tis not impossible,
But one, the wicked'st caitiff on the ground,
May seem as shy, as grave, as just, as absolute,
As Angelo ; even so may Angelo,
In all his dressings³, characts⁴, titles, forms,
Be an arch-villain. Believe it, royal prince,
If he be less, he's nothing ; but he's more,
Had I more name for badness.

Duke. By mine honesty,
If she be mad, as I believe no other,
Her madness hath the oddest frame of sense,
(Such a dependency of thing on thing,)
As e'er I heard in madness⁵.

³ i. e. *habiliments of office.*

⁴ *Characts* are *distinctive marks* or *characters*. A statute of Edward VI. directs the seals of office of every bishop to have "certain *characts* under the king's arms for the knowledge of the diocessa."

⁵ "As e'er I heard in madness." I can hardly think Shakespeare wrote *as*, but if he did, it stands for that,—and like in-

Isab. O, gracious duke!

Hear not on that; nor do not banish reason
For inequality⁶: but let your reason serve
To make the truth appear, where it seems hid;
And hide the false seems-true⁷.

Duke. Many that are not mad,
Have, sure, more lack of reason.—What would you
say?

Isab. I am the sister of one Claudio,
Condemn'd upon the act of fornication
To lose his head; condemn'd by Angelo:
I, in probation of a sisterhood,
Was sent to by my brother: One Lucio
As then the messenger;—

Lucio. That's I, an't like your grace:
I came to her from Claudio, and desir'd her
To try her gracious fortune with lord Angelo,
For her poor brother's pardon.

Isab. That's he, indeed.

Duke. You were not bid to speak.

Lucio. No, my good lord;
Nor wish'd to hold my peace.

Duke. I wish you now then;
Pray you, take note of it: and when you have
A business for yourself, pray heaven you then
Be perfect.

Lucio. I warrant your honour.

Duke. The warrant's for yourself; take heed to it.

Isab. This gentleman told somewhat of my tale.

stances are frequent in his cotemporaries. See Nares, v. *as*, or Todd's Johnson.

⁶ The meaning appears to be, "do not suppose me mad because I speak inconsistently or *unequally*."

⁷ The old copy has *And hide the false seems true*, i. e. the *trai-semblable*, or "*true seeming false*"; the hyphen seems required to mark the sense of this passage, which without it would be obscure.

Lucio. Right.

Duke. It may be right ; but you are in the wrong
To speak before your time.—Proceed.

Isab. I went

To this pernicious caitiff deputy.

Duke. That's somewhat madly spoken.

Isab. Pardon it :

The phrase is to the matter⁸.

Duke. Mended again : the matter ?—Proceed.

Isab. In brief,—to set the needless process by,
How I persuaded, how I pray'd, and kneel'd,
How he refell'd⁹ me, and how I reply'd ;
(For this was of much length), the vile conclusion
I now begin with grief and shaine to utter :
He would not, but by gift of my chaste body
To his concupiscent intemperate lust,
Release my brother ; and, after much debatement,
My sisterly remorse¹⁰ confutes mine honour,
And I did yield to him. But the next morn betimes,
His purpose surfeiting, he sends a warrant
For my poor brother's head.

Duke. This is most likely !

Isab. O, that it were as like as it is true¹¹ !

Duke. By heaven, fond¹² wretch, thou know'st not
what thou speak'st ;
Or else thou art suborn'd against his honour,
In hateful practice¹³ : First, his integrity
Stands without blemish :—next, it imports no reason,
That with such vehemency he should pursue

⁸ i. e. suited to the matter ; as in Hamlet : “ The phrase would be more german to the matter.”

⁹ Refell'd is refuted.

¹⁰ Remorse here is pity.
¹¹ The meaning appears to be “ O that it had as much of the likeness or appearance, as it has of the reality of truth.”

¹² Fond, i. e. foolish.

¹³ Practice was used by the old writers for any insidious stratagem or treachery.

Faults proper to himself: if he had so offended,
 He would have weigh'd thy brother by himself,
 And not have cut him off: Some one hath set you on;
 Confess the truth, and say by whose advice
 Thou cam'st here to complain.

Isab. And is this all?
 Then, oh, you blessed ministers above,
 Keep me in patience; and, with ripen'd time,
 Unfold the evil which is here wrapt up
 In countenance¹⁴!—Heaven shield your grace from
 woe,

As I, thus wrong'd, hence unbelieved go!
Duke. I know, you'd fain be gone:—An officer!
 To prison with her:—Shall we thus permit
 A blasting and a scandalous breath to fall
 On him so near us? This needs must be a practice.
 —Who knew of your intent, and coming hither?

Isab. One that I would were here, friar Lodowick.
Duke. A ghostly father, belike:—Who knows that
 Lodowick?

Lucio. My lord, I know him; 'tis a meddling friar;
 I do not like the man: had he been lay, my lord,
 For certain words he spake against your grace
 In your retirement, I had swing'd him soundly.

Duke. Words against me? This a good friar belike!
 And to set on this wretched woman here
 Against our substitute!—Let this friar be found.

Lucio. But yesternight, my lord, she and that friar
 I saw them at the prison: a saucy friar,
 A very scurvy fellow.

F. Peter. Blessed be your royal grace!
 I have stood by, my lord, and I have heard
 Your royal ear abus'd: First, hath this woman,
 * wrongfully accus'd your substitute;

¹⁴ *In countenance*, i. e. *false appearance*.

Who is as free from touch or soil with her,
As she from one ungot.

Duke. We did believe no less.
Know you that friar Lodowick that she speaks of?

F. Peter. I know him for a man divine and holy ;
Not scurvy nor a temporary medller¹⁵,
As he's reported by this gentleman :
And, on my trust, a man that never yet
Did, as he vouches, misreport your grace.

Lucio. My lord, most villainously ; believe it.

F. Peter. Well, he in time may come to clear himself ;
But at this instant he is sick, my lord,
Of a strange fever : Upon his mere¹⁶ request
(Being come to knowledge that there was complaint
Intended 'gainst lord Angelo) came I hither,
To speak, as from his mouth, what he doth know
Is true, and false ; and what he with his oath,
And all probation, will make up full clear,
Whosoever he's convented¹⁷. First, for this woman
(To justify this worthy nobleman,
So vulgarly¹⁸ and personally accused) ;
Her shall you hear disproved to her eyes,
Till she herself confess it.

Duke. Good friar, let's hear it.

[*ISABELLA* is carried off, guarded ; and
MARIANA comes forward.

Do you not smile at this, lord Angelo !—
O heaven ! the vanity of wretched fools !—
Give us some seats.—Come, cousin Angelo ;
In this I'll be impartial ; be you judge

¹⁵ It is hard to know what is meant by a *temporary medller*, perhaps it was intended to signify "one who introduced himself as often as he could find opportunity into other men's concerns."

¹⁶ *Mere* here means *absolute*.

¹⁷ *Convented*, i. e. cited, summoned.

¹⁸ *Vulgarly*, i. e. publicly.

Of your own cause.—Is this the witness, friar?
First, let her show her face ; and, after, speak.

Mari. Pardon, my lord ; I will not show my face
Until my husband bid me.

Duke. What, are you married ?

Mari. No, my lord.

Duke. Are you a maid ?

Mari. No, my lord.

Duke. A widow then ?

Mari. Neither, my lord.

Duke. Why, you
Are nothing then :—Neither maid, widow, nor wife ?

Lucio. My lord, she may be a punk ; for many of
them are neither maid, widow, nor wife.

Duke. Silence that fellow ; I would he had some
cause

To prattle for himself.

Lucio. Well, my lord.

Mari. My lord, I do confess I ne'er was married ;
And, I confess, besides, I am no maid :
I have known my husband ; yet my husband knows not,
That ever he knew me.

Lucio. He was drunk then, my lord ; it can be no
better.

Duke. For the benefit of silence, 'would thou wert
so too.

Lucio. Well, my lord.

Duke. This is no witness for lord Angelo.

Mari. Now I come to't, my lord :
She, that accuses him of fornication,
In selfsame manner doth accuse my husband ;
And charges him, my lord, with such a time,
When I'll depose I had him in mine arms,
th all the effect of love.

ng. Charges she more than me ?

Mari. Not that I know.

Duke. No? you say, your husband.

Mari. Why, just, my lord, and that is Angelo,
Who thinks, he knows, that he ne'er knew my body,
But knows, he thinks, that he knew^a Isabel's.

Ang. This is a strange abuse¹⁹ :—Let's see thy face.

Mari. My husband bids me; now I will unmask.

[*Unveiling.*

This is that face, thou cruel Angelo,
Which, once thou swor'st, was worth the looking on :
This is the hand, which, with a vow'd contráct,
Was fast belock'd in thine: this is the body
That took away the match from Isabel,
And did supply thee at thy garden-house²⁰,
In her imagin'd person.

Duke. Know you this woman?

Lucio. Carnally, she says.

Duke. Sirrah, no more.

Lucio. Enough, my lord.

Ang. My lord, I must confess, I know this woman;
And, five years since, there was some speech of
marriage

Betwixt myself and her; which was broke on,
Partly, for that her promised proportions
Came short of composition²¹; but, in chief,
For that her reputation was disvalued

^a The old copy repeats *knows* here by mistake.

¹⁹ *Abuse* stands in this place for *deception* or *puzzle*. So in Macbeth:

"My strange and self *abuse*,"
means this *strange deception* of myself.

²⁰ *Garden-houses* were formerly much in fashion, and often used as places of clandestine meeting and intrigue. They were chiefly such buildings as we should now call *summer-houses*, standing in a walled or enclosed garden in the suburbs of London. See Stubb's *Anatomic of Abuses*, p. 57, 4to. 1597; or Reed's *Old Plays*, Vol. v. p. 84.

²¹ Her fortune which was promised proportionate to mine fell short of the *composition*, i. e. *contract* or *bargain*.

In levity : since which time of five years,
I never spake with her, saw her, nor heard from her,
Upon my faith and honour.

Mari. Noble prince,
As there comes light from heaven, and words from
breath,
As there is sense in truth, and truth in virtue,
I am affianc'd this man's wife, as strongly
As words could make up vows : and, my good lord,
But Tuesday night last gone, in his garden-house,
He knew me as a wife.—As this is true
Let me in safety raise me from my knees ;
Or else for ever be confixed here,
A marble monument !

Ang. I did but smile till now ;
Now, good my lord, give me the scope of justice ;
My patience here is touch'd : I do perceive,
These poor informal²² women are no more
But instruments of some more mightier member,
That sets them on : Let me have way, my lord,
To find this practice out.

Duke. Ay, with my heart ;
And punish them unto²³ your height of pleasure.—
Thou foolish friar ; and thou pernicious woman,
Compact with her that's gone ! think'st thou, thy
oaths,
Though they would swear down each particular saint,
Were testimonies against his worth and credit,
That's seal'd in approbation²⁴ ?—You, lord Escalus,

²² *Informal* signifies *out of their senses*. So in the Comedy of Errors, Act v. Sc. 1,

"To make of him a *formal* man again." The speaker had just before said that she would keep Antipholus of Syracuse, who is behaving like a madman, 'till she had brought him to his right wits again.

²³ The old copies have *to*, which leaves the measure of the line defective.

²⁴ *Stamped or sealed, as tried and approved.*

Sit with my cousin ; lend him your kind pains
 To find out this abuse, whence 'tis deriv'd.—
 There is another friar that set them on ;
 Let him be sent for.

F. Peter. Would he were here, my lord ; for he,
 indeed,
 Hath set the women on to this complaint :
 Your provost knows the place where he abides,
 And he may fetch him.

Duke. Go, do it instantly.— [Exit Provost.
 And you, my noble and well-warranted cousin,
 Whom it concerns to hear this matter forth,
 Do with your injuries as seems you best,
 In any chastisement : I for a while
 Will leave you ; but stir not you, till you have well
 Determined upon these slanderers.

Escal. My lord, we'll do it thoroughly.— [Exit Duke.] Signior Lucio, did not you say, you knew
 that friar Lodowick to be a dishonest person ?

Lucio. *Cucullus non facit monachum :* honest in
 nothing, but in his clothes ; and one that hath spoke
 most villainous speeches of the duke.

Escal. We shall entreat you to abide here till he
 come, and enforce them against him : we shall find
 this friar a notable fellow.

Lucio. As any in Vienna, on my word.

Escal. Call that same Isabel here once again ;
 [To an Attendant.] I would speak with her : Pray
 you, my lord, give me leave to question ; you shall
 see how I'll handle her.

Lucio. Not better than he, by her own report.

Escal. Say you ?

Lucio. Marry, sir, I think, if you handled her pri-
 vately, she would sooner confess ; perchance, publicly,
 she'll be ashamed.

Re-enter Officers, with ISABELLA, the Duke, in the Friar's habit, and Provost.

Escal. I will go darkly to work with her

Lucio. That's the way; for women are light²⁵ at midnight.

Escal. Come on, mistress: [To ISABELLA.] here's a gentlewoman denies all that you have said.

Lucio. My lord, here comes the rascal I spoke of; here with the provost.

Escal. In very good time:—speak not you to him, till we call upon you.

Lucio. Mum.

Escal. Come, sir: Did you set these women on to slander lord Angelo? they have confess'd you did.

Duke. 'Tis false.

Escal. How! know you where you are?

Duke. Respect to your great place! and let the devil

Be sometimes honour'd for his burning throne:—Where is the duke? 'tis he should hear me speak.

Escal. The duke's in us; and we will hear you speak;

Look, you speak justly.

Duke. Boldly, at least:—But O, poor souls, Come you to seek the lamb here of the fox? Good night to your redress. Is the duke gone? Then is your cause gone too. The duke's unjust, Thus to retort²⁶ your manifest appeal, And put your trial in the villain's mouth, Which here you come to accuse.

Lucio. This is the rascal: this is he I spoke of.

²⁵ This is one of the words on which Shakespeare delights to amble. Thus Portia, in the Merchant of Venice,

“Let me give light, but let me not be light.”

retort is here used for to turn away, to refer back. Mr. folio would substitute without necessity to reject.

Escal. Why, thou unreverend and unhallow'd friar !
 Is't not enough, thou hast suborn'd these women
 To accuse this worthy man ; but, in foul mouth,
 And in the witness of his proper ear,
 To call him villain ? and then to glance from him
 To the duke himself ; to tax him with injustice ?
 Take him hence ; to the rack with him :—We'll
 touze you
 Joint by joint, but we will know his purpose²⁷ :
 What ! unjust ?

Duke. Be not so hot ; the duke dare
 No more stretch this finger of mine, than he
 Dare rack his own ; his subject am I not,
 Nor here provincial²⁸. My business in this state
 Made me a looker-on here in Vienna,
 Where I have seen corruption boil and bubble,
 Till it o'errun the stew : laws, for all faults ;
 But faults so countenanc'd, that the strong statutes
 Stand like the forfeits in a barber's shop,
 As much in mock as mark²⁹.

Escal. Slander to the state ! Away with him to
 prison.

²⁷ The old copy reads “*his* purpose,” which has been unnecessarily changed to *this*. Boswell remarks, that after having threatened the supposed friar, “We'll touze you joint by joint,” Escalus addresses the close of the sentence to the bystanders.

²⁸ “His subject am I not; nor here *provincial*?” *Provincial* is pertaining to a province; most usually taken for the circuit of an ecclesiastical jurisdiction. The chief or head of any religious order in such a province was called the *provincial* to whom alone the members of that order were accountable.

²⁹ Barbers' shops were anciently places of great resort for passing away time in an idle manner. By way of enforcing some kind of regularity, and perhaps, at least as much to promote drinking, certain laws were usually hung up, the transgression of which was to be punished by specific *forfeits*; which were *as much in mock as mark*, because the barber had no authority of himself to enforce them, and also because they were of a ludicrous nature.

Ang. What can you vouch against him, signior
Lucio?

Is this the man that you did tell us of?

Lucio. 'Tis he, my lord.—Come hither, goodman bald-pate: Do you know me?

Duke. I remember you, sir, by the sound of your voice: I met you at the prison in the absence of the duke.

Lucio. O, did you so? And do you remember what you said of the duke?

Duke. Most notedly, sir.

Lucio. Do you so, sir? And was the duke a flesh-monger, a fool, and a coward, as you then reported him to be?

Duke. You must, sir, change persons with me, ere you make that my report: you, indeed, spoke so of him; and much more, much worse.

Lucio. O thou damnable fellow! Did not I pluck thee by the nose, for thy speeches?

Duke. I protest, I love the duke, as I love myself.

Ang. Hark! how the villain would glose^a now, after his treasonable abuses.

Escal. Such a fellow is not to be talk'd withal:—Away with him to prison:—Where is the provost?—Away with him to prison; lay bolts enough upon him:—Let him speak no more:—Away with those giglots³⁰ too, and with the other confederate companion.

[*The Provost lays hands on the Duke.*

Duke. Stay, sir; stay a while.

Ang. What! resists he? Help him, Lucio.

Lucio. Come, sir; come, sir; come, sir; foh! sir;

^a The old copy has *close*, which must have been a mistake of the printer for *glose* to use flattering words.

³⁰ *Giglets* are *wanton*.—

“ Young Talbot was not born
To be the pillage of a giglot wench.”

K. Henry VI. P. 1, Act v. scene 1.

Why, you bald-pated, lying rascal ! you must be hooded, must you ? Show your knave's visage, with a pox to you ! show your sheep-biting face, and be hang'd an hour³¹ ! Will't not off ?

[Pulls off the Friar's hood, and discovers the Duke.]

Duke. Thou art the first knave that e'er made a duke.—

First, Provost, let me bail these gentle three :—
Sneak not away, sir ; [To LUCIO.] for the friar and
you

Must have a word anon. Lay hold on him.

Lucio. This may prove worse than hanging.

Duke. What you have spoke, I pardon ; sit you down.— [To ESCALUS.]

We'll borrow place of him :—Sir, by your leave :

[To ANGELO.]

Hast thou or word, or wit, or impudence,
That yet can do thee office ? If thou hast,
Rely upon it till my tale be heard,
And hold no longer out.

Ang. O my dread lord,
I should be guiltier than my guiltiness,
To think I can be undiscernible,
When I perceive, your grace, like power divine,
Hath look'd upon my passes³² : Then, good prince,
No longer session hold upon my shame,
But let my trial be mine own confession ;

³¹ "What Piper ho ! be *hang'd awhile*," is a line in an old madrigal. And in Ben Jonson's Bartholomew Fair, we have

"Leave the bottle behind you, *and be cverst awhile*."

In short, they are petty and familiar maledictions rightly explained "a plague or a mischief on you."

³² *Passes* probably put for *trespasses* ; or it may mean *courses* from *passées*, Fr. *Les passées d'un cerf* is the track or passages of stag, his *courses*. I cannot think the word has any relation to the forced explanation of *artful devices*, deceitful contrivance, from "*tours de passe-passes*".

Immediate sentence then, and sequent death,
Is all the grace I beg.

Duke. Come hither, Mariana :—
Say, wast thou e'er contracted to this woman ?

Ang. I was, my lord.

Duke. Go take her hence, and marry her instantly.—

Do you the office, friar ; which consummate,
Return him here again. Go with him, Provost.

[*Exeunt ANGELO, MARIANA, PETER,*
and Provost.

Escal. My lord, I am more amaz'd at his dishonour,
Than at the strangeness of it.

Duke. Come hither, Isabel.
Your friar is now your prince : As I was then
Advertising, and holy³³ to your business,
Not changing heart with habit, I am still
Attorney'd at your service.

Isab. O, give me pardon,
That I, your vassal, have employed and pain'd
Your unknown sovereignty.

Duke. You are pardon'd, Isabel :
And now, dear maid, be you as free³⁴ to us.
Your brother's death, I know, sits at your heart ;
And you may marvel, why I obscur'd myself,
Labouring to save his life ; and would not rather
Make rash remonstrance of my hidden power³⁵
Than let him so be lost : O, most kind maid,
It was the swift celerity of his death,
Which I did think with slower foot came on,
That brain'd my purpose³⁶ : But, peace be with him !

³³ Advertising and holy, i. e. attentive and faithful.

³⁴ Free, i. e. generous ;—pardon us as we have pardoned you.

³⁵ Rash remonstrance ; that is, “a premature display of it,” perhaps we should read demonstrance ; but the word may be formed from *remontrer*, French—to show again.

³⁶ That brain'd my purpose. We still use in conversation a like phrase—“that knocked my design on the head.”

That life is better life, past fearing death,
Than that which lives to fear. Make it your comfort,
So happy is your brother.

Re-enter ANGELO, MARIANA, PETER, and Provost.

Isab. I do, my lord.

Duke. For this new-married man, approaching here,
Whose salt imagination yet hath wrong'd
Your well-defended honour, you must pardon
For Mariana's sake. But as he adjudg'd your brother
(Being criminal, in double violation
Of sacred chastity, and of promise-breach,
Thereon dependent for your brother's life),
The very mercy of the law cries out
Most audible, even from his proper tongue,
An Angelo for Claudio, death for death,
Haste still pays haste, and leisure answers leisure ;
Like doth quit like, and *Measure still for Measure*³⁷ ?
Then, Angelo, thy fault's thus manifested ;
Which though thou would'st deny, denies thee van-
tage³⁸ :

We do condemn thee to the very block
Where Claudio stoop'd to death, and with like haste ;—
Away with him.

Mari. O, my most gracious lord,
I hope you will not mock me with a husband !

Duke. It is your husband mock'd you with a hus-
band :
Consenting to the safeguard of your honour,
I thought your marriage fit ; else imputation,
For that he knew you, might reproach your life,

³⁷ *Measure still for measure.* This appears to have been a cur-
rent expression for retributive justice. Equivalent to *like for like*.
So, in the 3rd part of Henry VI.

" *Measure for measure* must be answered."

³⁸ i. e. to deny which will avail thee nothing.

And choke your good to come. For his possessions,
Although by confiscation³⁹ they are ours,
We do instate and widow you withal,
To buy you a better husband.

Mari. O, my dear lord,
I crave no other, nor no better man.

Duke. Never crave him ; we are definitive.

Mari. Gentle, my liege,— [Kneeling.

Duke. You do but lose your labour;
Away with him to death.—Now, sir, [To Lucio.] to
you.

Mari. O, my good lord !—Sweet Isabel, take my
part ;

Lend me your knees, and, all my life to come,
Ill lend you all my life to do you service.

Duke. Against all sense⁴⁰ you do impertune her :
Should she kneel down, in mercy of this fact,
Her brother's ghost his paved bed would break,
And take her hence in horror.

Mari. Isabel,
Sweet Isabel, do yet but kneel by me ;
Hold up your hands, say nothing, I'll speak all.
They say, best men are moulded out of faults ;
And, for the most, become much more the better
For being a little bad : so may my husband.
O, Isabel ! will you not lend a knee ?

Duke. He dies for Claudio's death.

Isab. Most bounteous sir, [Kneeling.
Look, if it please you, on this man condemn'd,
As if my brother liv'd : I partly think,
A due sincerity govern'd his deeds,
Till he did look on me : since it is so,

³⁹ The first folio has erroneously *confutation*; *confiscation* is the reading of the second.

⁴⁰ *Against all sense*, i. e. *against reason and affection*.

Let him not die. My brother had but justice,
 In that he did the thing for which he died :
For Angelo,
 His act did not o'ertake his bad intent ?
 And must be buried but as an intent
 That perish'd by the way⁴¹ : thoughts are no subjects ;
 Intentions but merely thoughts.

Mari. Merely, my lord.

Duke. Your suit's unprofitable ; stand up, I say.—
 I have bethought me of another fault :—
Provost, how came it Claudio was beheaded
 At an unusual hour ?

Prov. It was commanded so.

Duke. Had you a special warrant for the deed ?

Prov. No, my good lord ; it was by private message.

Duke. For which I do discharge you of your office :
 Give up your keys.

Prov. Pardon me, noble lord :
 I thought it was a fault, but knew it not ;
 Yet did repent me, after more advice⁴² :
 For testimony whereof, one in the prison
 That should by private order else have died,
 I have reserv'd alive.

Duke. What's he ?

Prov. His name is Barnardine.

Duke. I would thou had'st done so by Claudio.—
 Go, fetch him hither ; let me look upon him.

[*Exit Provost.*

Escal. I am sorry, one so learned and so wise

⁴¹ i. e. like the traveller, who dies on his journey, is obscurely interred, and thought of no more :

"Illum exprirantem

Oblixi ignoto camporum in pulvere linquunt."

⁴² More advice, i. e. better consideration. K. Henry V. Act ii.
 Sc. 2.

As you, lord Angelo, have still appear'd,
Should slip so grossly, both in the heat of blood,
And lack of temper'd judgment afterward.

Ang. I am sorry, that such sorrow I procure :
And so deep sticks it in my penitent heart,
That I crave death more willingly than mercy ;
'Tis my deserving, and I do entreat it.

Re-enter Provost, BARNARDINE, CLAUDIO, and JULIET.

Duke. Which is that Barnardine ?

Prov. This, my lord.

Duke. There was a friar told me of this man :—
Sirrah, thou art said to have a stubborn soul,
That apprehends no further than this world,
And squar'st thy life according. Thou'rt condemn'd ;
But, for those earthly⁴³ faults, I quit them all ;
And pray thee, take this mercy to provide
For better times to come :—Friar, advise him ;
I leave him to your hand.—What muffled fellow's
that ?

Prov. This is another prisoner, that I sav'd,
That should have died when Claudio lost his head ;
As like almost to Claudio, as himself.

[*Unmuffles CLAUDIO.*

Duke. If he be like your brother, [*To ISABELLA.*] for his sake

Is he pardoned ; And, for your lovely sake,
Give me your hand, and say you will be mine,
He is my brother too : But fitter time for that.
By this, lord Angelo perceives he's safe ;
Methinks, I see a quick'ning in his eye :—
Well, Angelo, your evil quits you well :

⁴³ i.e. so far as they are punishable on earth.

Look that you love your wife ; her worth, worth
yours⁴⁴—

I find an apt remission in myself :
And yet here's one in place I cannot paroon ;—
You, sirrah, [To Lucio.] that knew me for a fool, a
coward,

One all of luxury, an ass, a madman ;
Wherein have I so deserved of you,
That you extol me thus ?

Lucio. Faith, my lord, I spoke it but according to
the trick⁴⁵ : If you will hang me for it, you may, but
I had rather it would please you, I might be whipp'd.

Duke. Whipp'd first, sir, and hang'd after.—
Proclaim it, Provost, round about the city ;
If any woman's wrong'd by this lewd fellow,
(As I have heard him swear himself, there's one
Whom he begot with child), let her appear,
And he shall marry her : the nuptial finished,
Let him be whipp'd and hang'd.

Lucio. I beseech your highness, do not marry me
to a whore ! Your highness said even now, I made
you a duke ; good my lord, do not recompense me in
making me a cuckold.

Duke. Upon mine honour thou shalt marry her.
Thy slanders I forgive : and therewithal
Remit thy other forfeits⁴⁶ :—Take him to prison :
And see our pleasure herein executed.

Lucio. Marrying a punk, my lord, is pressing to
death, whipping, and hanging.

Duke. Slandering a prince deserves it.—
She, Claudio, that you wrong'd, look you restore.—
Joy to you, Mariana !—love her, Angelo ;

⁴⁴ Her worth worth yours ; that is, her value is equal to yours, the match is not unworthy of you.

⁴⁵ According to the trick, i. e. thoughtless practice.

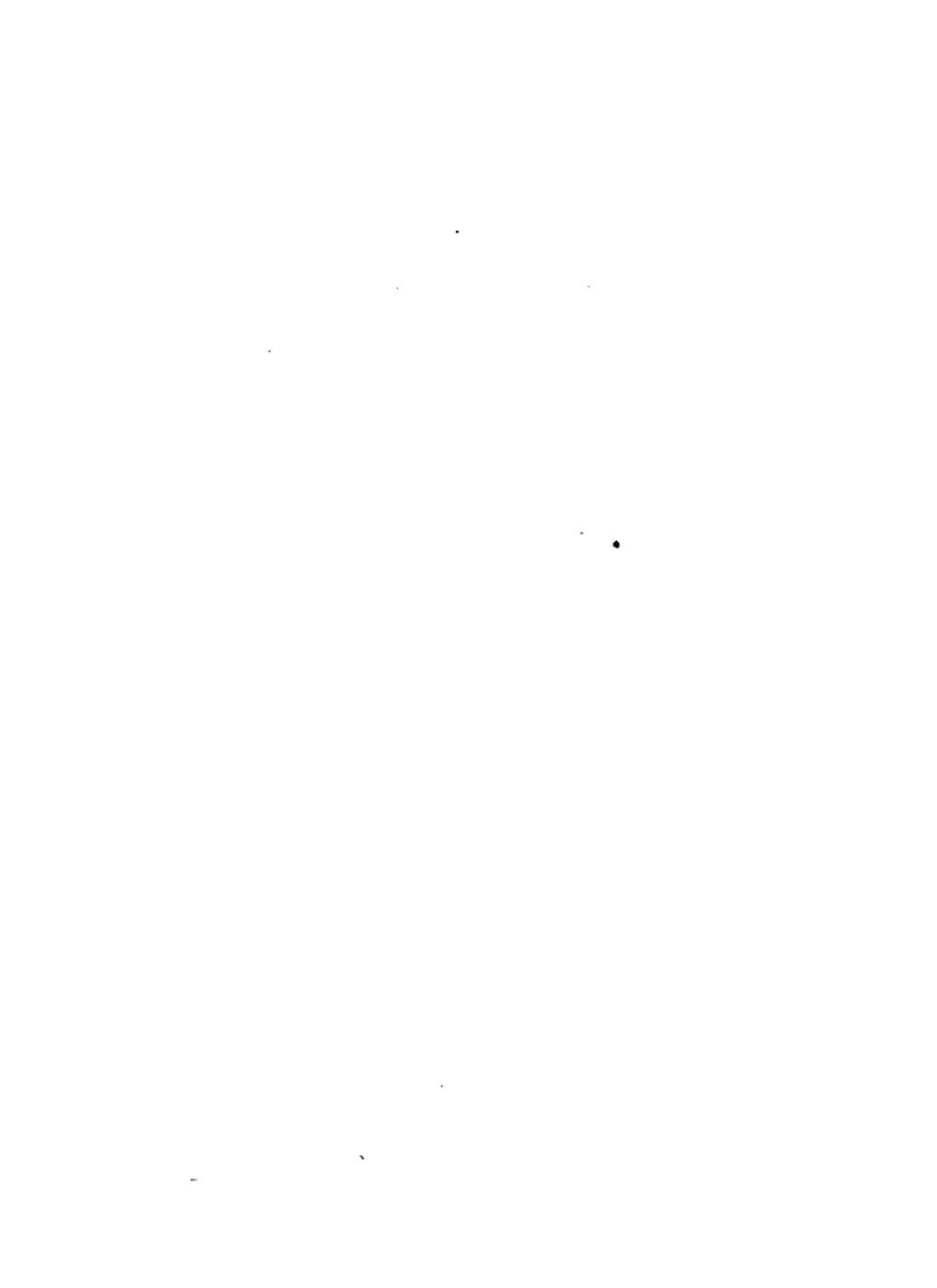
⁴⁶ Remit thy other forfeits, i. e. punishments.

I have confess'd her, and I know her virtue.—
 Thanks, good friend Escalus, for thy much goodness:
 There's more behind, that is more gratulate.⁴⁷
 Thanks, Provost, for thy care and secrecy;
 We shall employ thee in a worthier place:—
 Forgive him, Angelo, that brought you home
 The head of Ragozine for Claudio's;
 The offence pardons itself.—Dear Isabel,
 I have a motion much imports your good;
 Whereto if you'll a willing ear incline,
 What's mine is yours, and what is yours is mine
 So, bring us to our palace; where we'll show
 What's yet behind, that's meet you all should know.

[*Exeunt.*

⁴⁷ *More gratulate*, that is, *more to be rejoiced in*; as Steevens rightly explained it. Dr. Johnson's proposed arrangement of the text is very plausible; for it is evident, from the context, that this *gratulation* which is *yet behind* relates to Isabel, and not to Escalus, as Mason had imagined. In the Dedication to Lambarde's *Archeion*, which is dated 1591, the word occurs in this sense, “to *gratulate* unto you that honourable place whereunto you are right worthily advanced.” And in Thomas Heywood’s *Hierarchie of the blessed Angels*, 1635, p. 240, “When his friends came about him to *gratulate* his unexpected safety, &c.” In Hutton’s *Dictionary*, 1583, “Rejoysing in ones behalfe: *gratulation*, thankes giving.”

END OF VOL I.





Stanford University Libraries



3 6105 010 441 504

VER2.

JS61

STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
STANFORD AUXILIARY LIBRARY
STANFORD, CALIFORNIA 94305-6004
(415) 723-9201
All books may be recalled after 7 days

DATE DUE

MAR

JUN 20 1999

1999

